

THE DOCTRINE OF EMPIRICAL CONSCIOUSNESS IN THE BHOGA KĀRIKĀ

W. A. BORODY

A THESIS

Submitted to the School of Graduate Studies  
in Partial Fulfilment of the Requirements  
for the Degree  
Doctor of Philosophy

McMaster University

(c) Copyright by Wayne A. Borody, 1988

DOCTOR OF PHILOSOPHY (1987)  
(RELIGIOUS STUDIES)

McMaster University  
Hamilton, Ontario

TITLE: The Doctrine of Empirical Consciousness in the Bhoga Kārikā

AUTHOR: Wayne Andrew Brody, B. A. (University of Guelph), M. A. McMaster  
University

SUPERVISORY CHAIRPERSON: Dr. K. Sivaraman

SUPERVISORY COMMITTEE MEMBERS: Dr. J. G. Arapura  
Dr. W. Whillier  
Dr. S. Panagiotou

NUMBER OF PAGES: xx,377.

## ABSTRACT

The following dissertation consists of a study of an eighth century A. D. Sanskrit text dealing with the soteriological implications of the nature of "bhoga"--"mundane experience" or, more precisely, "empirical consciousness". The dissertation can be subdivided into two major sections. The first section consists of a critical discussion of the doctrine of bhoga in the Bhogakārikāvṛtti; the second section consists of an English translation of the Sanskrit text.

The following study of the Bhoga Kārikā and its commentary has as its major concern the explication of the idea of "bhoga" put forth in the text. According to the school of Śaivism to which the author of the Bhoga Kārikā belongs, souls are by nature possessed of the two "capacities" (śakti) of consciousness and agency. Existing in a beginningless condition in the soul, these two capacities are obfuscated by the defiling power of a cosmic principle described as "mala". Due to this defilement the soul is forced into experiencing things in a limited manner, i.e., solely as an ego-personality whose self-understanding is both defined by and limited to the empirical sphere of experience.

In explicating the doctrine of bhoga expressed by Sadyojyoti and defended by his commentator Aghora Śiva, the dissertation takes up a discussion of the various polemics against other systems, such as the Buddhists, Cārvāka, Nyāya and Sāṃkhya. As well, an attempt is made to point out the particular manner in which Sadyojyoti's doctrine of "bhoga" shares close affiliations with the schools of Mīmāṃsā and Sāṃkhya-Yoga.

The text was translated under the guidance of Dr. S. S. Janaki, the Director of Kuppaswami Sastri Research Institute in Madras. The Sanskrit text of the Bhoga Kārikā consists of 146 verses by a renowned Śaivite author, Sadyojyoti (8th c. A. D.) and a brief commentary by another renowned Śaivite author, Aghora Śiva (14th c. A. D.). Although by themselves the verses are difficult to understand without the aid of the commentary, the commentary itself is written in simple Sanskrit prose. The Bhoga Kārikā is one of a host of Śaivite "manuals" that systematically define the essential teachings and particular themes of Āgamic Śaivism. Aghora Śiva's commentary on the Bhoga Kārikā is typical of the commentaries accompanying most of these manuals: it is brief and polemical.

Chapter I of the dissertation deals with the authors Sadyojyoti and Aghora Śiva in relation to the Śaivite tradition; as well, Chapter I treats the basic concepts of "bhoga" and "tattva" employed in the Bhoga Kārikā. Chapter II deals with the doctrine of the subtle and the gross elements, emphasizing the concern of the tattvic doctrine that each tattva is a sine qua non in the event of bhoga. Chapter III treats the sphere of the motor, sense and intellectual organs and the polemics against the Cārvākas and Nyāya concerning the role of "consciousness" in the sphere of empirical experience. The specific organs of the "antaḥkarana", i.e., manas, buddhi and ahāmkāra, are treated in Chapter IV. More epistemological issues are discussed in Chapter V, most notably the Śaivite doctrine that the soul has intrinsic to it the dual capacities (śakti) of consciousness and agency. The last chapter, Chapter VI, deals with the trans-buddhi conditions governing empirical consciousness,



and includes a discussion of the soteriological import of māyā and mala. Appendix I consists of the translation of the Bhoga Kārikā Vṛtti while the transliteration of the text appears in Appendix II.

## ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

This dissertation has taken shape with the help of many friends, colleagues and teachers. I cannot thank them all, but I hope that the final completion of this work will in some small measure stand as a tribute to their support and encouragement. Special thanks are due to Drs. K. Sivaraman, J. G. Arapura and W. Whillier -- the "ratnatraya" so instrumental in my development as a student of Indian philosophy. I am especially indebted to Dr. K. Sivaraman, the chairperson of my supervisory committee, for his valued criticism, advice and encouragement. I first met Dr. Sivaraman in 1978 during a course in phenomenology given by Dr. G. B. Madison of the Philosophy Department, McMaster University; Dr. Sivaraman had been invited by Professor Madison to speak on the various conceptions of consciousness held in classical Indian thought. From this initial meeting and through the following years I spent studying Indian philosophy at McMaster University, Dr. Sivaraman's eloquence and perspicuity in discussing the most difficult epistemological and soteriological issues central to classical Indian thought inspired me to appreciate the original contributions of the early thinkers and to avoid the overly simplistic and philosophically superficial understanding of the central issues so pivotal to the Indian philosophical tradition. As well, I would like to thank Dr. Sivaraman for the personal attention he showed me both in his office and in his home. I owe both the gratitude and the honour of having studied with Dr. J. G. Arapura during my years as a student in the Religious Studies Department. Dr. Arapura's tenacity of thought as well

as his friendly demeanour, whether in the lecture hall or in peripatetic conversation, helped me root my studies in more fertile philosophical soil. I am greatly indebted to Dr. W. Whillier for having passed on, through the pedagogy of example, the importance of "integrity", whether it be in one's personal comportment or in one's philosophical convictions.

I would like to thank Dr. P. Granoff for her encouragement and attention during the early stages of my dissertation project and for her criticisms and suggestions concerning the first forty verses of my translation. I am also grateful to Dr. S. Panagiotou of McMaster University for accepting to be a member of my supervisory committee and for willing to enter into unaccustomed philosophical terrain. I would also like to take this opportunity to record my debt to Dr. S. S. Janaki, Director of the Kuppuswami Sastri Research Institute, Madras; Dr. Janaki took time off from her busy schedule to read the Sanskrit text of the Bhoga-kārikāvṛtti with me during my stay in Madras. Without Dr. Janaki's assistance the early stages of my dissertation project would not have been possible. As well, I thank Dr. Janaki for introducing me to the world of the traditional Indian scholar, both at the research centre and in her home. The excellent facilities at the Kuppuswami Sastri Research Centre and the stimulation derived from the scholars and assistants associated with the Centre helped facilitate the progress of my studies while in Madras.

To the Shastri Indo-Canadian Institute this dissertation owes a great deal: the fellowship the Institute awarded me was of the greatest importance to the development of the original material upon which my dissertation is based. I hope the Institute will feel that the

completion of this dissertation was in some small measure justified. To Mr. P. N. Malik of the Delhi Office of the Institute I owe a special note of thanks for the attention he paid to accomodate me in New Delhi and for expediting many of the details relating to my residence in India during the tenure of my fellowship.

To Dolly Simon and Radha and Srinivasan Kuppaswamy words fail to convey my deep sense of gratitude for their friendship and hospitality.

Finally, I would like to thank my wife Candy and my two sons, Calin and Gabriel. I would especially like to thank my wife for her encouragement, forbearance and, above all, love during the writing of this work.

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

ABSTRACT.....	v
ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS.....	viii
FORWARD.....	xiii
LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS.....	xx
I. AUTHOR, TEXT AND TRADITION.....	1
1. Author.....	1
2. The Relation Between the <u>Bhoga Kārikā</u> and <u>Raurava Āgama</u> ....	4
3. The Doctrinal Relation Between the <u>Bhoga Kārikā</u> and the <u>Raurava Āgama</u> .....	5
4. <u>Aghora Siva</u> , the commentator on the <u>Bhoga Kārikā</u> .....	8
5. The Manner in Which " <u>bhoga</u> " is introduced in the <u>Bhoga</u> <u>Kārikā</u> .....	10
6. The Concept of a <u>tattva</u> .....	12
NOTES TO CHAPTER I.....	19
II. DOCTRINE OF THE SUBTLE AND GROSS ELEMENTS.....	29
1. The Teleological Concern Regarding the Elements.....	29
2. The Origin of the Gross Elements.....	30
3. The Common and Specific Functions of the Gross Elements....	31
4. The Qualities of the Gross Elements.....	33
5. The Subtle Elements.....	36
NOTES TO CHAPTER II.....	39
III. THE SPHERE OF THE ORGANS.....	44
1. The Sense and Motor Organs; The "Organ" ( <u>indriya</u> ) Con- sidered as a "Capacity" ( <u>śakti</u> ) as Distinct from its Cor- poreal Locus ( <u>sthāna</u> ).....	44
2. The Tenfold Enumeration of the Organs.....	46
3. The Necessity of the Postulation of a Separate and Tri- partite "Internal Organ" ( <u>antahkaraṇa</u> ) Distinct from the Sense and Motor Organs.....	49
4. The Refutation of the View that the Internal Organ is a Modification of the Vital Air ( <u>prāṇa</u> ).....	51
5. The Refutation of the View that the Internal Organ is a Quality of the Soul ( <u>ātmagūṇa</u> ).....	53
NOTES TO CHAPTER III.....	59

IV. THE SPECIFIC INTERNAL ORGANS: <u>MANAS</u> , <u>BUDDHI</u> AND <u>AHAMKĀRA</u> .....	63
1. The Concept of <u>Manas</u> .....	63
2. The Three Functions of the Ego.....	67
3. The Conflict with the Naiyayikas Over the Ontological Function of the Ego.....	73
4. Cognition ( <u>bodha</u> ) Understood as the Essential Modi- fication ( <u>vṛtti</u> ) of the <u>Buddhi</u> .....	77
5. Introduction to the Doctrine of the Eight Dispositions ( <u>bhāva</u> ) and Four Conceptions ( <u>pratyaya</u> ).....	79
6. Dispositions ( <u>bhāva</u> ).....	83
7. Conceptions ( <u>pratyaya</u> ).....	
8. The Relation Between the Bhavas and Pratyayas Accord- ing to the Saiva Darsana and the Samkhya.....	94
NOTES TO CHAPTER IV.....	97
V. THE TRIADIC STRUCTURE OF EMPIRICAL CONSCIOUSNESS.....	110
1. Introduction.....	110
2. The Distinction Between Cognition and the Object-of- Cognition: the <u>Sākārajñānavāda</u> vrs the <u>Nirākārajñāna-</u> <u>vāda</u> .....	110
3. The Soul Considered as the Enjoyer ( <u>bhoktr</u> ) and the Agent ( <u>kartr</u> ) of Empirical Consciousness.....	115
4. The Carvaka Doctrine of Consciousness Understood as a Purely Empirical Phenomenon.....	128
5. The Debate with <u>Samkhya</u> .....	138
NOTES TO CHAPTER V.....	144
VI. THE TRANS-BUDDHI CONDITIONS GOVERNING EMPIRICAL CONSCIOUSNESS.....	155
1. Introduction.....	155
2. The Concepts of <u>Prakṛti</u> and the Three <u>Gunas</u> .....	157
3. The Exclusion of " <u>Puruṣa</u> " as a <u>Tattva</u> .....	160
4. " <u>Rāga</u> " as a Trans-Buddhi Source of Engagement in Empirical Consciousness.....	162
5. The " <u>Vidyā-tattva</u> " as the Facilitating Instrument for Empirical Consciousness.....	166
6. The " <u>Kalā-tattva</u> " as the Causative Factor Mediating Empirical Consciousness.....	170
7. The Soteriological Implications of " <u>Māya</u> ", the Funda- mental Ontological Principle Governing the Empirical Sphere of Consciousness and Being.....	174
8. " <u>Mala</u> " as the Fundamental Soteriological Concept.....	176
NOTES TO CHAPTER VI.....	183
VII. APPENDIX I: TRANSLATION OF THE <u>BHOGA KĀRIKĀ</u> BY <u>SADYOJYOTI</u> AND <u>VṚTTI</u> BY <u>AGHORA SIVA</u> .....	189

NOTES TO APPENDIX I.....	289
VIII. APPENDIX II: THE TRANSLITERATED TEXT OF THE <u>BHOGA KĀRIKĀ</u> AND ITS <u>VRTTI</u> BY AGHORA ŚIVA.....	296
NOTES TO APPENDIX II.....	353
BIBLIOGRAPHY I: TEXTS MENTIONED IN THE NOTES.....	354
BIBLIOGRAPHY II: GENERAL BIBLIOGRAPHY.....	361

The known categories of the object cannot be applied to what forms the very precondition of objectivity itself. The self being a transcendental condition of experience cannot be evidenced in the same manner in which any content of experience becomes evident to our understanding.

-K. Sivaraman,  
Saivism in Philosophical  
Perspective



DEDICATED  
IN APPRECIATION  
TO  
CANDY

## FOREWARD

The text which forms the basis of the following study stems from approximately the eighth cent. A.D. and is a philosophical expression of a particular form of early Indian religiosity that is ultimately based on the worship of the god Śiva. The worship of this god is thought by some to be one of the earliest forms of worship indigenous to the Indian soil and is also thought to predate the Sanskrit speaking culture whose gods and mythology have been captured in the Rg Veda.

Historically, Śaivism developed along various lines according to the respective social groups and local traditions in which and through which it came to be cultivated. Basically, one can discern two "forms" of Śaivism that can be described as "folkloric" and "orthodox". The Śaivism of folklore has been captured, for example, in a work known as the Śiva Purāna, which is a collection of tales and legends dealing with the mythic proportions of Śiva and the role of the devotee. Throughout its exposition the Siva Purāna emphasizes the value of a fundamental devotion (bhakti) towards Śiva and the consequential "grace" soteriologically bestowed upon the devotee for such devotion. The Purāna also emphasizes the transcendent nature of the teaching concerning Śiva; in some cases, simply hearing a discourse on the nature of Śiva is said to guarantee a heavenly existence after death, as is the case with a certain Devarāja who, shortly before his death, "just

happened" to hear a discourse on the nature of Śiva:

Devarāja, the base brahmin, addicted to wine, enamoured of a vile harlot, slayer of his own father, mother and wife and who out of greed for money killed many brahmins, kṣatriyas, vaiśyas, and śūdras and others, became a liberated soul instantaneously reaching the supreme Loka."

Other works of folkloric Śaivism, such as the Tamil Tiruvācaṅgam by Māṅikka Vācaṅgar, emphasize a divine and cosmic "eros" at the basis of the world and human existence; for example, in a moment of ecstatic rapture, the poet Māṅikka Vācaṅgar invokes Śiva as a lover would a beloved:<sup>2</sup>

Thee, Lord Supreme, with milk-ash adorn'd, meeting with grace superne, thy servants true,  
Who dost appear, and show the heaven of grace--  
Thee, glorious light, I void of righteousness, extol as my ambrosia, praising Thee--praise, glorify, invoke with weepings loud!  
Master, thus working in me mightily, in grace O speak, in pity speak !

The "orthodox" expression of Śaivism brings the Śaivite teachings more in line with the basic cultural and ritualistic forms of Vedic religiosity. The literature of orthodox Śaivism has been recorded in the "revealed" writings known as the Śaiva Āgamas. The form of Śaivism expressed in the Āgamas represents a totally self-contained and self-explained "cosmos" wherein every aspect of the devotee's existence is understood according to the Śaivite teaching. In very precise detail the Śaivite Āgamas describe, for example, the accepted theological doctrines concerning the nature of the god Śiva; the mythological sphere of the pantheon of Śaivite demigods; the epistemological, soteriological and eschatological nature of the soul; the accepted philosophical position of Āgamic Śaivism and the refutation of other systems; the exact architectural standards to be employed in the

building of temples and other sacred structures; the details governing iconographical representations; the particular vows, rites and ceremonies to be employed on the proper occasions; etc.

Although, like its folkloric counterpart, orthodox Śaivism accepts as fundamental a basic devotion towards Śiva, orthodox Śaivism places a greater degree of importance on the inherent efficaciousness of the consecratory and sacramental rites (dīkṣa) governing the devotee's life and soteriological development. Coupled with this notion of the importance of the purificatory rites the Śaivite Āgamas also place a corresponding degree of emphasis on the soteriological importance of "understanding" or "insight" (jñāna).

The text that forms the basis of the following study falls within the scope of "orthodox" Śaivism and is more concerned with the details concerning the soteriological role of "understanding" rather than with the details concerning the rites. The text specifically treats the philosophical position of Āgamic Śaivism concerning the nature of consciousness and the refutation of other doctrines. The term "philosophical" is applied to the main import of the text in order to indicate the critical and thematic format employed by the authors in the exposition of their views.

The text essentially treats the nature of the "soul" or "self" in terms of its engagement in mundane existence, or what I have chosen, for philosophical reasons, to designate as "empirical consciousness". In the process of the discussion of the import of the text it will become increasingly clear to the reader that the text employs, or perhaps it might be more appropriate to say "presupposes", two different

methods of interpreting the nature of the self and consciousness. On the one hand, the self endowed with consciousness is treated and understood in a definitively mythic manner as designating an "eternal soul" that is completely separate from the "fallen" and "reincarnating" condition of physical embodiment and mundane existence; soteriological "liberation" in this mythic sense refers to the final release from reincarnating existence and to the consequent attainment of a heavenly and blissful existence. On the other hand, however, the conscious self is also treated and understood in a definitively literal manner, as designating the principle of individualized consciousness engaged in mundane experience; soteriological liberation in this "literal" sense refers to a more experiential state of affairs according to which the self is understood as the pre-empirical condition of mundane or empirical experience itself.

Although one does not find a clearly drawn distinction between these two manners of interpreting the self in the Bhoga Kārikā and its commentary, and although it is clear that the authors would subsume the literal under the mythical, according to both ways of interpreting the self, liberation is soteriologically understood as a more "purified" condition of experience (śuddha-bhoga).

In the study of the Bhoga Kārikā and its commentary which follows, I have chosen to treat the more literal interpretation of the self in greater detail, as my interests lie more with philosophical concerns. Although readers untrained in the classical Indian thought of the more advanced texts may find that the following study contains much that is unfamiliar, I have attempted to discuss the epistemological and ontological doctrines put forth in the text in the clearest possible terms.

NOTES

<sup>1</sup>"Śiva Purāṇa," Vol. III; Ancient Indian Tradition and Mythology Series, ed. J. L. Shastri (Varanasi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1969), III, 3.

<sup>2</sup>The Tiruvaçagam by Mānikka-Vāçagar, trans. and notes Rev. G. U. Pope (Oxford: The Clarendon Press, 1900), p. 326.

## ABBREVIATIONS

<u>AP</u> .....	<u>Asta Prakaraṇa</u>
<u>BK</u> .....	<u>Bhoga Kārikā</u>
<u>BKV</u> .....	<u>Bhoga Kārikā Vṛtti</u>
<u>MA</u> .....	<u>Mrgendra Āgama</u>
<u>MAD</u> .....	<u>Mrgendra Āgama Dīpikā</u>
<u>MAV</u> .....	<u>Mrgendra Āgama Vṛtti</u>
<u>MPA</u> .....	<u>Mataṅga Parameśvara Āgama</u>
<u>MPAV</u> .....	<u>Mataṅga Paremeśvara Āgama Vṛtti</u>
<u>RA</u> .....	<u>Raurava Āgama</u>
<u>SPB</u> .....	<u>Śaiva Paribhāṣā</u>
<u>STS</u> .....	<u>Śata Ratna Saṃgraha</u>
<u>SRU</u> .....	<u>Śata Ratna Ullekha</u>
<u>TP</u> .....	<u>Tattva Prakāśa</u>
<u>TPV</u> .....	<u>Tattva Prakāśa Vṛtti</u>
<u>TS</u> .....	<u>Tattva Saṃgraha</u>
<u>TSV</u> .....	<u>Tattva Saṃgraha Vṛtti</u>
<u>TTNV</u> .....	<u>Tattva Traya Nirṇaya Vṛtti</u>

CHAPTER I  
AUTHOR, TEXT AND TRADITION

1. Author

We may speculate that Sadyojyoti flourished approximately during the eighth century A. D. This date is arrived at through the more established dating of other Śaivite authors and texts. The terminus ad quem for Sadyojyoti's writings is placed prior to the beginning of the ninth century, which is the time during which one of his commentators, Rāma-kaṇṭha II, has been established to have flourished.<sup>1</sup> There are no means to establish securely the earliest period of Sadyojyoti's writings except through the very general dating of the earliest Śaiva Āgamas, since Sadyojyoti is considered to have commented on at least two of the Āgamas. Scholars are divided as to the precise century the Āgamas began to be composed; after a consideration of the available theories concerning this period, J. Gonda has suggested the seventh cent. A. D. as the earliest possible dating.<sup>2</sup> Thus, as a compromise between the earliest and latest datings of works having direct relevance to his works, Sadyojyoti is established to have flourished approximately in the 8th century.<sup>3</sup>

Sadyojyoti's works fall into two genres: either commentaries on Āgamas or manuals (prakarana) summarizing the Śaiva "darśana", i.e., view of the world -- "philosophy" in the classical sense.<sup>4</sup> He is said to have written a commentary on the Raurava Āgama, and claims himself to have written a commentary on the Svāyambhuva Āgama.<sup>5</sup> Although more will be



said of Sadyojyoti's apparent commentary on the Raurava Āgama in the sequel, it is sufficient at this point to mention that the commentary has not been recovered. His commentary on the Svāyambhuva, which he mentions in one of his own manuals, exists in an incomplete form and remains unpublished.<sup>6</sup> Although there is no way of knowing how many philosophical manuals Sadyojyoti composed, five have come down to us. Originally, these manuals may have been written for inclusion in an Āgama as specific treatments of certain topics. All the manuals are written in very concise and complex argumentative verses (kārikā); without the commentaries that accompany each of the manuals, it is doubtful whether modern scholars or traditionally trained Śaiva pundits could discern the intent of the verses, although this is not to suggest that the early commentators are always correct in their interpretations of the original verses. According to Sadyojyoti in the opening line of the Bhoga Kārikā, the Mokṣa Kārikā and Bhoga Kārikā actually form one complete text, although the complete text was early on chosen by the commentators as two separate texts.

Aghora Śiva (twelfth cent. A. D.) has commented on the Bhoga Kārikā while Rāmakaṇṭha II (ninth cent. A. D.) has commented on the Mokṣā Kārikā. While the Bhoga Kārikā opens with the appropriate statement of obeisance (maṅgala), the Mokṣa Kārikā ends with a traditional colophon stating some detail about the author. Aghora Śiva has also commented on the Tattva Saṅgraha<sup>7</sup> and the Tattva Traya Nirṇaya; the former work summarily treats the entire Śaivite cosmology while the later specifically deals with the relationship between the three basic categories of God, bondage and the soul. The Paramokṣa Nirāsa Kārikā

deals with the refutation of other doctrines of release and has been commented on by Rāmakaṇṭha II.

In the works that still survive, neither Sadyojyoti nor his commentators provide much in the way of biographical detail. In the Tattva Samgraha the author refers to himself as "Sadyojyoti, the author of the Good Commentary (suvrttikrt)."<sup>8</sup> Aghora Śiva takes this to mean that Sadyojyoti is the author of the Sadvrtti, a commentary on the Raurava Āgama.<sup>9</sup> In his own conclusion to the Tattva Samgraha Aghora Śiva refers to Sadyojyoti as Khetakanandana; other authors also refer to him by this name.<sup>10</sup> In the closing verse of the Tattva Traya Nirṇaya Sadyojyoti refers to himself as the author of the commentary on the Svāyambhuva Āgama.<sup>11</sup> In the closing verses of the Mokṣa Kārikā the author refers to himself as "Sadyojyoti" and to his teacher as "Ugrajyoti"; he further says that his teaching ultimately derives from Śiva who revealed it to the sage Ruru who passed it on the Ātreya, from whom Sadyojyoti received it.<sup>12</sup> Rāmakaṇṭha II pays particular respect to Sadyojyoti as one of the founders of the Śaiva-darśana:<sup>13</sup>

Among the masters one should pay particular respect to Sadyojyoti and Bṛhaspati,<sup>14</sup> who have illuminated the path of the Śaiva position through their accomplished virtues.

After Aghora Śiva (twelfth cent. A. D.), Sadyojyoti's works no longer gained the attention of serious commentators, although even during the fourteenth century Sadyojyoti is still recognized as an authoritative representative of the Śaiva doctrine, as he is quoted, for example, in both the Śata Ratna Ullekha<sup>15</sup> and in Mādhava's Sarva Darśana Samgraha.<sup>16</sup> In the later development of the tradition, Sadyojyoti is considered to be one of the eighteen renowned authors of manuals.<sup>17</sup>

We can gather from such textual references that Sadyojyoti considered himself and was considered by others to be an authoritative and exalted spokesperson of the Śaiva tradition. As well, it can be concluded that he represented the tradition of the Raurava Āgama and Svāyambhuva Āgama. He may also have written his philosophical manuals in order to clarify the Śaivite position on points of doctrine that the various Āgamas differed over. Whether he was from northern or southern India remains an unanswered question, as both Aghora Śiva, a Tamilian, and Rāmakaṇṭha II, a Kashmiri, wrote commentaries on Sadyojyoti's works; however, since Rāmakaṇṭha II predates Aghora Śiva by two centuries, one is led to believe that Sadyojyoti is originally from the north and that his works travelled to the South.<sup>18</sup>

Of direct concern to the work at hand is the relation between Sadyojyoti's Bhoga Kārikā and the Raurava Āgama, as the Bhoga Kārikā claims to describe bhoga in terms of the tradition established by Ruru, the supposed sage of the Raurava Āgama. In the following section a more detailed account of this connection between the two texts will be dealt with.

## 2. The Relation Between the Bhoga Kārikā and the Raurava Āgama

In the second verse of the Bhoga Kārikā Sadyojyoti says that he is going to describe empirical consciousness and liberation, i.e.; bhoga and mokṣa, "in accordance with the teaching of Ruru (rurusiddhānta-samsiddhau bhogamoksau sasādhanau vacmi)."<sup>19</sup> Aghora Śiva explains that this means "in accordance with the Raurava Āgama (śrī-madrauravatāntropalakṣitasiddhāntaśāstre)."<sup>20</sup> As will be pointed out in the sequel, there are specific points of agreement between

Sadyojyoti and the philosophical position of the Raurava Āgama to warrant Aghora Śiva's identification between Ruru's teaching and the Raurava Āgama. However, there is less reason to accept, as is generally accepted,<sup>21</sup> Aghora Śiva's and Rāmakaṇṭha II's assertion that Sadyojyoti is in fact the author of a Raurava Vṛtti, which Aghora Śiva specifically refers to as the Sadvṛtti. There are two problems with this identification. Firstly, although Sadyojyoti refers to himself as the author of "the author of the good commentary (suvṛttikṛt)" in the Tattva Saṃgraha,<sup>22</sup> he does not state which text he is the commentator of; this statement could indeed refer to his commentary on the Svāyambhuva Āgama which he refers to in the closing verse of the Tattva Traya Nirṇaya, describing himself as the commentator (vṛttikṛt) of the Svāyambhuva Āgama.<sup>23</sup> Secondly, there is a problem with Aghora Śiva's description of the title of Sadyojyoti's Raurava Vṛtti as 'the Sadvṛtti, since Śrīkaṇṭha in the closing verses of his Ratna Traya claims that his mentor, Rāmakaṇṭha I, wrote a "Sadvṛtti", which Śrīkaṇṭha has modeled his own Ratna Traya after.<sup>24</sup> In his commentary on the Ratna Traya Aghora Śiva peculiarly says nothing about the reference to the Sadvṛtti.<sup>25</sup> Although Rāmakaṇṭha II mentions a Raurava Vṛtti in his commentary on the Mataṅga Pārameśvara Āgama, he does not actually quote from it; as well, it is difficult to discern whether or not he is referring to his own commentary on a certain Raurava Vṛtti called the Raurava Vṛtti Viveka or to the position of the Raurava Vṛtti itself.<sup>26</sup> This confusion over the authorship of the commentary on the Raurava Āgama is further compounded by the fact that it no longer exists, or at least has not been discovered. Nor is the "Raurava Vṛtti" quoted by the commenta-

tors most familiar with Sadyojyoti's works, i.e. Aghora Śiva and Rāmakaṇṭha II; an actual citation from a certain Raurava Āgama Vṛtti in the commentary on the Mataṅga Pārameśvara Āgama is actually a verse from Sadyojyoti's Paramokṣa Nirāsa Kārikā.<sup>27</sup> If there had been such a Vṛtti on the Raurava Āgama and indeed if it had been written by Sadyojyoti, the likelihood exists that it no longer existed by the time Rāmakaṇṭha II and Aghora Śiva came to write their commentaries on Sadyojyoti's manuals.

### 3. The Doctrinal Relation Between the Bhoga Kārikā and the Raurava Āgama

Ideally, each Āgama contains four sections which treat philosophy (iñāna-pāda), yogic discipline (yoḡa-pāda), ritual (kriyā-pāda) and conduct (caryā-pāda). To date, only the sections dealing with philosophy and ritual have been recovered from the Raurava Āgama. The philosophical section of the Raurava Āgama, which has been edited by N. R. Bhatt of the French Institute of Indology, is most likely an incomplete, abridged version of a larger text; most of the manuscripts of the Raurava Āgama actually refer to it as the Raurava Sūtra Samgraha in the colophon of each sub-section (patala).<sup>28</sup> Bhatt suggests that the Raurava Sūtra Samgraha has been taken for the Raurava Āgama itself since the 12th century, as is evident from the fact that the various commentators of the philosophical manuals refer to it as if it were the Āgama; if the text of the Raurava that we possess is actually the Āgama, it may be referred to as a "summary" since, like other Āgamas, it claims to be a summary of a much larger teaching.<sup>29</sup>

In his discussion of the importance of the Raurava Āgama in light of Āgamic literature, Bhatt distinguishes three things which make

its section on philosophy of interest in light of other Āgamas; firstly, the exposition of yoga lists just six members of yoga instead of the traditional eight as passed down by Patañjali;<sup>30</sup> secondly, the tattvas are listed as thirty whereas in most of the Āgamas and manuals they are listed as thirty six--Śakti, Sadāśiva, Īśvara, Śuddhavidyā, Kalā and Niyati are omitted;<sup>31</sup> thirdly, in the manuscripts of the Raurava Āgama which have been discovered so far, there is no evidence that the twelve verses which form the Śiva-jñāna Bodha, the locus classicus of the Tamil "Meykaṇḍar School", come from the Raurava Āgama, a claim upheld by commentators on the Sivajñāna Bodha, although this is not to say that in the future a more complete text of the philosophical section will be found which will contain the twelve verses.<sup>32</sup>

Of more specific concern to the connection between the Bhoga Kārikā and the Raurava Āgama one can point to Sadyojyoti's claim that he is going to explain bhoga according to the teaching of Ruru. Concerning Ruru we learn in the Raurava Āgama that he is the only one who can cause the understanding of Śiva (Śivajñānaikāraṇa).<sup>33</sup> The object of Ruru's discourse is the instruction of other sages in the understanding of Śaivite doctrine. Like Sadyojyoti in the Bhoga Kārikā, Ruru speaks in the first person. He says that other sages have come to him, i.e. Bhārgava, Aṅgīrasa, Ātreya and Marīci, in great obeisance to ask him to reveal the nature of the Śaivite doctrine and the enumeration of the tattvas.<sup>34</sup>

Another area we find some doctrinal similarity between the Bhoga Kārikā and the Raurava Āgama concerns the basic metaphysical view shared by both works, i.e. a pantheistic dualism wherein the Supreme Being Śiva

is both immanent in the world and at the same time transcendent to it, a condition that applies to the soul as well. Although Śiva is, on the one hand, "beyond" the world and any connections to it, He is, in the form of Sadāśiva, engaged and immanent "in the world". Objectively, Sadāśiva is described as the creator of the world and time--indeed, of "everything" (sarvakṛt), including the gods Brahma etc.; subjectively, He is described as residing in the self of all things (sarvabhūtātmabhutastha). Sadāśiva is "the soul of the world (parātma)."<sup>35</sup>

Throughout the Vidyāpāda of the Raurava Āgama solar imagery is employed to describe the relation between the world and Śiva. Śiva is described as a source of light and the world as the light itself (quā Śakti).<sup>36</sup> Śivajñāna is said to cause the supreme "illumination" for those who are "blinded" by the darkness of the bonds. The primordial impurity (mala or añjana) is the primordial darkness. Although Śiva is devoid of this impurity he engages in it in-order to "purify" it and bring about the "illumination" of the estranged souls. The dualism between Śiva and the world begins with the separation of Śiva from a host of lower gods who carry out the various worldly superintending activities;<sup>37</sup> these gods are Śiva's own "rays of illumination (svakirāna)."<sup>37</sup> The imagery of light and darkness is employed both cosmologically and soteriologically in order to explain the benefits conferred upon the initiate, as the Raurava Āgama states:<sup>38</sup>

Just as darkness quickly disappears when it encounters sunrise, thus after obtaining initiation one is freed from merit and demerit (dharmādharmā). Just as the sun illuminates these worlds with its rays, thus God shines (becomes manifest) with his powers (śakti) in the mantra sacrifice. Just as small sparks dart out of the fire, thus the powers come forth from Śiva. When (ritually) urged (used) they reach the bodies of those who aspire to success (sādhaka), just as the sun with its rays removes the impurity which is on the

earth.

Concerning the specific enumeration of the tattvas, Sadyojyoti is in close agreement with the Raurava Āgama in leaving out "time" (kāla) and "limitation" (niyati) from the account of the tattvas from kalā to the earth. In the Raurava Āgama the cosmic function of "time" is ascribed to Śiva in his form as Sadāśiva, who is "the instigator of all time" (sarvakālapravartaka) and "the lord of time" (kālādhipa).<sup>39</sup> A similar approach to "time" as a pre-tattvic factor of creation is also found in the Bhoga Kārikā. Although "limitation", the factor that limits one to specific life experiences and temporal events, is not mentioned in the Raurava Āgama, the Bhoga Kārikā discusses it in non-tattvic terms as the working out of each soul's karma that is ultimately under the guidance of Śiva. As well, neither the Raurava Āgama nor the Bhoga Kārikā treats the soul as a tattva, i.e., the purusatattva, as do other forms of Āgamic Śaivism.

For the above discussed reasons, there appears to be sufficient reason to hold that the teaching of Ruru referred to in the Bhoga Kārikā actually refers to the teaching established in the Raurava Āgama, as Aghora Śiva asserts.

#### 4. Aghora Śiva, the Commentator on the Bhoga Kārikā

Aghora Śiva, who flourished during the the 12th century,<sup>40</sup> was not only an accomplished poet, dramatist and commentator, but also a religious leader as well, with a very large number of followers.<sup>41</sup> He tells us that he is from the Coḷa country, i.e. Tamilnadu; although he is a southerner, in one of his works he claims to represent



the teachings of Rāmakaṇṭha II, a Kashmiri.<sup>42</sup> As a testament to Aghora Śiva's importance and authority, in the Śaiva tradition, his works on ritual are said to be conscientiously followed by all the Śaiva priests in the south to this day.<sup>43</sup>

Since Aghora Śiva choose to comment on three of Sadyojyoti's works, we must consider that he was well acquainted with Sadyojyoti's thought. From Aghora Śiva's commentary on the Mrgendra Āgama Vṛtti by Rāmakaṇṭha II it is evident that Aghora Śiva was very well acquainted with the Śaivite philosophical doctrine and the positions of many other Āgamas. Although Sadyojyoti claims to represent one Āgamic tradition in the Bhoga Kārikā, i.e. the Raurava Āgama, Aghora Śiva appeals to many Āgamas to justify his views--eg. Kīraṇa, Raurava, Svāyambhuva, Matāṅga, Mrgendra, etc.<sup>44</sup> As a commentator, Aghora Śiva is clear and consistent. His main aim is expository, usually word by word or phrase by phrase. His own doctrinal concerns are always clear. Three such concerns are often expressed in his commentary on the Bhoga Kārikā: dikṣā and not jñāna is the major prerequisite for mokṣa; Śiva has no direct material contact with anything worldly, as Śiva is solely the instrumental cause and not the material cause of the world; and lastly, there are no doctrinal contradictions among the various Āgamic teachings.

The particular style of Aghora Śiva's commentarial writings on Sadyojyoti's manuals is perhaps brought out through a comparison of his commentary on the Tattva Prakāśa by Bhoja Deva (11th century) with the commentary by Śrī Kumāra, a clear exponent of Śaiva monism. While Śrī-kumāra quotes many Vedic texts (i.e., the Upaniṣads and Brāhmaṇas), Purāṇas and Āgamas, Aghora Śiva ignores the Vedic material and Purāṇas

and solely relies on the Āgamas. Again, while Śrīkumāra stresses logical and definitional clarity in his interpretation of the verses, Aghora Śiva stresses the scriptural authority of the Śaivite Āgamas to explain and justify the ideas expressed in the verses.<sup>45</sup>

5. The Manner in Which "Bhoga" is Introduced in the Bhoga Kārikā

In the first four verses of the Bhoga Kārikā Sadyojyoti both introduces and summarizes his treatment of the concept of "bhoga", i.e., empirical consciousness. He begins with a traditional obeisance (maṅgalācarana) to Śiva and an outline of the work (anubandha).<sup>46</sup> The outline is fourfold, describing the subject matter (visaya), the purpose of the work (prayojana), the method of treatment (saṃgati) and, finally, the person for whom the work is written (adhikārin). In due order, the subject matter is said to be the dual topics of bhoga and mokṣa; the purpose "the discernment" of these two topics; the method of treatment is "by tradition, logic,<sup>47</sup> and brevity"<sup>48</sup>; and the person for whom the work is directed is described as "the sādhaka",<sup>49</sup> i.e. the one engaged in the quest for śiva-jñāna.

Concerning the two fundamental spheres of experience described as bhoga and mokṣa, Śiva is described as the one who "provides" or "gives" both of these. By stating this at the outset of the Bhoga Kārikā, Sadyojyoti is expressing a basic theological concern of Śaivism that the soul is not the sole "cause" or "means" (nimitta) of its soteriological station in life. Ultimately, the Śaivite argues, the supreme being, Śiva, is the instrumental cause of all of the soul's experiences.

In a cosmological sense, bhoga is said to arise when those souls

that have the "triple bonds" come in contact with kala, the manifesting agency of bhoga qua individual consciousness.<sup>50</sup> The "triple bonds" include mala, the original obscurational factor inhibiting the soul, karma, the repository and instrumental agency of the particular defilements of each individual soul, and maya, the more specific obscurational cause of the soul's absorption in the condition of empirical consciousness. This bound condition describes the more cosmic side of bhoga since Kalā actually originates from māyā or can be said to be a further development of māyā--thus making the three "bonds" characterize the bhoga-condition of the soul. Ultimately, according to the Śaivites, there are only three basic "categories" (padārtha) of reality: God, Souls and Bonds.<sup>51</sup> "Bond" in this sense is another term to designate that which experientially limits the full capacity of the soul's innate powers of consciousness and agency. In Sadyojyoti's works one discovers a tendency to see mala itself as representative of the category of bond (pāśa), i.e. as the obscurational and defiling power (rodhaśakti) responsible for the soul's predicament in the condition of bhoga. Thus, all bonds are referred to as material (jaḍatva) and unconscious (acetana) and are set in cosmic opposition to the soul, which is of a non-material and conscious nature. Bhoga simply represents the predicament of the soul when it is involved in this cosmic opposition.

Sadyojyoti adds a further, more specific, description of bhoga which brings out the psychological sense of the notion. The term "bhoga" literally means "enjoyment" and in this psychological account of bhoga the idea of "enjoyment" plays an important role. Sadyojyoti expresses the classically yogic idea that bhoga is the "buddhi-vrtti-

anurañjana--the (impassioned-) attachment to the modifications of the mind.<sup>52</sup> The conception of the "modifications of the mind" (buddhi-vrtti) is based on the distinction between the soul qua source of consciousness and the mind as constitutive of the experiential "object" of the soul's consciousness. The mind is simply that in which and through which empirically circumscribed consciousness comes to be; the mind is that in which and through which the bonds of the triadically bound soul come to form "empirical" or "mundane" forms of consciousness for individual souls. The modifications of the mind act as the final instantiation of the "limited" condition of the soul in its empirical predicament. The limitation is a result of the soul's empathetic identification with the modifications of the mind; due to the establishment of this empathetic identification circumscribed by the condition of bhoga, the mind appears as anything but "unconscious" and "material".

The term Sadyojyoti uses for this condition of the soul's empathetic identification with the "buddhi-vrtti" is "anurañjaka", which literally means to be coloured by something, "enreddened" in the sense of "passionately attached to" as well as "endarkened" in the sense of "obscured". "Anurañjaka" is a condition of being not only "impassioned" but also "deluded" by the modifications of the mind. The term closely approximates the conception of bhoga as enjoyment. Throughout the Bhoga Kārikā Sadyojyoti plays on the twofold sense of "bhoga" as both "experience" and "enjoyment". As the empathetic identification with the buddhi-vrtti, "bhoga" is something the soul "wants" and "enjoys" in spite of the fact that "bhoga" is essentially an "impure" condition of "self-estrangement". It is precisely this element of pleasure constitutive of

bhōgic experience that the notion of anurañjaka addresses. Bhoga is not only a certain kind of "experience" but at the same time the desire for this experience.

If it were not for the grace of Śiva the soul would be eternally caught in the enjoyment of empirical experience through continual re-births. Out of "graciousness", Śiva grants the possibility of the separation from bhoga for the snapping asunder of the obfuscating and empathetic identification with the buddhi-vṛtti. Bhoga is a privation of the soul's innate capacities of consciousness and agency; mokṣa is the overcoming of this privation. However, although bhoga is the only means souls have open to them to bring about mokṣa, mokṣa cannot be considered a more developed condition of bhoga, a more "cultivated" or "refined" form of bhoga. Soteriologically, bhoga is only a "means" to mokṣa.

#### 6. The Concept of a Tattva

The concept of a "tattva" plays an important role in the Bhoga Kārikā as it does in Sadyojyoti's Tattva Saṁgraha. In both works Sadyojyoti begins with the lowest tattvas, defining and describing them by providing a logical foundation for the postulation of their existence as separate causative aspects of phenomenal reality; no tattvas are in themselves directly open to perception, except of course to yogi-pratyakṣa.<sup>53</sup> In the case of all the tattvas there is a link from the "lowest" to the "highest", a genetic and constitutive link causally connecting each stage of the creation and maintenance of the world. Even the "subtle body" is considered to be a "set" or "collection" of a specific grouping of "tattvas", a personal "set" of tattvas said to trans-

migrate into one of the various physical bodies employed in rebirth.

In spite of the importance of the conception of the notion of a "tattva", neither the Bhoga Kārikā nor the Tattva Samgraha offers a clear definition of the concept of a tattva. The term is usually employed in two different senses that can be described as "general" and "specific".<sup>54</sup> In a general sense the term is used to refer to the formal and underlying constitution of the world as descriptive of the ontological structures that the notion of "the world" can be reduced to. The more specific sense of the term is used to describe the genesis of the world-event and the consciousness of it; "tattva" in this sense is a more causal notion which forms the basis of the satkāryavāda, the doctrine that states that the effect pre-exists in the cause, or that the "effect" is simply a "modification" (vṛtti) of the cause.

The more general use of the notion of a tattva is found in most Śaivite texts, although expressed in different ways. The Śivajñāna-siddhiyār, for example, gives a clear expression of this use of the term:<sup>55</sup>

The whole universe, constituting all that has form, the formless, and those that have form and no form, is the manifestation of the tattvas.

Within this same work we find a concomitant idea of the general conception of tattva when the author defines "other" doctrines according to the tattva level they construe as fundamental; for example, the Cārvākas are said to remain within the sphere of the gross elements, the Buddhists the sphere of the mind, etc.<sup>56</sup> Again, in the Śataratna Samgraha we find a similar, more general conception of tattva:<sup>57</sup>

Tattva, in reality, is only one, but in the process of creation

6

assumes different names as nāda, bindu etc., in the same way as gems of the same cutting assume different names in different settings.

Abhinavagupta, for example, describes "tattva" as something akin to a "form" or "universal".<sup>58</sup>

Tattva (the essential nature of that) means one that shines undivided in the various groups of things, with distinctive features, and so serves as the cause to justify their being represented as belonging to one class. For example, a mountain, tree and city are all, in their essential characteristic, earth, and so are river, lake and sea water.

We find a more "specific" approach to the ontological status of a tattva in the Tattva Prakāśa and a more detailed account of this concept by Śrīkumāra and Aghora Śiva. In the Tattva Prakāśa the specific notion of a tattva is framed in temporal and spatial terms:<sup>59</sup>

A tattva is that which provides enjoyment (bhoga) for all beings and which continues to exist up to the period of the periodic cosmic destruction. Thus, pots, physical bodies etc. are not considered tattvas.

Śrīkumāra explains that, up until the period of the periodic cosmic destruction, the tattvas act as the cause (kāraṇa) of the enjoyment of all beings. He explains what he means by "cause": the tattvas are pervasive over a certain amount of time whereas the objects such as pots, bodies, etc., do not continue through time. He provides an analogy: just as the forms (rūpa) of the mind (buddhi) [i.e., the eight dispositions] are responsible for the various "modifications" it assumes, so are the tattvas responsible for the various modifications of pots etc.<sup>60</sup> Śrīkumāra further quotes a Śaivite text which gives an interpretation of "tattva" based on an etymological interpretation of the term "tattva" derived from the root tan, which means "to extend":<sup>61</sup>

The tattvas are so called because of their extensiveness and constancy--extensiveness here has reference to their pervasiveness

(vyāpti) with regard to space while constancy refers to their pervasiveness with regard to time. The tattvas, which even have pervasiveness over millions of miles, exist up to the periodic cosmic destruction. Otherwise, even pillars would be classified as tattvas.

According to the Tattva Prakāśa, the tattvas continue to exist "up to" the time of the cosmic destruction and survive this period in embryonic form in māyā; although the Tattva Prakāśa does not further explicate this notion of the embryonic form of the tattvas, the Śaiva Paribhāṣā does, bringing out in more specific terms the exact relation between the "form" and the "function" of the tattvas.<sup>62</sup> During the embryonic period of rest following the cosmic destruction, the tattvas maintain a basic ontological status and are said to "exist" (vidyamānata); however, the "functions" or "activities" (vyāpāra) of the tattvas are said to lack existence (abhāva).<sup>63</sup> After the period of the cosmic destruction, the tattva can resume its activity only after the intervention of a third element, the soul; in order for the functional aspect to become "engaged" and to take on the status of "existence", there needs to be a "conjunction" (saṃyojana) between the soul and the tattva. Like the tattva, the soul is also said to "exist" in embryonic form during the cosmic destruction, and its "functions" are also said to lack existence. By first prompting the functional activity of the soul through the prompting of each soul's karmic predispositions, Śiva ultimately prompts the activity of the tattva to serve the soul in the bringing about of bhoga.

Śivāgrajogin provides an analogy to explain this relation between the soul and the tattva: although both a fire and a piece of iron may exist, due to the "non-existence" of the activities of a person to



bring them together, the iron will not heat up:64

Just as there is conjunction of the fire with iron and disjunction of iron from fire, similarly there is the dependence on karma of the tattvas and (the conjunction and disjunction) of the soul from śakti.

In this description of the activity of the tattvas it is clear that insofar as bhoga is concerned, the essential activity the soul is engaged in occurs between the soul's karmically accumulated predispositions and the tattvic forms. Both karma and tattva (qua sub-species of māyā) are aspects of the category of pāśa; thus, pāśa as circumscribed by "bhoga" is essentially this specific relation between the two pāśas. karma and māyā [qua tattva].

Throughout the Bhoga Kārikā Sadyojyoti tends to employ the notion of a "tattva" in its specific sense as a causal principle; through a process of logical deduction he begins with the most phenomenally "given"--i.e., the qualities of the gross elements--to establish the existence of the lowest tattvas on the basis of which the higher tattvas come to be explained. This more causal employment of the notion of a tattva is most notable when Sadyojyoti does not include the soul under the category of tattva, a sphere of being that is limited by the finite conditions of temporal sequence and spatial restrictedness.

## Chapter I

### NOTES

<sup>1</sup> Bhatt establishes the date of Rāmakanṭha II in an indirect manner which is ultimately based on the dating of Abhinavagupta. In his MAV Nārāyanakanṭha cites a verse from Utpaladeva (Isvarasiddhi, v. 55, KSTS, vol. 24, 1921, p. 30). Utpaladeva is known to be the peer of Lakṣmanagupta who is the mentor of Abhinavagupta, who states in his Tantrāloka, 12.25: "Utpaladeva is the master of my master"; Utpaladeva is therefore established to have flourished around the second half of the 9th c. As a result, it can be inferred that Nārāyanakanṭha and Rāmakanṭha II are prior to the beginning of the 9th c.; cf. Matāngapārameśvara Āgama (Vidyāpāda), critically edited by N. R. Bhatt, Publications de l'Institut Français d'Indologie, No. 56 (Pondicherry: Institut Français d'Indologie, 1977), pp. viii-vii. Since Rāmakanṭha II commented on two of Sadyojyoti's works and since Rāmakanṭha II considers Sadyojyoti to be one of "the venerable ancient masters" -- indicating that some time must have passed between Sadyojyoti and Rāmakanṭha II -- the latest date for Sadyojyoti can be set as approximately the 8th c. This does not, however, rule out the possibility that Sadyojyoti's date might be much earlier.

<sup>2</sup> A precise date for the oldest Āgamas cannot be established although various dates have been suggested. For example, K. S. Ramaswami Sastri maintains that the early Agamic literature is pre-Vedic; cf. K. S. Ramaswami-Sastri, Vol. C. (Adyar: Kunhan Raja, 1946), p.74. Dasgupta, on the other hand, suggests that the earliest Agamas began to be composed in the second or third centuries A. D.; cf. Surendranath Dasgupta, A History of Indian Philosophy (Varanasi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1975), II, 40. Although Jan Gonda accepts that the earliest Agamas may have been composed between the fifth and the ninth centuries A. D., he concludes his discussion of the various datings put forth by other authors by restricting the earliest dating to the seventh or eighth century; cf. Jan Gonda, "Medieval Religious Literature in Sanskrit," Vol. II, Fascicle I, A History of Indian Literature, ed. Jan Gonda (Wiesbaden; Otto Harrassowitz, 1977), pp.163-165. In passing it may be noted that the Saivite Svetasvātara Upaniṣad is generally held to have been composed around the fifth or fourth century B.C.; cf. Jan Gonda, Viṣṇuism and Śivaism: A Comparison (New Delhi: Munshiram Manoharlal, 1976), p. 18.

<sup>3</sup> Pandey suggests the ninth century, although he does not provide the specific reasons for this dating; however, he probably adopted it as a compromise between Rāmkanṭha II's dating and an early dating of the Agamas; cf. K. C. Pandey, "Bhāskari," Vol. III, The Princess of Wales Saraswati Bhavana Texts, ed. by T. P. Upadhyaya, No. 84 (Lucknow:

Superintendent, Printing and Stationary, U. P., 1954), p. xv.

<sup>4</sup>A style of work which would not fit into these genres would be the Mantravārtika attributed to Sadyojyoti by Rāmakantha II in his commentary on the MK, p.4. The Mantravārtika has not been recovered.

<sup>5</sup>In the closing verse of the Tattva Traya Nirṇaya (v.32, p. 21) Sadyojyoti refers to himself as the commentator (vrttikrt) of the Svāyambhuva Agama and claims that the Tattva Traya Nirṇaya is written according to the teaching of the Svāyambhuva Agama

<sup>6</sup>The Institut Francais D'Indologie has an unpublished manuscript of the Svāyambhuva Agama -<sup>2</sup> entitled the Svāyambhuvasūtrasaṅgrahavṛttih -- whose incomplete commentary is attributed to Sadyojyoti; the commentary contains the first four sections of anānapāda which deal with Pati, Paśu, Sakti and Adhva. Various other Saivite authors refer to this commentary by Sadyojyoti as Svāyambhuvasūtratīkā, Svāyambhuvavṛtti, Svāyambhuvasūtrasaṅgrahavṛtti and Svāyambhuvasāstratīkā; cf. Bhatt Maṅgapaṛameśvara Agama, pp. xvi-xvii. It is also referred to as the Sadyojyotīstīkā; cf. Pandit Pañchan Sastri. "Sataratna Saṅgraha with Sataratnollekhāni," intro. by Shrimat Svami Bhairabananda, Tantrik Texts, ed. Arthur Avalon, vol. xxII (Calcutta: Agamaśāstrasamāhāra Samiti, 1944), p.83. In terms of Agamic chronology, the Svāyambhuva Agama is prior to the Raurava Agama as Ruru refers to the former work in 3.14 of the Raurava Agama.

<sup>7</sup>In his commentary on the TS, Aghora Śiva mentions a "long commentary" (brhattīkā) called the Sarannīśa by Nārāyaṇakantha of which his own, which he describes as "a short commentary" (laghutīkā), is modeled after; cf. TS, p. 1.

<sup>8</sup>v. 57; TS, p. 52

<sup>9</sup>TS, p. 52: "svvṛttih sadvṛttirīti rauravavṛtternāma tatkartredāṃ nirmittamītyarthah."

<sup>10</sup>For example, cf. also MĀV, p. 153. Sadyojyoti is also referred to as Khetakabāla in MPV, p. 72. He is referred to as Khetapāla in Jayaratna's commentary on the Tantrāloka (KSTS, XXIX, p. 74 and 211).

<sup>11</sup>Tattva Traya Nirṇaya, v. 32, p. 21.

<sup>12</sup>Mokṣa Kārikā v. 155, p.63: "śivātparamparāyatau bhogamokṣau sasādhanaū/ātreyaya munīndrena ruruṇa samprakāśitau." In the Sivamahapurāṇa the twenty-eight original Yogachāryas are enumerated; each of the twenty-eight had four disciples of which a certain "Ruru" is said to be a prominent one; cf. Vāyavīya Samhitā, 2,9. The Raurava Agama is said to be communicated by the sage Ruru to "Marici" who in general mythology is "an ancient sage and demiurge; the mental son of Brahmā" -- cf. E. Hopkins, Epic Mythology (Strassburg: Meiner and Co. 1915), p.189.

<sup>13</sup>"Yābhyām prakāśitam vartma siddhānte siddhabhāvataḥ gurunāmaḥ  
tau vandyau sadyojyotibrhaspatī." This maṅgalāśloka is found in both  
the MKV, p. 2 and the MPV, p. 1.

<sup>14</sup>In his commentary to 1.104A of the Tantrāloka which states that  
"in the Śivatanuśāstra the Lord is revealed by the masters", Jayaratna  
says that the term "masters" refers to Brhaspati (the plural being  
honorific); cf. KSTS, XXII, p. 146. One is thus led to conclude that  
the Śivatanuśāstra (although lost) is by Brhaspati and that he is prior  
to Abhinavagupta.

<sup>15</sup>The Mokṣa Kārikā is quoted in the commentary on v. 27 and the  
Tattva Saṃgraha is quoted in the commentary on vv. 40, 41, and 76. Cf.  
Sātaratnasaṅgraha of Śrī Umāpati Sivācārya, trans. P. Thirugnanasambandan,  
(Madras, University of Madras, 1973).

<sup>16</sup>Mādhava quotes TS 24B-25A and Aghora Śiva's commentary thereon;  
cf. Mādhava, Sarvadarśana Saṃgraha, trans. E. B. Cowell and A. E. Gough,  
Chowkamba Sanskrit Series Studies, Vol. X (Varanasi: The Chowkamba  
Sanskrit Series Office, 1961), pp. 122-123.

<sup>17</sup>For the list of the eighteen renowned authors, of manuals,  
i.e. Ugrajyoti, Sadyojyoti, Rāmakaṅṭha, Somaśambhu, Aghora Sambhu, etc.;  
cf. H. Brunner-Lachaux, Somaśambhu-Paddhati, Publications de L'Institut  
Français d'Indologie, 2 Vol., No. 25 (Pondicherry: Institut Français  
d'Indologie, 1963, 1968), I, xxii. Śrī Umāpati quotes from the Mokṣa  
Kārikā, Tattva Traya Nirṇaya and Tattva Saṃgraha: cf. the  
Sātaratnollekhānī Commentary on verses 21, 27, 40, 41 and 76.

<sup>18</sup>Rāmakaṅṭha II claims that he is from Kashmir in the last verse  
of his Nāda Kārikā (v. 25; AP, p. 14) and Aghora Śiva claims that he  
is from the region of the Coṭa both in the ITNV (v. 32; AP, p. 22) and in  
the Kriyākramadyotikā (Madras; Cintadripet, 1970), p. 443.

Since Rāmakaṅṭha II is earlier than Aghora Śiva it is more  
plausible that Sadyojyoti is also from Kashmir and that the works of  
Sadyojyoti and Rāmakaṅṭha II were brought to the south. Aghora Śiva  
claims to remain faithful to the "teaching" of Rāmakaṅṭha II (MĀD, p. 1);  
cf. also Bhatt, MP, p. ix-x.

<sup>19</sup>BK, v. 2A, p. 1.

<sup>20</sup>BKV, p. 2.

<sup>21</sup>Cf. for example, Pandey, Bhāskarī p. xvi and Bhatt,  
Matāṅgaparameśvara Āgama, p. xvi.

<sup>22</sup>TS, v. 57, p. 52: "ityavadattatvāni tu sadyojyotiḥ svrttikṛt."

<sup>23</sup>Tattva Traya Nirṇaya, v. 32, p. 21. "uktaḥ samāsatoyam  
tatvatrayanirṇayaś ca vṛttikṛtā svayambhuvasya..."

<sup>24</sup>v. 319, Ratna Traya, p. 107: śrīrāmakaṭhasadvṛttīm mayaivamanukurvatā." This problem is even further complicated by the reference to a Sadvṛttih, by a certain Srīrāna; for a discussion of this problem cf. Bhatt, MPA, p. xiv.

<sup>25</sup>Ratna Traya, p. 107. Aghora Śiva adds almost no commentary to the last six verses.

<sup>26</sup>cf. MPĀV (3, 19), p. 68: "darśitamasmābhiḥ...rauravavṛttiviveke iti." Bhatt takes this to refer to the Rauravavṛttiviveka by Rāmakaṭha II.

<sup>27</sup>In the MPĀV the quotation from the so-called "Rauravāgama-vṛttih" actually refers to v. 52 of the Paramokṣa Nirāsa Kārikā; in the MPĀV Rāmakaṭha II may simply be referring to his commentary on either this work or the Mokṣa Kārikā; cf. MPĀV, p. 609.

<sup>28</sup>With respect to the title of the Raurava Āgama as the Raurava-śūtra- saṃgraha, Agamic writers loosely refer to the verses as Sūtras rather than Slokas; cf. MA, I, 27.

<sup>29</sup>Compared to the Jñānapādas of other Āgamas, such as the Mataṅga and Mrgendra, the Jñānapāda of the Raurava Āgama is very paltry. In the Raurava Āgama itself Ruru says that the Āgama was first revealed in different forms by the five faces of Sadaśiva and was later reconstituted by Anantapāramesvara to form one crore of slokas, which Ruru further condensed to 1200. The present edition of the Vidyapāda contains 399 slokas. If all the slokas from the Kriyapāda are taken into account the present Raurava Āgama would contain well over 1,200 slokas. For a summary of the ten sections of the Jñānapāda of Raurava Āgama. cf. Gonda, Medieval Religious Literature in Sanskrit, p. 169-170.

<sup>30</sup>cf. RA, 7-5. For a discussion of the Śaivite construal of "yoga" cf. Dasgupta, op. cit. p. 204. Bhatt mentions the listing of the Angas in other Āgamas: Mataṅgapāramesvara (Yogapāda, paṭala 7) lists the same six; MA (yoga-pāda, paṭala 3) lists the same six but adds japa; Kiranāgama (yogapāda, paṭala 1) lists six but replaces the tarka of RA with āsana; and the Suprabhedāgama (yogapāda, paṭala 3) lists the eight given in the Yogasūtras.

<sup>31</sup>Actually, an exact numerical enumeration of the tattvas does not appear to be a concern of the RA; for instance, in some sections "manas" is included among an enumeration of the tattvas while elsewhere it is excluded (cf. 1.13 and 4.49). Although throughout the RA the five Śivatattvas (Śiva, Śakti, Sadaśiva, Īvara, and Suddhavidyā) are discussed in the exposition of the Saivadarśana in 10, 98-101, they are not included in a numerical exposition of the tattvas.

<sup>32</sup>Certain Tamil commentators on the Śivajñānabodha claim that

the Śivjñānabodha is a portion of the twelfth adhyāya of the seventy-third paṭala of the RA designated as the "pāśavimocanapaṭala"; as well, in the Kannada speaking area of the south there is a legend that a teacher called "Śivjñānabodha" wrote the twelve verses as a condensed version "of the essence" of the RA. For a discussion of the Meykaṇḍar literature, cf. K. Śivaraman, Śaivism in Philosophical Perspective (Varanasi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1973), pp. 30-39.

<sup>33</sup> Raurava Āgama, Upodghāta, v. 2; Vol. I, p.1.

<sup>34</sup> Ibid., vv. 3-5, p. 1.

<sup>35</sup> Ibid., V.8; p. 2: "sarvakrtsarvavettāraṃ sarvaiṅgamaaparājitam/ sarvabhūtātmaḥbhūtastham prāṇoto 'smi sadaśivaṃ. Sadaśiva is comparable to the Vaiṣṇavite "Vasudeva"; for a discussion of Vasudeva, cf. 71 Brunner-Lauchaux, SSP, p. 10 and the index, p. 335.

<sup>36</sup> Raurava Āgama, Śivatattvāni, v. 14, p. 5: "tato 'dhiṣṭhāya vidyeśo mayāṃ sa pārameśvaraḥ/ksobhavitvā svakiraṇaiḥ sṛjate taljasīm. kalām."

<sup>37</sup> Cf. v. 518-52, p. 48 and MK, v. 117, p. 44. For the contra-"ekatva" cf. TS, v. 54, pp 50 and MK, vv. 131-133, p. 51. The liberated condition of Vidyeśvaras is a lower type of liberation. The higher mokṣa is the "śivasāmya" where all the bonds are removed and the soul's "drk-kriyā-śakti" becomes manifest. Aghora Śiva is emphatic that this (śiva-) samyarūpa is not a participation in a condition of "oneness" in the way represented by a "universal", i.e., the soul does not come to participate in "Śivahood". Rather, it is a more negative condition where every distinction between the soul and Śiva "falls away".

<sup>38</sup> For this translation, cf. Gonda, Medieval Religious Literature in Sanskrit, p. 190.

<sup>39</sup> Raurava Āgama, Upodghāta, v. 18, p. 2.

<sup>40</sup> Aghora Śiva lists his date in the colophon of one of his major texts as "the saka era 1080 [1157 A.D.]"; cf. Kriyākramadyotikā, p. 437 and Brunner-Lauchaux, SSP, I, XLII.

<sup>41</sup> For a history of his works, cf. Bhāskarī, p. XXIV.

<sup>42</sup> Cf. Tattvatrayanirṇaya, v.32, p. 21 and Aghora Śiva's opening māṅgala to MAD.

<sup>43</sup> Cf. Gonda, Medieval Religious Literature, p. 215.

<sup>44</sup> The majority of Āgamic citations described by Aghora Śiva come from the Sṛmatsvāyambhuva Āgama, Mrgendra Āgama and Mataṅga Āgama.

<sup>45</sup> cf. Pierre-Sylvain Filliozat, "Le Tattvaprakāśa du Roi Bhoja et les commentaires d'Aghorasivācārya et de Srikumāra", Année, 1971, p. 249.

<sup>46</sup> These four traditionally accepted "anubandha" (eg., tatra anubandho nāma adhikāri viśayasambandhaprayojanāni -- Sadānanda's Vedāntasāra, 1.5) are not always clearly evident in the original texts as interpreted by the commentators; for example, Kumārila Bhaṭṭa in the pratijñānasūtram, 11-25 of his Slokavārtika draws all four from Jaimini's first sūtra, "athāto dharmajijñāsa".

<sup>47</sup> By "logic" Sadyojyoti means something along the lines of including "simple enumeration" (uddesa), definition (lakṣaṇa) and examination (parikṣā), which are considered to be the characteristics good manuals (samgraha) should possess; cf., for example, Athalye's notes in the Tarkasamgraha of Annambhaṭṭa with Author's Dipikā and Govardhana's Nyāya Bodhini, ed. by Y. V. Athalye and trans. by M. R. Bodas, 2nd ed., Bombay Sanskrit Series, No. LV (Poona: Bhandarkar Institute Press, 1963), p. 71.

<sup>48</sup> This is the same claim made by Ruru in the RĀ; in fact, many Āgamic authors claim that what they are presenting is a condensed version of a larger and more detailed teaching.

<sup>49</sup> Aghora Śiva takes the term "sādhakāḥ" to refer to the "ācāryāḥ" by playing on the etymology of the term "sādhaka"; the "ācāryāḥ" are the ones who "bring to accomplishment" (sādhayanti) both bhoga and mokṣa. Aghora Śiva's comments do not, however, agree with Sadyojyoti's own remark at the end of the MK that the work was written for the "dull-minded" (mandabuddhayah), unless of course "manda" has reference to all who are "lower" than the god Śiva, and the sages Ātreya and Ruru mentioned in the kārikā previous to this statement.

Concerning the term "sādhaka" in the Āgamas, H. Brunner-Lauchaux defines the term in its technical usage in light of the four scales of Āgamic Saivism initiation, i. e. samayin, putrakā, sādhaka and ācārya. The sādhaka "is the disciple who, after the initiations called samaya and nirvāṇa-dikṣā, chooses the path of powers (siddhi) and is given to that effect a special consecration." Cf. "Le Sādhakā, Personnage Oublié du sivaïsme du Sud," Année, 1975, p. 443.

Generally, samayadikṣā and viśeṣadikṣā allow one to worship Śiva, render service in the temples and observe obligatory duty. "But the nirvāṇadikṣā is one which provides eligibility for the study, reflection etc. of the Āgamas." Cf., SPB, p. 297 The SPB lists seven different kinds of dikṣā, although it does not discuss ācāryābhīṣeka.

<sup>50</sup> "Bhoga" as "enjoyment" also has reference to karma as the soul is the one who enjoys the effects of karmic fruits. "Anurañjika" is also etymologically used in describing rāga; the soul is "affected/coloured by rāga" (rāgena rañjitaḥ), which attachment designates the

attachment to objects (viṣaya-āśaktiḥ or viṣaya-anurañjakam). In Sāṃkhya the term has the same sense; for example, in his commentary on SK 40, Gaudapāda glosses "to be endowed with" (adhivāsita) [with respect to the subtle body being endowed with the eight bhavas] with "anurañjita".

<sup>51</sup> Although a distinction must be drawn between the three fundamental categories or "padārtha" -- i.e. pati, paśu and pāśa -- and the concept of the tattvas, quite often even the padārthas are referred to as tattvas. In the Ratna Traya and Tattva Traya Nirṇaya, for instance, the three basic "tattvas" which are discussed are actually the three padārthas (in the former work, bindu is representative of pāśa while in the latter māyā is). According to the Tattva-Traya Nirṇaya the three padārthas are said to be aspatial, atemporal and possessed of agentive powers. In his commentary on BK 145B Aghora Śiva uses the term "tattva" to describe a "padārtha". There is also an unresolved problem over which padārtha the five Pure Tattvas (Siva Sakti, Sadāśiva, Īvara, Mantresa, and Sadvidya-mantra) should fall. On the one hand, qua tattvas, they are said to fall under the pati-padārtha while, on the other hand, as "higher" forms of māyā (i.e. as bindu) they are said to fall under the pāśa-padārtha.

Different texts assume more than three padārthas; Śivāgrāyogin enumerates the various extra padārthas, held by other Āgamas, but concludes that the extra tattvas fall under the pāśa-padārtha. cf. SPB, pp. 59-60; as well, cf. Das Gupta, p. 29 and MPA, xviii-xxiv.

<sup>52</sup> The second sūtra of the Yoga Sūtras states the importance of this concept in terms of the goal of yogic practice: "yogaścittavrttinirodhan"; cf. Patañjalasūtrāni with the Scholium of Vyāsa and the Commentary of Vācaspati. Ed. Dajavām Śāstrī Bodas, Bombay Sanskrit Series, XLVI. (Bombay: Department of Public Instruction, 1892), p. 4.

<sup>53</sup> In this case "Yogi-pratyakṣa" is an exception; Sadyojyoti, however, begins his description and justification of the tattva theory from the point of view of "laukika-pratyakṣa". Even pratyakṣa qua svasamvedana in the form of a ahampratyaya is not a direct perception of the ahamtattva as the pratyaya is an effect of the tattva and not the tattva itself.

<sup>54</sup> This twofold manner of viewing the tattva, i.e. what is here called the general and the specific, would be doubted by some. G. Larson eschews the identification of the tattvavāda with the Satkāryavāda; he claims that the concepts of cause and effect are inappropriate in discussing the relation between the tattvas and the world. Larson argues that even the early authors of the tattva theory "themselves confused" the two by drawing causal analogies from "the phenomenal space-time level" to which the Satkāryavāda applies -- such as the milk and curd or water in different forms -- to apply to the theory of tattvas.

In place of this causal interpretation of the role that the tattvas play in the tattvavāda, G. Larson applies a structural model which stresses the idea of "transformational change" wherein the tattvas are viewed as the "deep structures" of the surface reality and are those



elements of the yogic world which provide "the idea of wholeness, the idea of transformation and the idea of self-regulation." Cf. G. Larson, "The notion of satkārya in Sāṃkhya: Toward a Philosophical Reconstruction." Philosophy East and West, (1984), pp. 31-48. The major fault of Larson's analysis is clear: he shows no concern for any possible comparable conceptions of the concept of "deep structure" in classical Sāṃkhya. In his short critique of Larson's article, Bhagawan B. Singh also points out that the conception of "kāraṇa" in the tattvic view is "much richer" than the specific concept of a cause; cf. Bhagawan B. Singh, "Commentary on Gerald L. Larson's 'The Notion of Sateārya in Sāṃkhya' and Frank Podgorski's 'Sāṃkara's Critique of Sāṃkhyān, Causality in the Brahma-sūtrabhāṣya'," Philosophy East and West, (1984), p. 59-63. It might further be argued that what Larson calls "the structuralist perspective" simply brings out in greater relief the role that ontology and soteriology play in the tattvic theory, especially classical Sāṃkhya. According to the Sateāryavāda, the ontological conception of the tattvas postulates that all creation proceeds from prakṛti as a "transformation" or "modification" (vṛtti) and is connected to the teleological conception of the soul's utilitarian engagement in the tattvas (i.e., nimitta-naimittika prasaṅgena) that have their own soteriological purpose--which is "for the release of each soul" (pratipūṣavimokṣārtham).

Incidentally, the term "tattva" is mentioned only once in the Sāṃkhya Kārikā; in verse 64 the study of the tattvas (tattva-abhyāsa) is said to lead to the correct understanding of things. A similar use of the term is found in the Sāṃkhya Sūtras (1.107; 3.73; and 4.1) and is mentioned incidentally in 5.30; 5.72 claims that everything but prakṛti and puruṣa is anitya -- which would imply that if prakṛti is considered anitya so must "tattva" be. The term is not used in the Yoga Sūtras.

The analysis of the transformation of "structures" from a deep to a surface reality has also been used to explain forms of Indian ritualism, cf. Frits Staal, "Ritual, Grammar, and the Origins of Science in India." Journal of Indian Philosophy, 10 (1982), pp. 1-24.

<sup>55</sup> cf. Arunāndī Śivāchārya, Śivajñāna Siddhiyār, translation, introduction and notes by J. M. Nallasvāmi Pillai (Madras: Meykandar Press, 1913), p. 183. At this cosmic level the tattvas seem to operate at the level of the "form" through which the śṛṣṭikrama operates, as māyā and not tattva is still considered the seed from which the whole universe evolves after the pralaya. In the act of creation, Śiva is the efficient cause, māyā the material and Śakti the instrumental; cf. Śivajñāna Siddhiyār, p. 129.

<sup>56</sup> Ibid., p. 184. This is the same approach to the various "darśanas" found in other works, such as, for example, Mādhava's Sarva Darśana Saṃgraha, although this work does not treat the other systems along tattvic lines. One of the more detailed accounts of other systems from a Saivite point of view is found in Kṣemarāja's Pratyabhijñā Hṛdaya. Kṣemarāja says that all the other doctrines are simply Śiva's "roles" as the dramatic dancer disguising himself; the tattvic level reached by the other doctrines follows these general lines: Cārvāka remains on the level of the Bhūtas; Nyāya, Mīmāṃsā and the Saugata Buddhists remain at the level of the Buddhi-tattva; Vedānta, Mādhyamikas and the

Pāñcarātras remain at the level of Prakṛti; Sāṃkhya remains at the level of Vijñānakala; the "Śrutyanta" attain the level of Iśvara; and the Vyākaraṇa attain the level of Sadāśiva -- only the Saivites attain the level of the Siva-tattva. Cf. Pratyabhijñāhradayam, trans. and intro. by Jaideva Singh (Varanasi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1980), pp. 65-69.

<sup>57</sup>ŚRL, p. 20.

<sup>58</sup>Āgamādhikara, Āhn. I, "Īśvara Pratyabhijñā Vimarsinī," Bhāskarī, III, 191.

<sup>59</sup>Cf. Tattvapraśāsa with the Tātparyadīpikā of Śrīkumāradeva and Vṛtti by Aghoraśivācārya, ed. K. N. Mishra. (Varanasi: Chaukhamba Orientalia, 1976), p. 143: "ā pralayaṃ yat tiṣṭhati sarvesāṃ bhogadayaḥ bhūtanam/ tattvamiti proktam na sariraghatadī tattvamatah."

A very similar view of a tattva understood in temporal terms as the essence (rūpa) of things which is not affected by the manifestation and ultimate disappearance of created objects, i.e. a distinction between the "vyakta" and the "rūpa" is found in the Yukti Dīpikā: cf. Yuktidīpikā, ed. by Rām Chandra Pandeya (Varanasi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1967), pp. 57-61. For a discussion of this concept of the tattva in the Sāṃkhya, cf. Pulinbihari Chakravarti, Origin and Development of the Sāṃkhya System of Thought (Delhi: Oriental Books Reprint Corporation, 1975), pp. 251-253.

<sup>60</sup>Ibid., p. 143. It should be added that, ultimately according to the monist Śrī Kumāra, insofar as all the tattvas fall under the pāśa aspect of the tripartite, pati, paśu, and pāśa, tattva is simply a "superimposition (upādhi) on the basic unity of Siva. Cf. Tattvapraśāsa, p. 17 and Filliozat, p. 263.

<sup>61</sup>Tattva Prakāśa, p. 144:

tatatvat santatatvācca tattvānti tato viduḥ  
tatatvam deśato vyāptih santatatvam ca kālataḥ  
lakṣādiyojanavyapi tattvamā pralayat sthitam  
anyathā stambhakumbhādirapi tattvam prasajyate

This play on the etymological sense of the term "tattva" being linked to the root tan which means "to extend" and is meant to indicate the spatial and temporal extensiveness aspect of the tattva [tan changing to tat before -tva] is probably the very opposite of the actual etymological conception of the literal meaning of "tat-tva" as "thatness" [i.e. tad-tva] in an immediately experiential sense whose apodictical connotation lent itself to a conception of the aspatial and atemporal "essence" of a thing (i.e., as in the Mahabhāṣya 1.1.1, "tadapi nityam yasmistattvam na vihanyate. kim punastattvam -- tadbhāvastattvam). In this sense, the original meaning of the term tattva has its more literal reference in something comparable to the "tode ti" in Aristotle's Categories (i.e., as in 3b.10: "καὶσα δὲ οὐσία δοκεῖ τόδε τι σημαίνειν.")

<sup>62</sup>Cf. ŚPB, pp. 138-139. In the TP the tattvas are said to

dissolve (līyante) into māyā (v.67); only māyā, puruṣa and Śiva continue to exist during the cosmic destruction (v.69).

<sup>63</sup>In the manner in which Śivāgrayogin describes the Mahapralaya, the three abhāvas are: Śivaśaktiprerana, Puruṣa-vyāpāra and Tattva-vyāpāra. The real "fuse" is karma (i.e. "bhojakārsta").

<sup>64</sup>SPB, p. 139: ayasāgneryathā yogo viyogo 'gneryathāyasā/  
tattvanamātmanāścaiva śaktyā karmavaśādbhavet.

## Chapter II

### DOCTRINE OF THE SUBTLE AND GROSS ELEMENTS

#### 1. The Teleological Concern Regarding the Elements

In the BK the gross and subtle elements are dealt with solely in terms of a theology that construes all events as ultimately connected to the will or intention of the Supreme Being, Śiva; within this conception of the world the elements serve a specifically teleological goal as contributory factors engaged in the final release of the soul. The elements are thus exclusively treated in terms of their participation in and contribution towards bhoga; they are merely the "ancillaries" of bhoga (bhogāṅgatva) without which the soteriological activity of bhoga could not be brought to fruition.<sup>1</sup>

Once a soul is bound by "pāśa" qua māyā, the foundational material cause of the world, it is ipso facto united with all the ancillary members of māyā. The "elements" -- specifically the material elements -- are considered to be the final evolutes in the last stage of the evolution of the world process (sr̥stikrama). The gross element represents, in a more abstract manner, the final stage of "manifestation" (vyakta); it represents the experiential plenum of the vyakta, the sphere of the world-experience on the grounds of which the whole tattvic doctrine comes to be "inferred".<sup>2</sup> If one were to set up a cosmic duality in the Śaiva doctrine between "matter" and "spirit", the level of the gross elements certainly represents the final manifested form of "matter"; since the ultimate calling of the spirit relates to

its freedom from the connection to matter, the elements, and all they teleologically entail, represent the basic "hindrances" which must first be "overcome" in a soteriological sense.

## 2. The Origin of the Gross Element

The five gross elements (bhūta) are described as earth (pṛthivī) water (jala), fire (agni), air (vāyu), and ether (ākāśa). Sadyojyoti specifically deals with gross elements in terms of their functions (vṛtti) and their qualities (guṇa)<sup>3</sup>. The function of each gross element is either "common" (sādhāraṇa) or "unique" (asādhāraṇa). The common function describes the process whereby the gross elements collectively work together in constituting the physical body by means of which the sense organs come to operate. The unique function describes the specific activity, which is relative to each individual gross element. The "qualities" of the gross elements are also considered in a two-fold manner as either common or unique: each gross element has its unique quality while at the same time sharing the qualities of the other gross elements, except in the case of ether. The qualities are very important in terms of the establishment the tattvic doctrine, since it is only through the "perceptual" qualities that the imperceptible gross elements are inferred.

In describing the origin of the gross elements in terms of the process of tattvic evolution, Sadyojyoti employs biological terminology applicable to organic genesis.<sup>4</sup> The gross elements are said to be "filled out" (puṣṭaṇa) in the organic sense of being "nourished" or "fed". The source or cause (kāraṇabhūta) of this nourishment is the

subtle element (tanmātra). In an organic sense the process of material creation is understood as an ongoing activity which brings the "cause" and the "effect" into a concomitant and inseparable relation. The "cause" qua cause continues to exist "in", so to speak, the effect.<sup>5</sup> This understanding of causality is in direct opposition with the asatkāryavāda which holds that the cause ceases to have a direct ontological relation with the effect once the effect comes into existence.<sup>6</sup>

Aghora Śiva cites a text which emphasizes the twofold activity of causation as well as maintenance involved in this organic creation: "the activity of prakṛti is [said to have two functions]: the increasing of that which has already been accomplished and the acting as the cause of that which has not yet been accomplished (akṛtasya kāraṇam kṛtasya parivardhanam ca prakṛtikarma yataḥ)."<sup>7</sup> In this quoted passage "prakṛti" stands for the entire realm of the material world and the manner in which all causality is governed by the concomitant interconnectedness of the cause and the effect. Both the original causation and the ongoing maintenance of the material elements is due to the subtle elements.

### 3. The Common and Unique Functions of the Gross Elements

As has been mentioned, the functions of the gross elements are either common or unique. The common function of the gross elements is said to involve the supporting of the sense and motor organs (indriyādhāratva). This function is not actually carried out directly by the gross elements but takes place through the instrumentality of the physical body. Through the commonly shared activity of constituting the physical body,

the gross elements come to support the activity of the organs. Although the sense organs are technically described as having their "locus" (sthāna) in the subtle body,<sup>8</sup> the gross elements are said to "bear" them, i.e., provide a receptacle for them, as a cup, for instance, does for water.<sup>9</sup> Aghora Śiva argues for the necessity of postulating the existence of a specific medium to bear the organs, even though the organs already have a supporting locus in the subtle body. He argues that the organs are in themselves inactive and require a medium through which they come to be active, i.e., the physical body. In one sense this common function precedes the actual unique functions of the gross elements, since it is only when this common function exists that the unique functions come into being. Teleologically, the specific functions of the gross elements do not come into being on their own account but simply on account of bearing the sense organs; this bearing requires that the collection of the unique functions of the gross elements work together as a common function. However, it is not the physical body understood as the totality of the unique functions working collectively but the soteriological activity of karma that ultimately activates the sense organs, since kārma directly controls the activity of bhoga; insofar as the gross elements are essentially considered to be "ancillaries of bhoga", all their activity is directed towards bhoga, whose overriding cause is karma.<sup>10</sup> Since both the sense organs and the gross elements (in their embryonic form as subtle elements) have their locus in the subtle body, the sense organs and gross elements share the common purpose of bringing about the enjoyment of karmic effects. Although the subtle body is, in part, constituted by these

two separate groups of tattvas, it is said to carry out one goal, as is the case with a lamp (bhinnajāṭīyamapyekaphalaṃ dīpāṅgavastuvat).<sup>4</sup> In a word, all of the functions of the gross elements are subsumed under this one goal of the subtle body, i.e. karmabhoga.

The following specific functions of the gross elements are listed in verse six of the BK: "supporting" belongs to the earth, "bringing-together" to water, "maturing" to fire, "structuring" to air and "providing space" to ether. In a very significant sense these unique functions are the gross elements themselves, since it is as these unique functions that the gross elements carry out the common functions and possess the qualities. The gross elements exist in the form of these specific functions and not as separate "entities" removed from the activities of these functions.

#### 4. The Qualities of the Gross Elements

In terms of understanding the relationship between the gross and subtle elements and the ontological status of both, the qualities of the gross elements serve a much more important role than the functions since it is only by means of the qualities that the existence of the non-perceptual gross and subtle elements can be pramaṇically established, i.e. through inference.<sup>12</sup>

Sadyojyoti first describes the qualities of the gross elements before giving the logical proofs justifying this description. Each gross element is said to possess one specific quality. Although ether only possesses sound as its quality, each of the other gross elements possesses at least one other quality besides its own specific quality: earth;



for instance, possesses all the qualities besides its own specific quality, smell. From the most subtle to the most gross, the elements along with their qualities are arranged hierarchically as follows:

<u>Gross Element (Bhūta):</u>	<u>Quality (Guṇa):</u>
Ether ( <u>ākāśa</u> ).....	Sound ( <u>śabda</u> )
Air ( <u>vāyu</u> ).....	" Touch ( <u>sparsā</u> )
Fire ( <u>agni</u> ).....	" " Colour ( <u>rūpa</u> )
Water ( <u>jala</u> ).....	" " " Taste ( <u>rasa</u> )
Earth ( <u>prthivi</u> ).....	" " " Smell ( <u>gandha</u> )

This ordering of the gross elements together with their qualities should not be confused with a similar arrangement known as the "pañcīkaraṇa" according to which each gross element accompanied by its unique quality is conjoined with the other gross elements accompanied by their unique qualities. The numerical ratio of this combination of gross elements is very exact: each gross element constitutes half and the other four one eighth each of the combination.<sup>13</sup> Ether, for example, is the result of the following combination of gross elements and their qualities:

Air .....	Touch
Fire .....	Colour
Water .....	Taste
Earth .....	Smell
Ether .....	Sound

According to Sadyojyoti each quality is itself subdivided into various species which are differently associated with the various gross elements.<sup>14</sup> For example, "colour" is of six varieties in its specific substratum earth, although it is said to be only "white" (śukla) in water. According to the manner in which the qualities are arranged in the various gross elements, the specific "arrangement" of the gross elements is inferred; Sadyojyoti demonstrates the reasoning process that leads to the following inference (BK, v. 16-16A):

No cognition of earth is possible without a cognition of odour etc., while a cognition of water etc. takes place without a cognition [of odour etc.]; consequently, earth is separate from water etc. but is not separate from odour etc.

In this manner the necessary connection (avyatirekitva) between the substratum and quality (i.e. the guṇin and guṇa or viśeṣyatva and viśeṣana) comes to be inferred on the basis of the principle that "the apprehension of the thing possessed by qualities is preceded by the apprehension of the qualities (guṇigrahanasya guṇagrahanapūrvakatvam)."  
(BKV on v.17) The order (krama) established at the level of the "qualities" therefore establishes the order at the level of the possessor of these qualities, i.e. the gross elements. The Naiyāyikas, who hold that the substratum of the qualities and the qualities themselves are both separately and perceptually cognized, argue against this Śaivite principle by citing the specific example of the white crystal put next to something red; the fact that the crystal takes on the "red" colour of the object beside it indicates that there can be an apprehension of the qualities of a thing apart from any necessary substratum-quality connection belonging to the apprehension.<sup>15</sup> In the case of the quartz

the real "colour" quality is whiteness, not redness; however, if one is to accept the principle put forth by the Śaivites, then the quartz when perceived as "red" would have to be naturally qualified by redness, which is not, in fact, the case. This proves, according to Nyāya, that the quartz qua substratum can in fact be perceived as separate from its quality, as it is perceived in the second instance as qualified by redness.

To this specific argument against the Śaivite's conception of the connection between the substratum and quality, Sadyojyoti claims that the quality "colour" should be understood as consisting of two things, both the colour and the general configuration (samsthāna) of the thing to which the colour belongs. In other words, certain things possess certain colours; hence, even when the crystal appears "red", we remember that this particular four cornered object originally possessed a white colour. Hence, the principle is not violated.<sup>16</sup>

#### 5. The Subtle Elements

The five subtle elements have the same names as the five qualities and stand to the gross elements in exactly the same sequential order as the five qualities

<u>Subtle Element (Tanmātra):</u>	<u>Gross Element (Bhūta):</u>
Sound .....	Ether
" Touch .....	Air
" Colour .....	Fire
" Taste .....	Water
" Smell .....	Earth

The view that the subtle elements are established as the causes of the gross elements is based on an argument initially founded on the following principle: if an object is of an unconscious and manifold nature, it should be considered an "effect". From the condition of being an effect, some cause must be inferred. Since the material elements are considered to fall under the category of effects, a cause must be postulated to account for these material elements. Furthermore, the specific nature of the cause is established through the nature of the effect; in the case of the gross elements, the qualities of the gross elements are thought to define the ontological status of the gross elements as effects. Hence, the nature of the cause of the gross elements will be comparable to the nature of the qualities; as a result, the subtle elements construed as the causes of the gross elements are designated with the same characteristics as the qualities, sound etc. One could almost say that the subtle elements are the unmanifested form of the qualities themselves operating through the instrumentality of the gross elements. The gross element, nevertheless, is still considered to be the "effect" of the subtle element; the gross element, qua "substratum" (gunin) of the quality, cannot be considered apart from the quality. The gunin-guna or bhūta-guṇa complex is considered to be the "effect" which explains the necessity for the postulation of the subtle element as the cause. This explains why the subtle elements themselves cannot operate as the substrata of the qualities; the subtle elements are those causal factors that are themselves without manifested qualities (anabhivyaktaviśeṣatva).<sup>17</sup>

As the causes of the gross elements the subtle elements are described as the "generating-loci" (yoni); although they are in essence of the same nature as the manifested qualities of the gross elements, they do not share the same functions of the gross elements. According to the idea already mentioned that all creation is a combination of both causation and maintenance, the subtle elements function in a dual role: as the "cause" (kāraṇa) the subtle element functions as the material cause (upādāna) in the bringing about of that which has not yet emerged (akṛtasya kāraṇam) and as the "maintainer" (āpūrāṇa) the subtle element is that which continues the maintenance (poṣaka) of that which has already come into existence (kṛtasya parivardhanam).<sup>18</sup>

In concluding the discussion of the elements, it may be pointed out that in the section of the BK that specifically treats the elements and their contribution towards bhoga, Sadyojyoti does not describe the direct origin of the elements as stemming from the individual instantiations of the ego-principle, i.e., the tāmasic aspect of the aṃkāra (from which the subtle elements directly arise).<sup>19</sup> In thus avoiding to discuss the direct origin of the elements at this point in the discussion of the tattvas, Sadyojyoti may be avoiding the possible charge by an opponent that each individual soul both materially and experientially creates its own world (bhuvana).<sup>20</sup> Restricting the originating locus of the elements to the ego, which is "specific" to each "individual" soul, may in principle rule out the possibility of the independent status of an "external" and "intersubjective" world. An opponent might argue that this "individual ego-creation theory" leaves us with a conception of the mundane "world" as simply a totality of many individual, ego-experiencing worlds.

This possible criticism never enters into the doctrine of elements as described by Sadyojyoti and Aghora Śiva, nor, for that matter, in the works on Sāṃkhya that hold a similar doctrine of elements. Although both the Śaivites<sup>21</sup> and the Sāṃkhya<sup>22</sup> assume the existence of a commonly shared, "objective" world (whether its basic material cause is assumed to be "māyā", as according to the Śaivites, or "prakṛti", as according to Sāṃkhya), the physical evolution of this world appears to end in the ego-based creation of individually created and individually experienced worlds. In short, an opponent may conclude that the ego-based origin of the elements leads to a solipsistic conception of the world, i.e., in order to account for an independent world, the tattvic doctrine would have to avoid limiting the creation and genesis of the elements to the locus of the ego-principle.

## Chapter II

### NOTES

<sup>1</sup>The larger function of the elements concerns the role the elements play in bringing about bhoga; it concerns the "instrumentality" (sādhana) of the elements. In these terms the elements are not considered in a specifically cause-effect relation with bhoga; "sādhana" is not specifically causal in a purely instrumental manner as "karaṇa". Rather, "sādhana" refers to the instrumental role of the elements as "contributory factors" (aṅga)-- in the activity of bhoga.

<sup>2</sup>Although ordinary mortals who lack lordly powers cannot perceive the elemental tattvas directly, yogins can, since their powers of cognition are not limited to the buddhi. (BK, v. 8Ab-8B) Nor can ordinary mortals perceive the Pisācas, the deities who have yogic powers (aiśvarya) and who rule over the tattvas from the buddhi to earth: cf, SPB, p. 239.

<sup>3</sup>More mythic and life-world associations that the material elements possess are described in other works. For the deities, geometric forms, colours, Tamil letters and symbols (sword of diamond for ākāśa, lotus for air, etc.), cf. Śivajñāna Siddhiyār (3. 67-68), p. 182.

<sup>4</sup>This more biological terminology is employed as well in describing māyā, the ultimate material cause of the world, as the "seed" out of which all created things arise. Such an organic model of the world is in accordance with the conception of this manifestation as a single source of both the matter and the form of things, of both the cause and the effect -- in short, as a whole in spite of its formalization in a numerical and tattvic manner. The only "external factor" of the "jagadbīja" is the Īśvareccā which activates the activity of the seed; cf. BK, v.4.

<sup>5</sup>According to Śivāgrayogin, a change of something into something else can only occur in five ways, according to the ontological status of the effect: pariṇāma, transformation; ārambha, a totally new creation; samūha, a aggregation of something totally new and something contributory; vivarta, an illusory manifestation and vṛtti, a modification. In describing Śiva's agency (pravartakatva) in creation (srsti), the jagat qua karya is said to be a "vṛtti":

Therefore, just as in the original state of the cloth (as folded) and of the snake as coiled there is even without detriment to the original nature (of the thing) the attainment of another state, constituting vṛtti, similarly, the world, too, is but a vṛtti of the suddhā- and asuddhamāyās controlled by Śiva."

ŚPB, pp. 92-93.

<sup>6</sup>The common criticism of the satkaryavāda points to the apparent contradiction in identifying the "cause" with the "effect" as Kamalaśīla, for example, points out:

This cannot be right: as a matter of fact, it is not the same thing that becomes changed (anyathātvam); because "change" consists in the production of another nature or character (svabhāvāntarotpattib); now this "change" that you speak of -- is it something different from the Thing itself? Or is it the Thing itself? It cannot be the Thing itself; as that has already been produced by its own Cause [and hence could not be produced again by the cause of the change]. If it is something different from the Thing, then the Thing itself remains as before, retaining its permanence; so that it has not changed."

Cf. The Tattvasamgraha of Śāntarakṣita with the Commentary of Kamalaśīla, trans. by Ganganatha Jha. Gaekhwad's Oriental Series, No. LXXXIII, 2 Vol. (Baroda: Oriental Institute, 1937), 243 and Tattvasamgraha of Śāntarakṣita with the Commentary of Kamalaśīla, ed. Embar Krishnamacharya. Gaekhwad's Oriental Series, No. XXX, 2 Vol. (Baroda: Oriental Institute, 1926, p. 141.

<sup>7</sup>Also quoted by Aghora Śiva in the TSV, p. 5.

<sup>8</sup>The subtle body (sukṣmadeha) is also called "the eightfold one" (puraṣṭaka) in that it is constituted by the three inner organs (buddhi, manas and ahamkāra) and the five subtle elements; the "organs" (indriyani) can only be said to have their locus in the subtle body insofar as they fall under a species of the ahamkāra. Śivāgrayogin provides the inference establishing the existence of the subtle body (ŚPB, pp.285-286):

"The soul's going to another world, etc., is to be accomplished by some instrument, since it is an act, like a member of the gross body. Nor is this possible directly for the self which is pervasive; hence it should be said to have an adjunct; hence, that (subtle body) is established as an adjunct.

<sup>9</sup>Since the gross elements are effects of the subtle elements, the condition of bearing the sense organs belongs to both kinds of elements and is referred to as a joint state of "sthūlasukṣmatva". Together, the two kinds of elements form a receptacle. As a receptacle, the subtle elements are like the pot itself and the gross elements its [enamel] covering (tanmātrāṇiḥa ghaṭavadviśeṣaśca pralepavat); this analogy is provided by Hulin; cf. Mrgendragama: Sections de la Doctrine et du Yoga, trans. by M. Hulin. Publications de L'Institut Français D'Indologie, No. 63 (Pondicherry: Institut Français D'Indologie, 1980), pp. 266-267.

<sup>10</sup>Nārāyaṇa Kanṭha presents a long argument defending the bhoga-directed teleology of the gross elements through a consideration of the



use (or purpose, upayoga) of the gross elements themselves. He presents only four possibilities of this purpose.

Although God is the "creator" (kartṛ) of the gross elements, they are of no use to God (qua upayogin), as God's comportment is not self-directed ("svātmani") but is rather directed towards eternal plenitude (nityaparipūrṇasvarūpam); they cannot be of use to themselves (svopayogin) because they are of an unconscious nature; they cannot be "useless" (anupayogin) on account of the greatness of their creator, God; consequently, they must serve the purpose of another (anyopayogin), which upon further investigation turns out to be individually bound souls. Cf. MĀV, pp. 177-179.

<sup>11</sup>MĀ (12.32A), p. 341. The introduction of the subtle body and karma (qua "adrsta") at this point of the discussion, especially the claim in 8Ab-8b that the subtle body is only perceptible by those who have lordly powers, may be an argument against the Cārvākas who argue that the "cestā" of the organs is solely and self-evidently a product of the physical body.

<sup>12</sup>In the MĀV, p. 332, Aghora Śiva holds that the five gross elements can be inferred on account of their functions; he refers to the five specific functions (samyaviśeṣanam) of the five gross elements, which are inferred by their "effects" (karyāni), the functions (vr̥ttayah).

<sup>13</sup>"The compounding takes place thus: each of the five elements, viz. ether etc., is divided into two equal parts; of the ten parts thus produced five -- being the first half of each element -- are each subdivided into four equal parts. Then leaving one half of each element to the other half is added one of these quarters from each of the other four elements." Cf. Vedānta Sāra of Sadānanda, trans. Swami Nikhilananda (Calcutta: Advaita Ashrama, 1949), p. 58. A similar description is found in the Pañcadaśī (1.27) and in the Brahma Sūtra-Bhāṣya (on 2.4.22).

<sup>14</sup>An exact enumeration is not given in the BK; the commonly accepted enumeration views rasa as sixfold, gandha as ninefold, rūpa as sixfold, vāyu as fivefold and śabda as fourfold.

<sup>15</sup>The Naiyāyika conception of rūpa does not include the "form" or "shape" of a thing (ākāraṅviśeṣah) as, for example, roundness or squareness. The Naiyāyikas particularize this characteristic as a "particular arrangement of parts (avayavasamsthānaviśeṣah)."<sup>15</sup> For a discussion of this view, cf. Tarka-Samgraha of Annambhāṭṭa, ed. and notes by Y. V. Athalye and trans. by M. R. Bodas. Bombay Sanskrit Series, No. LV (Poona: R. N. Dandekar, 1963), p. 155; Dharmendra Nath Sastri, The Philosophy of Nyāya Vaiśeṣika and its Conflict with The Buddhist Dignāga School (Delhi: Bharatiya Vidya Prakashan, 1964), pp. 251-261; Bimal Krishna Matilal, Perception (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1986), pp. 250-254.

<sup>16</sup>The Naiyāyikas argument is unconvincing since the crystal qua guṇin is cognized with the "changed colour" and not without colour, i.e., with a guṇa; cf. MĀV, p. 187.

<sup>17</sup>Aghora Śiva explains this conception in greater detail in  
 "Possessing the same properties as these gross elements, the subtle elements are the material causes and sustaining agents of the gross elements; although the gross elements possess distinct properties, the subtle elements lack such properties."  
 (tadbhūtasamanaguṇam kāraṇam apurakam ca tasyaiva tanmatram bhūtasya hyayam viśeṣo viśeṣarahitam tat)."

<sup>18</sup>MĀ, 12.5, gives the etymology of the term "tanmātra" as "just those things [their measures are such...tad-mātram]" -- i.e., they are solely what they are without the manifested distinctions or qualities (anabhivyaktaviśeṣatvam), as the gross elements; Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha describes them as being of the nature of fundamental elements (bhūtaprakṛtirūpam). With the receptacle analogy already mentioned, the subtle elements are themselves without manifested qualities, as a pot. Only the covering is perceptible.

In his gloss on SK, v. 38 Vacaspati Miśra glosses "aviśeṣa" with respect to the subtle elements as "sukṣma", which is in opposition to the "sthūla", the gross element i.e., "viśeṣa". Śrikumāra holds a similar conception in his commentary on ĪP, v.61 (p. 124).

<sup>19</sup>Besides vv. 5-20 of the BK, the elements are also treated in verses 30A-31 wherein a contra-prāṇāntaṅkaraṇavāda (which links the gross element vāyu with caitanya) is refuted. In verses 37-42 the bautikendriyavādins are also refuted. In verse 45 there is a description of the subtle elements as they arise from the ego and in verses 68B-72A there is a refutation of the view that the bhoktr is simply a modification of the gross elements.

<sup>20</sup>This is clearly brought out in the MĀ and MĀV; in MĀ, 6.1 wherein the ātman is described as the cause or means (nimitta) of the universe, the locus is not considered to be the ego but the ātman itself. In MA, 5. 10 the mala-tainted souls are said to create the bhūvaṇas. In his commentary Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha explains that the ātman is the nimitta qua pravartika, the instigating cause, on account of the arising [as effects] of the "worlds, organs and bodies" -- all of which takes place for the bhogasādhana.

<sup>21</sup>The specific manner of viewing the condition of "embodiment" occurs on account of the "bhogasādhana" (BK, v. 4) and is threefold, consisting of the subtle body which is specific to individual souls, the objective and intersubjective world which is common to all bound souls, and the "bodies born of their world" (bhuvanajadeha) which represents both a common and restricted condition. A similar conception of embodiment is found in the MAD. On the one hand, the physical body is said to be a "product" of the material world (bhautiko deha iti bhuvanajasarīrasyalakṣanam, p. 343) while on the other hand, material creation when discussed is

done only with respect to the elements constituting the body -- for example, when the author of the MA comes to enumerate the qualities of the gross elements in some detail, the discussion is restricted to the qualities constituting the physical body (cf. pg. 339-340). In the final analysis, the soul comes to share a common world and have its own subjective world through a "specific" subtle body; however, the acceptance of the "common, shared world" (sādhāranabhuvana) is not ontologically explained given the ego-locus of the production of the elements, which only accounts for the "bhuvanajadeha" creation of the body itself. Vaiśeṣika, it may be noted, avoids this problem with its doctrine of "atoms" (paramāṇuvāda); the material atoms in their state as "effects" (of the eternal atoms) are threefold: in the form of the body, the sense organs and the objects of mundane consciousness (eg., Vaiśeṣika Sūtras 4.2.1: "tatpunah prthivyādi karyam dravyam trividham śarīrendriya-visayasamjñakam" [only ākaśa does not fall under this threefold distinction]). Umesha Sastri still construes the ultimate creation of the atoms and all they entail, i.e., the entire sphere of the jāda, in very subjective terms: "The relation between 'Matter' and the 'Atman' is vyangya-vyañjakabhāva; so that, the harmony of the samsārayatra under the influence of adr̥ṣṭa becomes possible." Cf. Umesha Sastri, Conception of Matter (Allahabad: Umesha Mishra, 1936), p.55.

<sup>22</sup> The "bhautikasarga" mentioned in SK, 52 and 53 does not elaborate on the evolution of the various "worlds" in connection with the elements. For a discussion of this problem in classical Sāṃkhya, cf. Gerald James Larson, Classical Sāṃkhya (Santa Barbara: Ross Erikson, 1979), pp. 193-197.

Chapter III  
THE SPHERE OF THE ORGANS

1. The Sense and Motor Organs: The "Organ" (indriya) Considered as a "Capacity" (śakti) Distinct From its Corporeal-locus (sthāna)

Both the sense and motor organs are dealt with by Sadyojyoti independently of their originating-locus, the ego; a similar method is adopted in the treatment of the elements. In the examination of the organs, the argument is put forth that what is called an "organ" is something quite distinct from the body part identified with the specific functioning of the organ,<sup>1</sup> a position dramatically opposed to the materialist, who holds that the organ is in fact just the corporeal functioning of certain body parts. According to the materialist, in the case of both the sense and motor organs, whenever there is a "defect" in the body part, the "organ" is not seen to function; for example, in the case of the motor organs, one may have legs and feet, which constitute the motor organ of "locomotion", and yet one may be unable to walk. The person may be crippled by a debilitating disease which prevents the body parts from functioning, thus proving that the body part and the organ are one and the same thing. In the case of the sense organs a similar argument applies: when one is blind, i.e. when there is a defect with one's eyes, one does not see, "the sense of sight" is absent.<sup>2</sup> This absence of the "sense" due to a "defect" in the body part, the materialist argues, establishes that the sense organ is in fact identical with the body part.

The Śaivite uses the same examples offered by the materialist to prove the opposite conclusion, i.e., that the sense organs cannot be identified with the body part. In the case of the motor organs and the example of a "defect" in those body parts contributory to the locomotive organ, i.e., the legs and feet, the fact that the body parts exist and the motor ability is absent is proof that the two cannot be identified. If the body part is to be identified with the motor organ, then the existence of the former necessitates the existence of the latter. The same argument applies to the sense organs and the example of blindness: one may have eyes yet one may not see. According to Sadyojyoti the cause of the absence of the functioning of the organ even when the body part is present is not due to a defect in the body part itself but rather in a defect of the sense organ whose capacity to function (śakti) is separate from the body part. Sadyojyoti appeals to a cause of this "organ defect" which the materialists would be unable to accept: karmic influences. Due to the "imperceptible" (adrsta) karmic influences one may be given eyes but not the ability to "see", legs but not the ability to "walk", etc.

In the case of the absence of the body part, the organ does not function due to the fact that the organ depends on the physical body part to provide it with a locus whereby it can be active. More specific terminology is employed by Aghora Śiva to describe the exact relationship between the organs and their corporeal loci. The general purpose of both the sense and motor organs is "vitality" or "activity" (ceṣṭā or kriyā). The organ (indriya) he describes as an instrument (karana) which is essentially a faculty or capacity (śakti) to function in a specific manner; however, it can only function when dependent on the

corporeal-locus (sthāna) which acts as a supporting-medium for the active functioning of the organ.<sup>3</sup> Although the organ is distinct from the corporeal-locus, it is dependent on this locus for its functioning. The metaphysical underpinning of this view is clear: the corporeal-locus (sthāna) is abstractly a representation of the sphere of material creation, the sphere of the manifested "qualities" of the gross elements; it is only at the level of material creation that any real "activity" of the sense and motor organs can occur since they both are only instruments engaged in material activity.

## 2. The Tenfold Enumeration of the Organs

Sadyojyoti provides the following enumeration of the organs along with their specific functions as:

<u>MOTOR ORGAN (KARMENDRIYA):</u>	<u>ACTIVITY (KRIYĀ) QUA ACTION (KARMAN)</u>
Genitals ( <u>upastha</u> ) .....	Joy ( <u>ānanda</u> )
Foot ( <u>pāda</u> ).....	Locomotion ( <u>gamana</u> )
Anus ( <u>pāyu</u> ).....	Evacuation ( <u>utsarga</u> )
Hand ( <u>pāni</u> ).....	Seizing ( <u>ādāna</u> )
Mouth ( <u>mukha</u> ).....	Speaking ( <u>vacana</u> )
<u>SENSE ORGAN (JĀNĀNENDRIYA):</u>	<u>ACTIVITY (KRIYĀ) QUA SENSATION (ALOCANA)</u>
Ear ( <u>śruti</u> ).....	Hearing ( <u>śabdagrāhakatva</u> )
Skin ( <u>tvak</u> ).....	Touching ( <u>sparsagrāhakatva</u> )
Eye ( <u>cakṣus</u> ).....	Seeing ( <u>rūpagrāhakatva</u> )
Tongue ( <u>jihvā</u> ).....	Tasting ( <u>rasagrāhakatva</u> )
Nose ( <u>nāsikā</u> ).....	Smelling ( <u>gandhagrāhakatva</u> )

The "activities" or "functions" serve as the inferential marks

whereby the organs come to be inferred. The specific and observable number of activities establishes the enumeration of the imperceptible organs. The Naiyāyika immediately raises the objection that, with respect to the motor organs, the reason (hetu) for inferring five organs from five activities is not justified; rather, the number of "activities" is limitless and therefore the so-called "organs" should also be limitless. According to the Naiyāyikas all five activities fall under the category of "activity" (karman) and are a result of the soul's intentionality affecting a certain circumscribed part of the body (śāñīraikadeśavṛtti). Raising the eyebrows, claims the Naiyāyika, is simply one of these activities; if we accept the principle that the "activities" are the hetu for the inferential establishment of the organs, then there should be an organ for every activity and in this case, for example, a specific organ for raising the eyebrows.

By responding to the argument Sadyojyoti spells out his position more clearly: the "activities" are said to be only five on account of their own inherent characteristics (antarbhāva). These five are the "basic factors" (pradhānabhūta) in the whole variety of activities. "Raising the eyebrows", for instance, is classified as a species of "grasping" (ādāna) and is mediated by the organ designated as the hand; in like manner, all forms of bodily evacuation, for example, are representatively attributed to the organ designated as the anus. Such reasoning also applies to the sense organ and is most evident in the case of the sense organ "skin" whose activity is "touching": this organ clearly pervades the whole body, including a variety of specific body parts, which all fall under the category of this organ.

With the argument defending the limitlessness of the motor organs having been rejected, Aghora Śiva turns his attention to a criticism of the view that posits the singleness of the sense organs. The Naiyāyika queries: why not have just one "organ" which senses everything, and the separate "senses" acting as "aspects" of this one sense?<sup>4</sup> The grasping of different kinds of objects (bhinnaviṣayagrahaka) can simply be explained as taking place through the different loci of one sense organ (ekamevāindriyamadhīsthānabhedena).<sup>5</sup> In his rebuttal Aghora Śiva first accepts the need to postulate the general category of "sense organ" according to the principle that all activity is dependent on an agent; all activity consists of an "agent", "instrument" and activity"-- in this case, the soul, the sense organ and the sensing. Although this provides the need for a general category of "organ" in the case of "sensing", more than one sense organ must be postulated to account for the various kinds of sensing. If one were to accept the opponent's view then there would always be the necessity of appealing to another type of organ to describe the separate acts of sensing: as it is already established that there are only five kinds of "activities" and therefore five kinds of organs, one would have to choose one of these five organs to represent the various activities. However, if one were to choose the "ear", for example, another organ would have to be postulated in order to account for the sensation of smell etc. Although this argument put forth by Aghora Śiva is based on the prior principle that there are in fact only five types of sense activities and consequently five types of organs, we find a more general criticism of the opponent's view, for example, in the Ślokaṽrtika:<sup>6</sup>



If the sense organ were one only, in all cases, then either everything or nothing would be perceived. If it be urged that we postulate different capacities (or functions) of the same sense organ -- then, these capacities themselves could be said to be so many distinct organs of sense.

The five sense organs, maintains Aghora Śiva, are limited to the sphere of those five phenomena which are "grasped", the specific function of the act of sensing. This "grasping" is described as an act of sensing (ālocanā)<sup>7</sup> which takes place when the organ is in the proximity (saṃnidhi) of its object. It can also be described in more general terms as an act of "resembling" or "mirroring" (saṃnibhatva)<sup>8</sup> in terms of which the sense organs, through the medium of the "internal organs" buddhi and manas, provide the "vidyā tattva" (the final "instrument" facilitating empirical consciousness for the soul) with an internal "copy" (antarākāra) of the external counterpart (bahyākārasadṛṣatva).

### 3. The Necessity of the Postulation of a Separate and Tripartite "Internal Organ" (antahkarana) Distinct from the Sense with Motor Organs

The three internal organs -- buddhi, ahaṃkāra and manas -- are inferred on account of their activities: cognition (bodha), effort (saṃrambha) and will (icchā). Sadyojyoti maintains that these activities cannot be explained by the various elements or organs so far discussed; the internal organs, for example, are not "products" of the material elements. Aghora Śiva provides three reasons for holding that the internal organs must be inferred from the three stated activities. The first reason lays down the general principle already enunciated that all the tattvas from kalā to the Earth are "established" inferentially by means of their "effects", in this case, cognition etc. Secondly, there is no other means of "proof"

or "correct cognition" (pramāṇa) except inference to establish a correct understanding of the observable "activities" or "effects". Thirdly, and lastly, it is inappropriate to bring into the discussion more than three tattvas to explain the three basic activities of cognition etc; thus, buddhi, aḥṁkāra and manas each are said to have several functions, each of which is a specific transformation (vr̥tti) of its respective organ. However, each of the organs is considered to have a single function (ekārthatva) encompassing all the various instances of its respective activity. In passing, it should be noted that the establishment of the nature of the antahkaraṇa rules out the possibility of attributing this organ to just one tattva as, for example, buddhi itself.

Sadyojyoti employs an analogy to explain the relation between the internal organ and the sense organs in the act of cognizing (BK, v.28-29). He says that the three internal organs and the five sense organs combine together to carry out the activities which are specific to the internal organs; the whole process is carried out for the soul in the accomplishment of bhoga. The analogy given to explain the relation between the internal and sense organs is that of the palanquin and the palanquin-bearers: if either the palanquin or the palanquin-bearers is absent, no activity takes place.<sup>10</sup> The internal organs cannot carry out their functions without the sense organs nor can the sense organs carry out their functions without the internal organs.

The internal organs are said to be dependent on the sense organs because there can be no cognition of things (adhyavasāya) etc. without a prior apprehension of some external object perceived through the senses;

even in the case of dreaming the images which constitute the dream are ultimately derived from the senses even though during the activity of the dream the internal organ is not immediately dependent on the senses; i.e., on a perception of an external object (bahyārthālocanā).<sup>11</sup> The senses, on the other hand, are dependent on the internal organs since "attentiveness," (avadhana) and so forth are required in order to sense things; the sense organs must be "directed" and "controlled" by an instrumental and onto-epistemological faculty higher than themselves.<sup>12</sup>

#### 4. The Refutation of the View that the Internal Organ is a Modification of The Vital Air (prāṇa)

According to Aghora Śiva one school of the Cārvākas maintains that the internal organ is simply the life-force energy of "prāṇa" (prāṇāntahkaraṇa-vāda). Although this doctrine came to be developed by Cārvāka it is in fact a doctrine which runs throughout the Upaniṣads, wherein prāṇa is regarded as the first principle of life in the body, and came to be used as a synonym for "life" in general and "consciousness" in particular.<sup>13</sup> According to the Cārvākas prāṇa is the cause of consciousness and is something living organisms are endowed with. Prāṇa itself, however, is simply a transformation of one of the four basic material elements constituting the world.

Aghora Śiva brings forth three reasons to refute the identification of prāṇa with the internal organ. Firstly, since prāṇa, according to the Śaivites, is ontologically dependent on "volitional activity" (prayatna) which is one of the functions of the ego-principle qua internal organ; prāṇa obviously presupposes the existence of an internal organ other than itself. Secondly, if the function of prāṇa is said to emit

consciousness, as the Cārvāka maintains, then some "instrument," must be postulated in order to account for the genesis of consciousness, i.e. if prāṇa is said to be the "origin" (utpatti) out of which consciousness arises, then an instrument must be postulated through which this activity can evolve. In this case, however, "air" (vāyu) is considered the cause and consciousness the effect; between the cause and the effect there must be the medium of an instrument. Since prāṇa qua "air" is considered to be the cause it cannot also be the instrument. Thirdly, and finally, as the internal organ, prāṇa cannot be said to emit consciousness, as prāṇa is simply a modification of the material element "air": something purely "material" cannot create something "conscious."

With regard to the first two criticisms of the Cārvāka view, the first claims that prāṇa itself will require an instrument and the second that the production of consciousness will require one; in neither case can prāṇa be considered the instrument. Although it begs the question, the first criticism is based on the argument that consciousness in fact precedes the biological functions entailed by prāṇa and is not, as the Cārvāka holds, a result of these functions. For example, in sleep we do not engage in physical activities considered to be biological functions of prāṇa; such activities are only engaged in once there has been some volitional motivation, which indicates that volitional activities precede activity based on prāṇa. By implication, if volition precedes prāṇa, consciousness precedes prāṇa. Concerning the second criticism, i.e., that one and the same thing cannot be considered to be both a cause and an instrument, the Cārvākas might reproach the Śaivite with the same

charge, as many of the tattvas are often thought of in different casual terms. The subtle elements, for example, are both "causes" and effects" at one and the same time: "causes" of the material elements and "effects" of māyā. Buddhi, for example, is both the cause and the instrument of "cognition" (bodha). The examples could easily be multiplied. The Cārvākas might also point out that, with respect to the third criticism, their own view is in fact not much different from the satkāryavāda view that the "gross" (sthūlatva) emerges as a modification of "the subtle" (suksmatva), except that in this case the subtle emerges as a modification of the gross.

5. The Refutation of the View that the Internal Organ is a Quality of the Soul (Ātmaguṇatā)

Sadyojyoti proceeds to criticize the Nyāya conception of the internal organ as represented by "buddhi", i.e. jñāna, as a quality of the soul considered as its substratum (dravya). The debate takes place over the argument concerning the ontological status of buddhi as the representative organ of the triadic internal organ. Both the Naiyāyika and the Śaivite agree that the soul is eternal; however, they disagree over the explanation of the soul's connection to finite, limited consciousness. According to Aghora Śiva, the soul is intrinsically endowed with consciousness -- without any limitations. However, when its powers are limited by empirical consciousness, i.e., bhoga, the buddhi functions as the means whereby the soul experiences. The soul "grasps" the objective content of the buddhi. The Naiyāyikas, argues Aghora Śiva, establish too close a relationship between empirical consciousness and the

consciousness of the soul when they describe empirical consciousness as a quality of the soul; in doing so, they open their view to a host of contradictions.

According to Aghora Śiva the Naiyāyikas adopt a twofold conception of the means of experience (bhogasādhanatā) that involves the sense organs and material elements. Accordingly, the range of experience (bhogyatva) is limited to the sphere (viśayatva) of the material elements and the sense organs which grasp those material elements. As the instruments whereby experience or bhoga occurs, the sense organs are the only factors which could correspond to the role of an internal organ -- collectively taking on the role of buddhi. However, for the Naiyāyikas buddhi is not considered a means of experience; it is simply the experience itself (samvedana) which arises in the soul when there is the triadic contact of the soul with the senses with their objects.<sup>14</sup> The soul exists as the substratum wherein this experience arises as its "quality". According to Sadyojyoti (BK, 48A) this establishment of the relationship between the soul and buddhi as substratum and quality creates the contradiction that "the known object" can in fact not be cognized, as the soul, according to the Naiyāyikas, can have no objective relation to the "objects of experience". As well, attributing the transitory condition of cognitive experience to the soul as its intrinsic property cannot make sense since the soul is supposed to be "eternal."<sup>15</sup>

In light of the fault with the Nyāya view Aghora Śiva elucidates the Āgamic teaching concerning the relationship between the eternal soul and the transitory empirical experience. Empirical cognition or experience [specifically designated as the buddhi-originated "bodha"]

is twofold: of the nature of "ascertainment" (adhyavasāya) and of the nature of "grasping" (grāhakatva). Ascertainment is described as the particular activity of the buddhi wherein there is the changing cognitions "of this or that" and involves the representational activity of buddhi as it carries on its role as the instrument of empirical consciousness. The "grasping" aspect of empirical cognition does not belong to the buddhi but rather to the soul, as an intrinsic condition of the soul. The soul grasps the ascertained object. The grasping aspect remains an eternal character of the soul and the ascertaining aspect remains a transitory character of the buddhi. Such a position is meant to avoid attributing impermanent cognition to the soul.

According to Aghora Śiva the buddhi -- qua representative organ of the triadic antaḥkaraṇa -- is indeed an "object" of experience; he quotes the Tattva Saṃgraha which describes the buddhi qua "object-of-the-soul's-consciousness" as appearing to the soul in terms of an internal experience of "the nature (rūpa) of joy etc." and of "the appearing in the form of the external object" (i.e., the ākāra of the viśaya). In this case, there is no triadic "saṃnikarṣa" between the soul, senses and the objects. The relation the soul has to the discernment of the buddhi, i.e. the modifications of the buddhi (buddhivṛtti), does not alter the intrinsic and eternal conditions of the soul but merely covers them over (anurañjakatva). In place of construing the internal instrument as a "guṇa" dependent on the triadic saṃnikarṣa Sadyojyoti describes the internal organ (together with the senses) as "the immediate means whereby enjoyment is accomplished (sākṣāt bhogasya sādhanam). (BK, 49)

In this case there is a distinction between "karana" and "sādhana": the internal and external senses act as a "karana" that functions as the immediate or direct "sādhana" whereby the soul comes to grasp the objects presented by the senses. If the "instruments" were considered to be the direct "instruments" of the soul's cognition they would be extensions of the soul's consciousness -- this would attribute transitoriness to the soul. By describing them as the "means" whereby this consciousness occurs, Sadyojyoti avoids drawing a direct ontological relation between these instruments and the consciousness of the soul.

Sadyojyoti provides a number of analogies to explicate this notion of the "sākṣāt sādhanatva"<sup>16</sup> role of the internal and external "instruments". As Aghora Śiva points out, these analogies are meant to illustrate a basic teleological principle of the satkāryavāda:<sup>17</sup> the instruments, being by nature of an unconscious nature (acetanatva), cannot exist for their own sake (svārthatva) but must exist for the sake of a conscious soul (cetanapuruṣārtha). The discussion concerning the instruments is hereby elevated from a purely causal framework to one concerned with purpose (arthatva). Just as the king employs (prayukte) soldiers for the purpose of conquering, so the soul is said to employ the mental apparatus, i.e. the internal and external instruments. The second analogy indicates that not only are the mental apparatus in themselves purposeless, they are powerless: when soldiers are engaged in battle, the king is said to be the "agent", just as when the instruments are engaged in experiencing, the soul is said to be the agent. The final analogy points out that the instruments have no purpose of their own; they simply serve the purpose of the soul in the same way as the conquest is not for the sake of the soldiers but for those things the king desires from the



conquest.<sup>17</sup> In short, the employment, agency and purpose of the internal and external "instruments", i.e., the totality of mental faculties, are attributed to the soul.<sup>18</sup>

The mediating factor between the soul and the "instruments", the mediating factor engaged in the bringing about of the employment, agency and purpose of the instruments, is said to be bhoga. Bhoga is the middle term thought to bridge the distinction between, on the one hand, a complete separation of the soul from the instruments of empirical consciousness and on the other, a limited involvement of the soul in empirical consciousness. The main criticism of the Naiyāyika doctrine of the connection of the soul to empirical consciousness is based on the Naiyāyika's account of the soul's involvement in empirical consciousness: it rules out the possibility of an explanation of the "separation" of the soul from the condition of empirical consciousness. One may, however, query the Śaivite solution to this problem: does it overcome the same difficulty the Naiyāyika conception of the relation is claimed to be in?<sup>19</sup>

Bhoga, as it has been pointed out, is specifically defined as the "buddhivṛtti-anurañjana", i.e., the obscuration or empassionment by the various states of mind (i.e., the collection of internal and external instruments). The Naiyāyika may very well argue that this description, or perhaps more accurately "analogy", actually describes the soul along the lines of a substratum qualified by a certain property. The triadic formula of "bhoktr-bhoga-bhogyā:" attributes an inseparable (samāvāya) relation of the bhoktr and the bhoga; in this case "bhoga" takes on

the role that buddhi (qua jñāna) plays in the Naiyāyika system. For, although the soul is always considered to be a bhoktr, once the bhogya falls away in the released state, so also does the bhoga, even though structurally the soul is, by definition, still considered a bhoktr. Similarly, according to the Nyāya, the soul is still considered a substratum (dravya) even though the "quality" of empirical consciousness is no longer active; the structure of the "inherent relation" (samāvāya) still exists.<sup>20</sup>

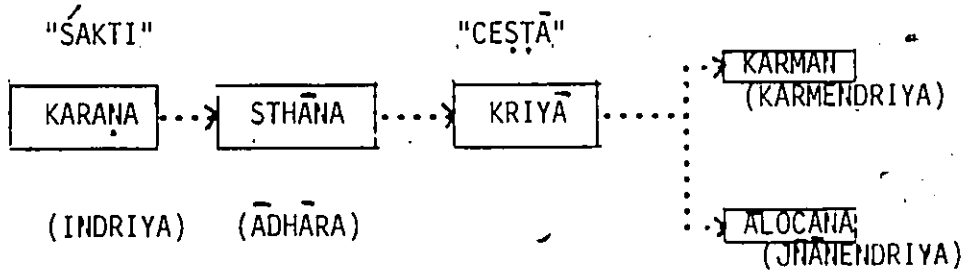
## Chapter III

### NOTES

<sup>1</sup>The sense and motor organs fall under the general category of "indriya" -- "instrument" or "organ". Although their specific functions are different, "sensing" (ālocanā) in the case of the sense organs and "activity" (karman) in the case of the motor organs, much of what applies to the one set of organs applies to the other.

<sup>2</sup>The argument not only defends the bhautika nature of the sense organs but also supports the view that the sense organ does not, as the Saivite holds, come into contact (sannidhi) with its object; the eye itself is said to be the sense organ on the grounds that we perceive objects either reflected or embedded in crystals -- proving that the eye "organ" does not come in contact with the object. For the Saivite response, cf. SPB, pp. 260-264.

<sup>3</sup>The schematic representation appears as follows:



<sup>4</sup>Taken up in Nyāya Sūtras, 3.1.52-61.

<sup>5</sup>According to the view which posits the singleness of the the sense organs, the grasping of different objects (bhinnaviṣayagrāhakatvam) takes place through the different loci of the sense organ (ekam evaindriyam adhisthānabhedena). The various deficient "conditions" (vyavasthā) such as blindness, deafness, etc. are said to occur through the various and respective capacities (śaktayah); cf. SPB. pp. 256-258.

<sup>6</sup>The Śloka Vārtika criticizes this view in a more logical fashion: If the sense organ were one only, in all cases, then either everything or nothing would be perceived. If it be urged that we postulate different capacities (or functions) of the same sense organ -- then these capacities themselves could be said to be so many distinct organs of sense. ekam yaḍi bhavedakṣam sarvairgrhyeta vā na vā kalpyate śaktibhedas̄cet śaktirevendriyaṁ bhavet.

Cf. Śloka-vārtika, trans. by Gaṅgānātha Jhā, Bibliotheca Indica, No. 1183 (Calcutta: Asiatic Society 1908), p. 97; Śloka-vārtika of Śrī Kumāriḥa Bhaṭṭa, ed. Swāmī Dvārikādāsa Śāstrī, Pracyabharati Series, 10 (Varanasi: Tara Publications, 1978), p. 133.

<sup>7</sup>BK, v. 25B: "śabdādyālocanam teṣāṃ vṛttih śabdādisamnidhau." Sāṃkhya Kārikā, v. 28A, is very similar: "śabdādiṣu pañcanāmalocanamātram isyatevṛttih." Cf. Mainkar, Sāṃkhya Kārikā of Iśvarakṛṣṇa, p. 84.

<sup>8</sup>Aghora Śiva takes "samniḥatvam" ("mirroring" or "resembling") as a variant reading of "samnidhiḥ" ("proximity").

<sup>9</sup>The Tamil manual "Tattuva-Kattalei", which is also known as the Tattuva-Prakāsam, lists four internal organs, the fourth being "sittam (Sanskrit, "siddhah"). Both the buddhi and sittam are said to evolve directly from prakṛti; buddhi is the cause of the aḥamkāra which is itself the cause of manas while sittam creates no further tattvas and is described as "the will". Cf. Henry R. Hoisington, "Tattuva Kattalei," trans. and notes by Henry Hoisington, Journal of the American Oriental Society, IV (1854), pp 7, 15, 16.

<sup>10</sup>According to Aghora Śiva, although it is not actually stated the antaḥkāraṇa must be the śibhika and the jñānendriyāni the collective udvahin, together accomplishing the udvahana which is the various kriyā, icchā etc. But the soul, for whom this all takes place, is presumably the enjoyer of this udvahana. SK, v.35 presents the analogy of the function as the gatekeeper (dvārin) and the gate (dvār), the former the antaḥkāraṇa and the latter the jñānendriyāni, the instruments of external perception. This analogy plays more on the idea of the internal and the external. In the Kaṭha Upanisad 1.3.3-4, the analogy of the ātman riding in a chariot plays on the same idea of "bearing" and indeed on the interdependence of the various aspects which do the bearing. In Maitri Up. (2.4) the ātman is described as "carted" (rathita).

<sup>11</sup>It is a generally held position by the various philosophical schools that dreams are simply an activity of the internal organ; the mental creations (vasanā) being "modifications" (vṛttayah) of previous perceptions (purvānubhūtavastu) during waking activities. This epistemological approach to dreams to a certain extent de-emphasizes the portentous aspect of dreaming. For a discussion of the understanding of dreaming in Vedānta, cf. Andres O. Fort, "Dreaming in Advaita Vedānta," PEW 35, 4 (1985), pp. 377-386.

<sup>12</sup>The Yuktidīpikā discusses a similar debate among the Sāṃkhya teachers concerning the status of the sense organs in the activity of perceiving things. It is said that a certain "Pañcādhikarāṇa" holds that they are due to the antaḥkāraṇa; according to Pañcādhikarāṇa the organs are destitute of activity, like a dry river -- external factors are required. For discussion of this debate within Sāṃkhya, cf. Pulinbinhari Chakravarti, Origin and Development of the Sāṃkhya System of Thought (Delhi: Oriental Books Reprint, 1975), pp. 181-182.

<sup>13</sup>Cf. Jadunath Sinha, Indian Psychology of Perception (London: Trubner and Co., 1934), pp. 230-241 and Paul Deussen, The Philosophy of the Upanisads (New York: Dover Publications, 1966), pp. 274-280. Sinha sums up the psycho-biological conception of prāna that is shared by Cārvāka as well (p.241).

The organism, however, is a material aggregate endowed with life (prāna), which is not the activity of an organ in particular, but is recognized to be the total function of the body.

As Sinha points out, although both the motor and sensory organs are dependent on prāna, "in order to perform their respective functions, "prāna", in any case, differs from the sense organs (indriya) is not being an instrument, and consequently, is not in a position to interact with physical phenomena as its objects (viśaya)." (p. 241).

<sup>14</sup>The catustaya-factor (ātman-manas-indriyāni-arthāni) is not mentioned in Nyāya Sūtras 1.1.4 ("indriyarthasannikarṣoḥpannam... pratyakṣam"). According to Vātsyāyana this sūtra is not a complete description of perception but only mentions the most significant factors; cf. Nyāya-sūtra with Vātsyāyana's Bhāṣya, trans. Mrinalkanti Gaṅgopadhyaya with intr. by Debīnprasad Chattopadhyaya (Calcutta: Indian Studies, 1982), pp. 24-26. According to Randle, the sūtrakāra had obviously not systematized manas as one of the four factors; cf. H.N. Randle, Indian Logic in the Early Schools (Oxford: The Clarendon Press, 1930), p. 67.

<sup>15</sup>Moreover, the Naiyāyikas cannot attribute "dharma" etc. (i.e. the dispositional qualities) to the soul, as this would attribute insentience (jadatva) and mutability (avikāritva) to the soul. Dispositional qualities entail change through their refining activities and lasting impressions.

<sup>16</sup>Aghora Śiva glosses "sakṣāt sādhanam" with sakṣāt karanam"; buddhi is not an ātmagūṇa but a "sakṣāt sādhanam", i.e. "kāraṇa".

<sup>17</sup>For example, cf. Sāṃkhya Sūtras 3.58 and 6.40; prakṛti is "pumartham".

<sup>18</sup>A similar analogy concerning the king, soldiers and the victory is found in the Yogabhāṣya. "The victory or defeat carried out by the soldiers is attributed to the king in the same manner as bondage and release are attributed to the soul, although they are carried out in and by the buddhi." The Bhoktr (soul) experiences the fruit of the release or bondage: bondage is of the thinking substance (buddhi) only and is the failure to attain the purposes of the Self. Release is the termination of the purposes of the self." cf. The Yoga System of Patañjali trans. James Haughton Woods (Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1977), p. 145.

<sup>19</sup>One may question the Śaivite postulation of "bhoga" as the intermediary link between the soul and the activities of the mental faculties. It is clear in Vātsyāyana, for example, that the cognitive

and dispositional activities take place on the level of the "guṇa" and not in the soul itself.

<sup>20</sup>In this respect, Śaivism is in agreement with Saṅkhya Kārikā, v.37 wherein buddhi is described as the sādhana of all the "bhoga of the puruṣa (sarvam pratyupabhogaṃ yāsmat puruṣasya sādhatī buddhiḥ)". Vacaspati Misra, in his commentary on this verse, completely severs any ontological link between the bhoktr-bhoga-bhogyā triad. He states that since the "purusārtha" is the only motivating factor (prayojikatva) of the functioning of all the instruments, the most important (pradhāna) is the one which is "the direct means of accomplishment (sāksātsādhana)" -- i.e. the buddhi, just as the king's chief minister in the collection of taxes. Cf. Tattva-Kaumudī, trans. Gāṅgānātha Jhā (Bombay: Tookaram Tāya, 1896), p. 78.

## Chapter IV

### THE SPECIFIC INTERNAL ORGANS: MANAS, BUDDHI AND AHANKĀRA

#### 1. The Concept of Manās

The Sanskrit term "manas"<sup>1</sup> is etymologically cognate with the English term "mind". Generally speaking, in the oldest literature such as the Vedas, "manas" is held to be the principle of sentiency. Throughout the Upaniṣads manas stands for the "mind" in general; manas also takes on mythic proportions, as Deussen points out:<sup>2</sup>

Originally manas had a more general meaning, and in its indefinite character corresponded nearly to our "disposition", "feeling", "heart", "spirit". As such manas represents not infrequently the spiritual principle in general, and becomes sometimes a name for the first principle of things, Brahman or the Ātman.

With the rise of the philosophical schools manas generally comes to signify an inner faculty or "organ"; not all of the schools consider manas a "separate" organ.<sup>3</sup> Śaṅkara, for instance, recognizes that the "internal organ" (antahkarana) is called by different names in different places in the Upaniṣads, such as manas, buddhi, vijñāna and cit; in other places, he says, the internal organ is just subdivided into manas and buddhi, the former describing a doubting activity (samśaya) and the latter an ascertaining activity (niścaya).<sup>4</sup> Śaṅkara himself does not specifically establish the separate functions of a buddhi or manas but merely wishes to establish the existence of an internal organ responsible for the various mental activities, i.e., an internal organ that acts as the controlling factor over the "flow", so to speak, of perceptions, both

apperceptive and external.<sup>5</sup> Moreover, in the formal definition of the act of perception the author of the Nyāya Sūtras does not include "manas" as a factor in the perceptual act nor does it appear in the listing of the sense organs.<sup>6</sup> With those schools that accept manas as a separate factor responsible for empirical consciousness, manas is often assigned the role of regulating the flow of perceptual activity at the level of its genesis, as is the case in the Bhoga Kārikā.

Sadyojyoti only devotes one verse to manas (BK, v. 32), qualifying it by three characteristics: it urges the senses into action,<sup>7</sup> causes volitional activity and functions rapidly. Aghora Śiva explains these three functions in greater detail. The rapid activity of the manas describes its ontological role in the genesis of perceptual activity. Even though the soul is in itself omniscient, states Aghora Śiva, it cannot experience objects perceptually in a simultaneous manner; what appears as an experience in which we are aware of different perceptions-- i.e., seeing and smelling one thing at the same time is in fact an experience generated from two separate perceptions occurring in quick succession. A unified perceptual experience based on all five sense organs together with an apperception is in fact a collection of temporally discrete perceptual events. Aghora Śiva provides an analogy to explain this conception of the sequentiality of perceptual experience (kramikajñāna): a needle piercing a large quantity of compactly stacked lotus leaves appears as if it pierces each of the leaves simultaneously when in fact it pierces each leaf separately. Another common analogy, although from a Buddhist source, is based on the experience of a dance performance:<sup>8</sup>



Under such conditions as the witnessing of the dancing girl, we find that each single sensation, even though intervened by five other sensations, appears to be close to, and unseparated from, the other; for instance, at the same time that one sees the girl dancing, he also hears the song and its accompaniments, goes on tasting the camphor and other spices, smells the sweet fragrance of flowers placed before the nostrils, touches the air proceeding from the fans and thinks of making presents of clothes and ornaments.

Manas is also said to have the function of prompting (pravartaka) particular sense organs into activity; although Aghora Śiva is not specific concerning the relation between the "quick action" of the manas and its role as "the promptor" of the sense organs, one may assume that the former function actually qualifies the latter, i. e., manas prompts the particular sense organs into action in a rapidly sequential fashion. As well, when Sadyojyoti describes the third characteristic of manas as "the cause of volitional activity" (icchāhetutva), the fact of the rapid activity of the manas applies here as well. According to Aghora Śiva, manas has the twofold directedness of superintending over the activities of the external (i.e. sense) organs as well as superintending over the apperceptive activities. As the cause of volitional activity (icchā) manas is referred to as the cause of the "attention" (avadhāna) or "intention" (saṃkalpa) involved in apperceptive acts.

Although it is only reasonable to consider the "rapid activity" of manas as qualifying its involvement in both the external senses and apperceptive conditions, the exact nature of the manas is not exactly spelled out by either Sadyojyoti or Aghora Śiva. Aghora Śiva quotes the Mrgendra Āgama which describes the manas in very similar terms as does the Bhoga Kārikā, i.e., that manas is the instigator of the senses, acts

rapidly and is involved in intentional activity (devapravartakam śīghnacāri samkalpadharmi ca);<sup>9</sup> Aghora Śiva interprets this in the sense that the manas is the superintending or controlling factor involved in both external and internal perceptual acts. The Mataṅga Āgama, which Aghora Śiva also quotes, states that manas is twofold, as it both superintends over the sense organs as well as "interiorizes" the sense organs through intentional activity. The question concerning the basic function of the manas is important since "volition" (icchā) is considered to be the specific function of manas, as Sadyojyoti refers to volition, effort and cognition as the three specific functions of manas, ego and buddhi. If "volition" is the specific function of manas, then "rapid activity" and "instigator of the sense organs" qualify the volitional character of manas, which appears to be the most logical manner of interpreting the three functions. Ontologically, manas operates in a manner that establishes a sequential order (kramika) in cognitive acts; epistemologically, manas focuses through intentional activity (avadhana qua "icchā") on which sense or apperceptive event will be engaged. The Tattva Prakāśa appears to hold this view that the volitional activity is the central function of manas. The difficulty in viewing icchā as the specific function of manas appears to be the exact nature of this icchā, the wilful activity of choosing this or that perception or apperception.<sup>10</sup>

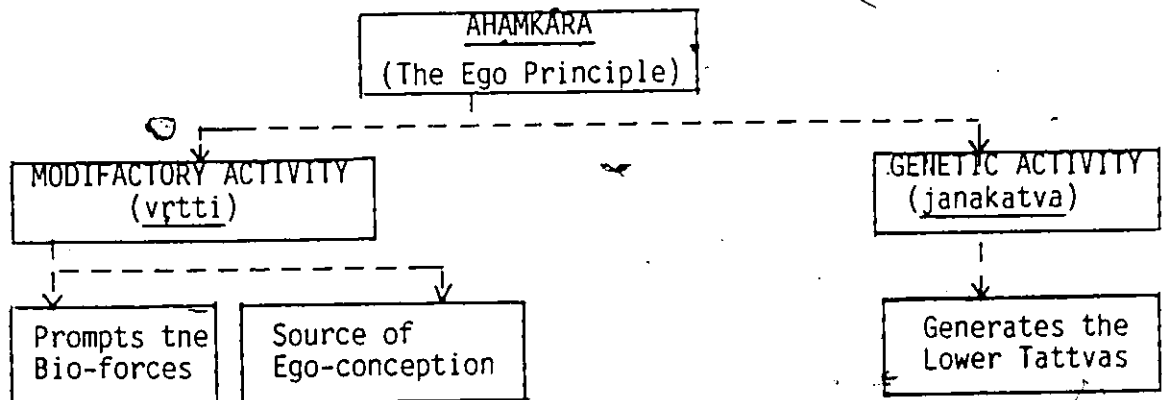
Another topic discussed by those doctrines that accept manas as a separate organ concerns the "size or "magnitude" of manas, although neither Sadyojyoti nor Aghora Śiva discusses this point. The Śaivite holds that manas has unlimited magnitude (vibhutva). To the objection

that if manas manifests things sequentially it must be of a limited magnitude (anūtvā), the Śaivite responds that all limitation with respect to manas is due to the obfuscation of external factors ultimately caused by karmic influences.<sup>11</sup>

## 2. The Three Functions of the Ego

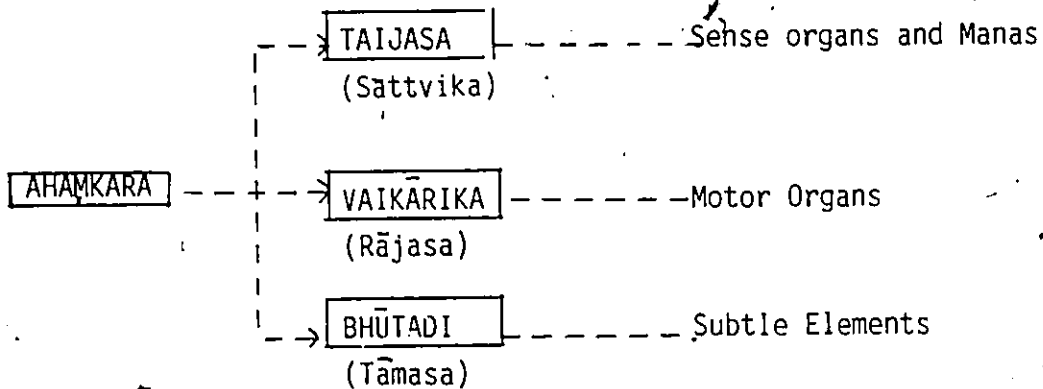
The ego (ahamkāra) is perhaps the most significant aspect of the process whereby bhoga is brought about; although the buddhi is the locus wherein all the activities of the cognitive faculties of the internal organ come to function synthetically, the ego as the principle of individuation is the point at which the false identification of the soul with the contents of the internal organ actually takes place. It is the ego that attaches a sense of legitimacy, authority and importance to the modifications of the buddhi. Buddhi is simply the ascertainment of external objects and internal cognitions; the ego "individualizes" this ascertainment and attaches a "personal" reality to it, thus creating the conception that the internal organ is itself the principle of consciousness. Soteriologically considered, the ego is indeed the most important factor of the triadically constituted internal organ.

Sadyojyoti subdivides the ego into three functions constituting two branches:<sup>12</sup>



These three functions correspond to the physiological, psychological and ontological dimensions of the ego. Physiologically the ego constitutes the vital functions of the body through the biological instigation of the five vital airs (prāna etc.); psychologically it is the source of the conception (pratyaya) of the notion of "I" affixed to cognitive acts; and ontologically it is the source or cause of all the lower tattvas inclusive of manas, the sense and motor organs, and the gross and subtle elements. Again, as in his treatment of manas, Sadyojyoti does not specifically describe the relation between these three subdivisions of the ego, although he does claim that the specific function of the ego is physiological, i.e. the prompting of the bio-forces, which may indicate that this aspect of the ego has a priority over the other two functions in a temporal and constitutive sense.

As the cause of the lower tattvas the ego is sub-divided into three branches according to the preponderance of one of the three gunas:



This classification of the ontological aspect of the ego is not identical with the more well known classification given in the Sāmkhya Kārikā, according to which the Sāttvika aspect is termed vaikārika and the rājasa aspect taijasa; as well, in the Sāmkhya Kārikā both the

sāttvika and tāmasa aspects are said to arise on account of the rājasa aspect (taijasa vibhaya), which itself has no specific creative function such as the creation of the "active" motor organs. The sāttvika aspect is said to be the source of the eleven organs, i.e., manas and the sense and motor organs.<sup>13</sup> The classification found in the Bhoga Kārikā is also not identical with classifications found in other Śaivite works dealing with the tattvas. The Tattva Prakāśa, for instance, states that the Taijasa aspect gives rise to manas, vaikārika gives rise to the senses (akṣa)<sup>14</sup> and the bhūtadi gives rise to the subtle elements. Aghora Śiva interprets this classification in a manner consistent with the Bhoga Kārikā;<sup>15</sup> Śrīkumāra, however, alters the guṇic constitution of the taijasa and vaikārika aspects and assigns a different function to them: vaikārika is said to be sāttvika and gives rise to the motor and sense organs; taijasa is said to be rājasa and is the cause of manas; and bhūtadi remains as tāmasa which is the cause of the subtle elements.

The argument employed to prove that the various "results" -- i.e., the lower tattvas -- are in fact ontologically generated from the ego is based on the principle that "an effect is seen to act in conformity with its cause." In the case of the ego the guṇic traits constituting it are considered to be the causative elements contributing to the ontological "status" of the "effects". Hence, since the sense organs and manas are of an illuminating nature they must be derived from that aspect of the ego which is of an illuminating nature, i.e. sattva. The motor organs are active and are therefore inferred to be derived from the "active", rājasic, aspect of the ego. The subtle elements are inferred to be

derived from the "dark" or "obscurational", i.e. tāmasic, aspect of the ego by process of elimination.<sup>16</sup>

Although this type of inference from the establishment of the ontological status of the effect to the establishment of the status of the cause is sufficient to establish that the sense organs, for example, are derived from an illuminating, i.e. sattvic cause, it is not sufficient to explain why these three different causes are necessarily co-existent as one cause, the ego. Although this problem is not directly taken up by either Sadyojyoti or Aghora Śiva, it is obliquely addressed when Sadyojyoti states in verse 41 that karma is responsible for delegating the restrictive scopes of the various sense organs, all of which are derived from the ego and are therefore considered to be of "one" nature. The principle appealed to in establishing the guṇic traits shared by the organs, manas and elements, on the one hand, and the ego on the other, cannot be used to explain why certain sense organs are restricted to certain spheres of sensation. There is nothing in the ego to provide a rationale for the restrictiveness of the senses; hence, Sadyojyoti appeals to the notion of karma, the ontological raison d'être of the way "things are". If Sadyojyoti were pushed to explain why the three gunically different "causes" of the lower tattvas are unified in the ego-tattva, the answer would no doubt point to karma, as there appears to be nothing in the nature of the ego itself that can explain its particular ontological constitution as having three separate "aspects" each of which contains a certain preponderance of one of the gunas.

A similar problem plagues the Sāṃkhya conception of the ego;

at the stage of creation beginning with the ego there is a change in the manner of evolution from what Van Buitenen has described as a change from a "vertical" pattern to a "horizontal" one.<sup>17</sup> The tattvas, prior to the ego, evolve in a vertical evolution, each tattva proceeding from the former; however, beginning with the ego "this pattern is abandoned: its evolution becomes a ramification."<sup>18</sup> Van Buitenen suggests that this emphasis on the ego as the focal point of a separate kind of creation has its source in the early creation myths as stated, for example, in the Brāhmanas and Upaniṣads, wherein the process of creation is set going when an original being cries out "I am"<sup>19</sup> and the original sense of the term "aham-kāra", i.e. "self-maker", is most evident;<sup>20</sup> the Bṛhadāra nyaka Upaniṣad describes this process:

The self was here alone in the beginning in the form of a man. He looked around and saw nothing but himself: and he cried out at the beginning: "Here I am." That is how the name "I" came to be.<sup>21</sup>

Madeleine Biardeau takes this cosmogonic function of the ego as found in the Upaniṣads in a sociological sense and argues that it reflects the general sense of conflict within "Brahmanical religion" between two different levels of religious thought and life; the more individualistic, renunciatory and "yogic" ideal as opposed to the group-based, sacrificial religion.<sup>22</sup> "Ahamkāra" figures in the Upaniṣads, she argues, whenever the yogic states of meditational discipline are described;<sup>23</sup> however, as one of the "levels" of the yogic states the ego is transferred from a psychological principle to a cosmogonic one, taking on mythic proportions in order to be a more "popular" medium for sectarian beliefs.

Although neither Van Buitenen's nor Biardeau's account of the ego in the tattvic doctrine actually answers the question concerning the reason the creation of all the tattvas below the ego have directly evolved from the ego, their speculations, in any case, point out the fact that the description of the ontological functions of the ego may be a result of an understanding of the ego which was first established outside of the framework of the tattvic doctrine.

The physiological aspect of the ego is described as "samrambha", a term which has the three basic senses of "seizing", "being impassioned" and "self-conceit."<sup>24</sup> Aghora Śiva describes it as that which "instigates" (pravartakatva) the five-fold activities of vāyu, i.e., the five vital functions of the physical body.<sup>25</sup> "Samrambha" is said to be the instigating principle of the five vital functions of the body "for the sake of keeping it alive (jīvana)". This physiological function of the ego is the source of "the will to live" as well as "the principle of life" within the soul's embodiment in a physical body; as it describes the self-assertion characteristic of the condition of physical embodiment governed by a conception of selfhood, it seems more appropriate to identify this function with the ego than with other cognitive faculties, as is done, for example, by Praśastapāda, who identifies it with the Manas, or Īśvara Kṛṣṇa, who identifies it with the common function (Sāmānyakarāṇa-vṛtti) of the internal organ.

As the principle of psychological individuation the ego is said to have two functions: one concerns the purely psychological attitude of "self-pride" or arrogance" (garva) which involves the "erroneous self-projection" whereby the empirical ego is itself taken for the soul,<sup>27</sup>



and the other concerns the more a priori aspect of cognizing the "I" as the inseparable component of every cognition. The cognition or ascertainment (adhyavasāya) of the "I" is considered to be a radically different kind of cognition than that assigned to the buddhi. The difference between the two kinds of cognition is based on the nature of the object; the "object" of the ego's ascertainment is an object that always remains the same (ekarūpa) while the object of the buddhi is always different (bhinnarūpa). As well, in the case of the ego the object of the cognition is the subject, the one who does the grasping (grāhaka), while in the case of the ascertainment carried out by the buddhi, the object is of the nature of that which is grasped (grahya). In short, although the buddhi, and the ego both carry on an activity of ascertainment, the "effect" (kārya) is different in both cases.<sup>28</sup>

### 3. The Conflict with the Naiyāyikas Over the Ontological Function of the Ego

The Naiyāyikas criticize the Śaivite view that the ego can have the specific ontological function of being the cause of the sense organs (ahamkārendriyavāda); the Naiyāyikas rather claim that the sense organs are products of the material elements (bhautikendriyavāda). Sadyojyoti first voices the Naiyāyikas' major criticism of construing the ego as the cause of the sense organs, coming from one single cause the five sense organs ought to be of the same nature: if they are of the same nature, it becomes impossible for the various sense organs to have different "scopes" or respective spheres of objects. As Aghora Śiva points out, the Naiyāyikas put forth this criticism since they hold the view that

each particular sense organ is related to one specific sphere of objects: the ear is limited to sound, the eye to colour etc. The sense organs, maintains the Naiyāyikas, have this restrictiveness because the gross objects, which are the cause of the sense organs, possess the respective qualities apprehendable by the respective sense organs. Sadyojyoti criticizes this view on two accounts. Sadyojyoti's first criticism is based on the fact that the sense organs respective restrictiveness (viṣayaniyama) cannot be reduced to a restrictiveness based on the material elements putatively thought to constitute the senses (prakṛtiniyama). The Naiyāyikas conception of a one-to-one correspondence between each sense organ and the quality of its respective material cause is false according to the Śaivite, as all the senses are not related to one sphere of material objects; the sense of touch, for example, grasps four spheres of material objects. The Nyāya response to this criticism concerning the one-to-one correspondence of the sense organ to its physical cause would be that the material substances themselves become mixed together and as a result the different sense organs perceive their respective objects in spheres of perception not materially connected to that sense organ. For example, whenever water smells, it means that the earth and water elements have become mixed up.<sup>29</sup> In fact, this same argument based on the idea of a one-to-one correspondence between the senses and their objects can be used to criticize the Śaiva view that all the sense organs stem from one cause, the ego, and hence should be of one nature with one respective scope of objects.<sup>30</sup>

Aghora Śiva's reply is based on an appeal to the basic principle of the satkāryavāda: the ego is "transformed" into the senses in such a

manner that the senses become separate products in the same manner as sugar is transformed into the various products, such as candy, sweet drinks, etc. As has already been pointed out, Sadyojyoti ultimately appeals to the notion of karma as the determining factor in the restriction of the senses to their objects; he further argues that the Naiyāyikas as well appeal to such a notion as is demonstrated by their explanation of the relation between the sense organ and the element ākāśa, ether. Ākāśa is considered to be "ubiquitous" and of one nature; it can not be the cause of the sense organ of hearing as this would contradict the ubiquity and eternality of ākāśa. According to the Naiyāyikas the organ of hearing is described as a certain part of the ākāśa circumscribed by the ear cavity.<sup>31</sup> But, as Aghora Śiva further elucidates, there is no reason that the circumscribed part of the body could not also be "the mouth", for example. Hence, in spite of maintaining that the sense organs are constituted by their respective substances which act as the niyamaka-factor, the Naiyāyikas ultimately appeal to karma to explain the rationale behind this restrictiveness, as is most evident with the sense of hearing.<sup>32</sup>

The second criticism against the bhautikendriyavāda brought forth by Sadyojyoti strikes more at the heart of the Naiyāyikas methodological first principles, the "categories" (padārtha).<sup>33</sup> The "categories" would become impossible to "sense" given the restrictiveness of the scope of the sense organs to the material elements.<sup>34</sup> In any way that the viśayanīyama of the sense organs is tied to a "prakṛti-niyama" one is faced with "an endless repetition of troubles."<sup>35</sup> Although Aghora Śiva does not deal with such "repetitious troubles", the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika authors

certainly have addressed this problem. The "categories" can be perceived as universals (jāti).<sup>36</sup> For example, the category "movement" (karma) is perceived insofar as it is perceived as a universal concomitant in the perception of moving-things; the technical term for such a perpetual contact (samnikarṣa) is samyukta-samaveta-samavāya.<sup>37</sup> Even the category of "inherence" (samavāya), which is claimed to be imperceptible and only open to inference, does not exist in the substances in the same way as universals, etc. and the other categories.<sup>38</sup> "Inherence" is inferred from the idea that "this is in that", i.e., this 'subsists' in that with respect to the relation between the five other categories. Śrīdhara explains the Naiyāyika position: "Thus then, inherence should be regarded as that whereby is brought about the coherence of distinct substances, and serves to set aside independence."<sup>39</sup> However, to overcome the problem enunciated by the Śaivites, for example, Śrīdhara adds that "inherence" nevertheless is still related to sensuous perception insofar as it is related to the other categories which are more directly open to sense perception.

In choosing the traditional Śaivite polemics against the Naiyāyikas to defend the ontological function of the ego in creating the lower tattvas, Sadyojyoti has chosen the most vocal critic of the tattvic understanding of the ego, especially where the generation of the sense organs is concerned. The Naiyāyikas do not attribute a separate ontological status to the ego; the ego is not listed among the aggregates of experience which constitute the twelve "knowables". Vātsyāyana, for instance, simply considers "self-identity", i.e. "aham" to be a "quality" of the self; in his commentary on the Nyāya Sūtra 3.1.1. Vātsyāyana

identifies the self (ātman) with the subject who uses "aham" in the various perceptions of things through a process of recognition (pratyabhijñā).<sup>40</sup> Egohood is simply the act of recognition which takes place in the soul; recognition, in turn, is simply a form of "smṛti," memory, which is itself one of the species of cognition, jñāna, a "quality" of the soul.

#### 4. Cognition (Bodha) Understood as the Essential Modification (Vṛtti) of the Buddhi

The buddhi is certainly the main organ of the "internal organ" (antahkarana).<sup>41</sup> When Sadyojyoti describes the essential characteristic of bhoga as the "buddhivṛtti - anurañjana" it is clear that buddhi is understood as the essential representative of empirical consciousness; the "internal organ" is only obliquely assigned this role. In one sense, one could say that manas and ahamkāra are subsidiary aspects of buddhi and that buddhi is itself the internal organ, as both manas and ahamkāra qualify the type of "cognition" the buddhi presents to the soul.

The buddhi is first and foremost of an unconscious nature (acit) and is only the locus in which the empirical consciousness of the soul comes to be manifested. The buddhi is inferred through "cognition" (bodha) as its modification (vṛtti). While the sense organs carry out a "manifesting activity" concerned with "external objects", which is specifically described as "sensation" (ālocana) (BK, v.25B), the buddhi carries out the type of "manifesting activity" described as "ascertainment" (adhyavasāya), such as is demonstrated in the cognition "this is a pot."<sup>43</sup> In fact, this "ascertainment" is the more specific definition of "cognition" (bodha). Cognition is in turn subdivided into three types:

understanding (jñāna), imagination (kl̥rpti) and memory (smṛti).<sup>44</sup>

This triadic cognition is further qualified by certain "dispositions" (bhāva) and "conceptions" (pratyaya), which are to be discussed in detail in the sequel.

As a modification of the "organ" buddhi, cognition is described as a distinct type of manifestation that is in principle different from the type of manifesting carried out by the sense organs, as it is considered to be the "ground" (bhūmitva) and "locus" (āśryatva) for the manifestation of the "cognition" -- i.e., empirical consciousness -- of the soul (pumbhodavyaktibhūmitva);<sup>45</sup> it is called "bodha" in opposition to "ālocanā" since it is directed internally (towards the soul) whereas ālocanā is directed externally (towards objects). The cognition of the buddhi serves a mediating role between the soul and the buddhi; on the one hand, cognition is ascribed to the buddhi (buddhibodha) while on the other hand it is ascribed to the soul (pumbodha).<sup>46</sup> At face value this appears contradictory: technically the buddhi and, by implication, the buddhi-bodha are both unconscious and "objects of enjoyment" (bhogya) for the soul; since the soul is neither unconscious nor an object of enjoyment, it cannot be qualified by something possessing these attributes. In order to avoid this contradiction Aghora Śiva more narrowly defines these two types of "cognition". The cognition which belongs to the buddhi is, as has been mentioned, of the nature of "ascertainment."<sup>47</sup> This cognition is transitory; it arises and perishes and is not considered an innate property of the soul. The cognition which belongs to the soul is indeed considered to be an innate property (svabhāva) of the soul; in this case, however,

it does not appear as "ascertainment" (adhyavasāya) but rather as the discerner (grāhaka), the one who grasps the ascertainment. Very similar terminology is employed to describe the twofold nature of cognition (bodha) in the Pauṣkara Āgama.<sup>48</sup> The Āgama begins by describing the basic role of the buddhi as "that which ascertains the object (viṣaya-adhyavasāyin). The cognition (bodha) which arises on account of this ascertainment is described as being twofold; one aspect is the ascertainment itself (viṣaya-adhyavasaka) and belongs to buddhi while the other aspect is the apprehension (vyavasāya-ātmaka) of this ascertainment and belongs to the soul.<sup>49</sup> As the form of consciousness which "grasps" and "discerns" the determination of the buddhi, the soul is simply caught in an empirical condition in which its original powers of consciousness and activity are obfuscated.

##### 5. Introduction to the Doctrine of the Eight Dispositions (Bhāva) and Four Conceptions (Pratyaya)

The soteriological analysis of the buddhi rests with the doctrine of the eight "dispositions" or bhāva. Sadyojyoti, like the author of the Samkhya Kārikā, does not describe the eight dispositions of the buddhi in terms of their specific varieties but rather in terms of the general influence they have as contributory factors in the soteriological development of the soul. However, in certain Āgamas such as the Mātaṅga Pāramareśvara Āgama and the Pauṣkara Āgama we do find specific details concerning the exact enumerations of the dispositional varieties, although there appears to be very little agreement among the various authors concerning the details of the enumeration.<sup>50</sup>

The classification of the different configurations of Dispositions into the well known distinctions of souls into "samsiddhika" "vainayika", and "prākṛta" is described by Sadyojyoti in such a manner that these three distinctions are themselves Dispositions or extensions of the Dispositions, as he refers to both the Dispositions and their triadic classification as "bhāva" (specifically "rūpa"). In this case the emphasis is on the type of soteriological Dispositions the various samsaric souls have. Although for the Sāṃkhya these three types circumscribe the various types of souls, for the Śaivite the triadic classification merely applies to the lowest soteriologically developed soul, the "Sakala" soul.

The eight Dispositions are said to be the "cause" of the four "conceptions" (pratyaya). Although the various Śaivite authors do not appear to find the relation between the doctrine of the eight Dispositions and four Conceptions problematic, viewing the Conceptions as more developed forms of the Dispositions, modern scholars are at a loss to find a logical consistency between the two doctrines. Upon examination of the two doctrines in the Sāṃkhya, Keith claims that it is a "hopeless" task to try and reconcile the two doctrines as they are too identical to be considered "radically different".<sup>52</sup> Keith argues that they cannot represent two different views which developed in different ways, as they are introduced in the text of the Sāṃkhya Kārikā without any indication as to their relationship -- resulting in the misleading idea, argues Keith, that they are concerned with the same thing. Keith therefore concludes that the "pratyayasarga"<sup>53</sup> is a later interpolation into the text. In our discussion of the Conceptions a more detailed account of



the relation between the two doctrines as understood by Aghora Śiva and other Śaivite authors will be examined with Keith's critical observations in mind.

Concerning the relationship between Sāṃkhya and Śaivism over the doctrine of the Conceptions it is interesting to note that Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha in his commentary on the section of the Mrgendra Āgama which enumerates the Conceptions, expresses no qualms in citing the enumeration of the Conceptions given in the Sāṃkhya Kārikā as authoritative.<sup>54</sup> However, Aghora Śiva, in his commentary on Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha, argues that the enumeration given by Nārāyaṇa is actually a statement concerning one of the false ways of construing the Conceptions "according to the other systems."<sup>55</sup> Although a comparison of the Śaivite and the Sāṃkhya doctrine of the Conceptions clearly indicates that there is much agreement between the two doctrines and that Aghora Śiva is obviously over-zealous in his denial of such an agreement, there is one very important difference between the two doctrines. For Sāṃkhya the Conception "Attainment" (siddhi) is considered to be the model of soteriological perfection for the aspirant, i.e. the discernment of "the manifest, unmanifest and consciousness."<sup>56</sup> "Attainment" is in fact "moṣka" for the Sāṃkhya, which is not the case for the Śaivite. Although we find the same description of "Attainment" in the Bhoga Kārikā Vṛtti as is given in the Sāṃkhya Kārikā it must be remembered that this Attainment only pertains to the soul at the level of the "sakala", i.e. at the level where perfection is reached in the sphere of māyā -- full Attainment can only be reached once the spheres of mala and karma no longer influence the soul.

The relation between the three guṇas and the eight Dispositions appears more direct than it appears elsewhere in the description of the tattvas below the guṇas. The "guṇas" are "manifested" in psychic form as sukha, duḥkha and moha.<sup>57</sup> In their constitutive-genetic activity the guṇas function through the manifested character of the Dispositions. In this psychological manner the guṇas affect both "cognition" and the "objects" of cognition, both the subjective, procreative aspect of the buddhi as well as the manifested evolution of the buddhi into lower tattvas. As the author of the Śata Ratna Uilekha claims, experience is related to the guṇas in a twofold sense, both immediately and mediately: sukha, duḥkha and moha, he says, are immediate instantiations of the guṇas while the five spheres of objects relating to the senses are "mediate" instantiations.<sup>58</sup> In an attempt to trace the historical development of the relation between the bhāvas and guṇas, E.H. Johnston maintains that the "oldest accounts of this relation are found in the Śāntiparvan section of the Mahābhārata; he argues that the activities of "psychical, moral qualities" are the original function of the three guṇas.<sup>59</sup> Van Buitenen, claiming to have more correctly "re-constituted" a variety of sections and readings from the Mahābhārata, claims that the bhāvas are indeed found in connection with such "sensations, qualities and conditions" as are indicative of psychical, moral qualities.<sup>60</sup> However, and even more significantly, he claims there is a second sense of the notion of bhāva as a "form of being, cosmic phase evolved under the influence of a guṇa."<sup>61</sup> On this account, bhāva is not identical with the guṇa but a result of it;<sup>62</sup> over time, however, the

bhāvas take on an independent psychical status of their own: "at exactly the same moment when we watch the evolutionary gūṇa-influenced bhāvas disappear, we see the 'psychical' bhāvas appear."<sup>63</sup>

It is wrong to think that the doctrine of the eight Dispositions and four Conceptions is only held by those who espouse the tattvic doctrine, such as Sāṃkhya and Śaivism. Prāśastapāda, for instance, alludes to the doctrine of the eight Dispositions in his account of the periodic creation and destruction of the world. In the creation of the gods and mortals during the stage of creation, Māheśvara employs the services of Brahma who is said to be possessed of a high degree of the "good" Dispositions jñāna, vairāgya and aiśvarya.<sup>64</sup> As his final act of creation Brahma is said by Prāśastapāda to connect both the gods and mortals with the Dispositions of dharma, jñāna, vairāgya and aiśvarya according to their respective impressed potentialities (sr̥styāśayanurūpa). As well, sukha is said to be aided by the Agency of "dharmādi" while duḥkha is aided by "adharmādi".<sup>65</sup> Finally, Prāśastapāda describes mokṣa as that which involves "dharma, jñāna and vairāgya".<sup>66</sup>

#### 6. Dispositions (Bhāva)

Among the host of meanings that the term "bhāva" has, all relating back to "being" or "state of being", "bhāva" has the meaning of disposition or inclination, specifically referring to emotional states.<sup>67</sup> In the Sanskrit works on aesthetics (alankāraśāstra), "bhāva" is closely related to "rasa",<sup>68</sup> the sentiment, mood or emotional consciousness produced by the various elements in an aesthetic work. The "bhāvas" are said to create the "rasa" (evam bhāvā bhāvayanti rasān).<sup>69</sup> The bhāvas, for instance, are said to "lie behind" the dramatic activity of a play,

as A. K. Warder points out:<sup>70</sup>

From the Nāṭya Śāstra's account of the method used by actors to produce rāsa in an audience, we see that the object of this perception is the bhāva-s, the states of mind or emotions, of the characters in the play as they participate in its action. These emotions are for the most part invisible and are understood to be present only through the representation by the actors of their causes and effects.

The eight bhāvas as described by Aghora Śiva perform a very similar role as those described by Warder. The eightfold bhāvas are said to exist "in the buddhi" in a pre-conscious, motivational sense as "vāsanās" or "samskāras", "impressions," left by previous acts and thoughts whose soteriological import influences future acts. The "cognition" of the buddhi comes to be "manifested" through the latent influences of the bhāvas; the bhāvas represent the most basic "level" of buddhi-based consciousness.<sup>71</sup> As a more developed "modification" of māyā, the three gunas "appear" (udbhūtatva) in the form of the bhāvas through moha, duḥkha and sukha; the auxiliary cause (sahakārin) is said to be karma (BK, v. 55).

The eight bhāvas are schematically represented as follows:<sup>72</sup>

<u>DHARMA</u> (Merit	-----	<u>ADHARMA</u> (Demerit)
<u>JÑĀNA</u> (Knowledge)	-----	<u>AJÑĀNA</u> (Ignorance)
<u>VAIRĀGYA</u> (Non-attachment)	-----	<u>AVAIRĀGYA</u> (Attachment)
<u>AISŪVARYA</u> (Lordly Powers)	-----	<u>ANAIŚVARYA</u> (Powerlessness)

In a most mundane sense the four bhāvas in the left hand column represent the "good" dispositions while the four in the right hand column represent the "bad" dispositions. The four that have a positive soteriological influence are all said to be of a sattvic origin; while of the four that have a negative influence, adharma, ajñāna and anaīśvarya

have a tāmasic origin while avairāgya has a rājasic origin.

Jñāna has for its sphere (gocara) five things: the three gunas, prakṛti and the soul (pañcadhā jñānam buddhyātmakam yattad gunāvyaktāntagocāra).<sup>73</sup> This jñāna is said to be the cause of the Conception "Attainment" (siddhi); however, as Aghora Śiva points out in his commentary on the Mrgendra Āgama Vṛtti, this jñāna which is the cause of "attainment," does not constitute the higher state of release (pāramokṣa), as this can only come about through "initiation" (dīkṣā).<sup>74</sup> Ajñāna is fivefold and is the cause of the Conception "viparyaya", error:<sup>75</sup> i) "obscurity" (tamas) is that jñāna whereby there is the postulation of the soul in that which is not the soul; "obscurity" is tenfold according to how the tattvas from the earth to prakṛti are viewed, ii) "delusion" (moha) is the self-interested fixation with the accomplishment of yogic powers (animādiṣu labdheṣu paratvapratipattitah...mohah); this delusion is eightfold in that the yogic powers are eightfold;<sup>76</sup> iii) "extreme delusion" (mahāmoha) is the self-interested fixation with sensual experience; iv) "darkness" (tāmisra) is the suffering (tapas), which results when one is afflicted by both "delusion" and "extreme delusion", which is due either because of a defect in the means of mundane experience or because of the loss of yogic attainments; and v) "utter darkness" (andhatāmisra) one's sensual experience and yogic powers are experienced by someone else.

Dharma<sup>77</sup> is twofold: "yama", i.e., the abstaining from acts not prescribed by the authoritative texts<sup>78</sup> and "niyama", i.e., the engaging in the prescribed acts as established in the authoritative texts. Both

"yama" and "niyama" have five subdivisions: "yama" includes non-injury (ahimsā), truthfulness (satya), non-stealing (asteya), continence (brahmacārya) and non-wickedness (akalkana); "niyama" is non-anger (akroda), service to the guru (śūsrūṣā), purity (śauca), contentment (santoṣa) and straight-forwardness (ārjava).

"Aiśvarya" is eightfold, three relating to the body and five relating to the mind.<sup>79</sup> The three which are established on account of the body are "animā", the ability to exist in a subtle form which is subatomic in magnitude, "laghimā" quick movement and "mahīmā", pervasive existence. The five powers relating to the mind are "prāpti", the attainment of whatever is desired; "prākāmya", freedom of will; "īṣitā", giving commands to Brahma and the other gods", "vaśitva" "the ability to attract and create the world"; and "garima", "the non-interference of the enjoyments of one's activities".

"Vairāgya" is the non-attachment to the body, objects, possessions and loved ones. "Adharma", "anaiśvarya"<sup>80</sup> and "vairāgya" constitute whatever is opposed to "dharma", "aiśvarya" and "avairāgya".<sup>81</sup>

According to Sadyojyoti the "effects" of the eight bhāvas take on three forms which are descriptive of the souls possessed by certain configurations of the bhāvas: the "prākṛta", "vainayika" and "sāmsiddhika". The eight bhāvas with their respective "results" are schematically represented as follows:<sup>82</sup>

"PRAKRITA AND VAINAYIKAS"

<u>BHĀVAS:</u>	<u>RESULTS:</u>
<u>Dharma</u> .....	<u>Svarga</u> , Heaven
<u>Jñāna</u> .....	<u>Mukti</u> , Release
<u>Vairāgya</u> .....	<u>Prakṛtibhāva</u> , Material Existence
<u>Aiśvarya</u> .....	<u>Avighāta</u> , Absence of Obstacles
<u>Adharma</u> .....	<u>Samsṛti</u> , Worldly Life
<u>Anaiśvarya</u> .....	<u>Vighāta</u> , Obstacles
<u>Avairāgya</u> .....	<u>Bandha</u> , Bondage
<u>Ajñāna</u> .....	<u>Adhogat</u> , Life in Hell

"SAMSIDDHIKA"

<u>RESULTS:</u>
<u>Vaśyordhvasth'iti</u> , Higher Superintendance
<u>Saddrstibhrtva</u> , Correct Understanding"
<u>Bhogāsprhā</u> , <u>bhoga</u> -desirelessness
<u>Svacintiteṣu Avighna</u> , Freedom of Will
<u>Bhogānatikrama</u> , Inability Overcoming <u>Bhoga</u>
<u>Vighna</u> , Obstacles
<u>Bhāva</u> , Samsaric Existence
<u>Nyakkṛti</u> , Disgrace

Aghora Śiva quotes the Mrgendra Āgama which provides a description of the three types of souls influenced by these bhāvas.<sup>83</sup> In the order of soteriological perfection the sāmsiddhika soul is the most developed, the prākṛta the least developed and the vainayika lying somewhere between the two. The prākṛta configuration of bhāvas belongs to the soul whose understanding of things is so poor (mūrcchana) that it is only manifested during the embodied condition; the samskāric cultivation during this particular embodied condition is of no consequence in the next birth (na dehāpāya). The soul which has the vainayika configuration cultivates the good qualities through its deeds, words and body by means of "wordly experience, reflection, a religious preceptor and Śāstra." The Pauṣkara Āgama adds that "Śāstra" means Śiva-Śāstras and the exercise of

Śaiva duties. The samsiddhika is that special soul whose good qualities are carried through the various embodiments; this soul has samskāras that are of a special virtue" (Viśiṣṭadharmasamskārasamuḍḍipitacetas) and lead, as the Pauṣkara Āgama points out, to a transcendent sphere and the intuition of Śiva:<sup>85</sup>

Those who have performed hearing (of scriptures), reasoning and meditation in a previous life, but have not had the intuition of Śiva originated in them and for the sake of that have taken on bodies, like Sukla, Vāmadeva, Jadabhavata etc., and because of the impression of uninterrupted meditation, they come to have the intuition of Śiva.

#### 7. The conceptions (pratyaya)

The term "pratyaya" generally signifies a mental event such as a cognition, experience or belief; in particular it tends to refer to a mental event involving a settled conviction or assumption. In some instances the "pratyaya" can refer to the mind itself. Etymologically the term is derived from the verb "prati-i, i.e., prati" which is based on prati, meaning to "go towards" or "return" and i, meaning "to go"; the verb "prati" has the two basic meanings of "return, reach and attain" on the one hand, and "to understand or believe" on the other. The term "pratyaya" is used by both the Śaivites and Sāṃkhya in a manner to describe a mental event involving a more settled condition than such terms as "jñāna," "bodha" and "adhyavasāya" imply. The pratyaya is the psychologically more settled condition of the latent bhāvas. The bhāvas, existing in a latent form (vasanā) in the buddhi, become developed into a "gross form" (sthūlarūpa), taking on a more settled or fixed nature of cognitive activity, and are thus designated as pratyayas, whereby they become



objects of experience - bhogyā" for the soul. In his commentary on the Mrgendra Āgama, Īārāyaṇa Kāṇṭha says that "the bhāvas are established as the pratyaya because the bhavas cause the [fixed] cognition of the unreleased souls (...te [bhāvāḥ] samsāryaṇoḥ pratyāyanāt pratyayā istāḥ)."<sup>86</sup>

The Mrgendra Āgama describes the bhāva as the material cause (upādāna) of the pratyaya, i.e., as the cause of the pratyayas.<sup>87</sup> However, as the "effects" of the bhāvas, such as heaven, hell, etc., these latter are effects that exist in an "objective", situational level; for example, jñāna causes release in the sense of "leading to it", just as dharma causes Heaven in the sense of leading to it. The pratyayas however, are "effects" that still exist in a connected subjective sense to the vāsanā-condition of the bhāvas, although in a more evolved state (prakarsāvasthā).

The pratyayas are of four kinds: "Accomplishment" (siddhi), "Contentment" (tuṣṭi), "Incapacity" (aśakti) and "Error" (viparyaya). Sadyojyoti briefly describes each of these: Accomplishment is the awakened cognition (sambuddhi) of the manifest, unmanifest and soul; Contentment is the discernment of satisfaction when one grasps the soul; Incapacity is the lack of effectiveness (asāmarthya) in attaining prosperity etc., and Error is the discernment of an object otherwise than it is. In both the Bhoga Kārikā and Mrgendra Āgama the pratyayas are described in a manner that highlights their guṇic proportions. Accomplishment is the only pratyaya that is basically constituted out of the sattvic bhāvas, with only a little connection with rajas; the remaining three are basically caused by the tamasic bhāvas, adharmā etc., with Contentment and Error being constituted by a little sattva and Incapacity

by a little rajas.<sup>88</sup> "Accomplishment" is sattvic because it is the illuminating factor (prakāśakatva) of the vyakta, avyakta and jñā; it is rājasa because it is active (pravṛtti) for the sake of illuminating the vyakta etc. Both Nārāyaṇa Kanṭha and Aghora Śiva explain the connection of "Accomplishment" to a rājasic element as a reference to the connection to the bhāva vairāgya -- even though vairāgya is described as being sattvic in both the Bhoga Kārikā and Mrgendra Āgama: just avairāgya is rājasic. "Contentment" is derived from the tāmasic bhāvas because it is of the nature of delusion (mithyāsvarūpa) wherein one thinks one is accomplished when one in fact is not; it is also slightly sattvic because it is of the nature of pleasure (sukha). "Incapacity" is rājasic because it is of the nature of inactivity (apravṛtti) and tāmasic because it is of the nature of suffering (duḥkha). "Error" is tāmasic because it is of the nature of falsity and sattvic because it is a resemblance (sāmānya; sādharmaṇa) -- although the wrong one, it still involves some kind of manifesting agency.

Described as the discernment of the "vyakta-avyakta-jñā", "Accomplishment" in this Saivite sense immediately reminds the student of Indian Philosophy of the second verse of the Sāṃkhya Kārikā according to which the aim of the Sāṃkhya doctrine as the threefold suppression of duḥkha is described as "vyaktāvyaktajñā-vijñānāt", even though in the Sāṃkhya Kārikā the account of Accomplishment only plays an incidental role as the cause of one of the eight listed Accomplishments, i.e., as the threefold suppression of pain.<sup>89</sup> The Mrgendra Āgama(11.2), which Aghora Śiva quotes in his commentary on the section of the Bhoga Kārikā dealing with

Accomplishment, is more exact in its description of Accomplishment. The Āgama states that "Accomplishment" is the consciousness (buddhi) whose object is the soul, prakṛti, etc. Aghora Śiva further points out that the soul is not dependent on the buddhi for this illumination, as the soul is in itself an "illuminating agent". Just the vyakta and avyakta, maintains Aghora Śiva, are discovered by the buddhi; the "jñā" -- i.e. "puruṣa", "puruṣ" etc. -- is actually discerned by the soul itself in a kind of "self-awareness" (tadā draṣṭoḥ svarūpe vasthānam). Although Aghora Śiva accepts that "Accomplishment" is just a form or kind of the bhāva "jñāna", he nevertheless argues that this jñāna is directly linked to dharma. "Siddhi-jñāna" is, so to speak, a more elevated (prakarsastha) state of mind brought about by the purification of the buddhi to the point where one is no longer dependent on the master's teaching -- one has a direct insight into the nature of the tenfold dharma (sakṣātkṛtadhama). Those who do not have this direct insight must "recite mantras etc. according to the teaching." The eight causes of Accomplishment mentioned in the Mrgendra and identified with the eight causes given in the Sāṃkhya Kārikā by Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha are, according to Aghora Śiva, simply the eight kinds of jñāna relating to the eight various levels of understanding "Accomplishment" -- i.e. "mokṣa" -- according to the other systems,<sup>90</sup> beginning with the Cārvākas and ending with the Vedāntins, respective of the tattvic level they attain to. In short, maintains Aghora Śiva, these levels are mere levels of "Contentment", not "Accomplishment".

Being of an illusory and pleasurable nature tuṣṭi is described by Aghora Śiva as "a satisfying discernment" (kṛtārthavijñāna). Aghora Śiva

quotes the Mrgendra definition of Contentment, which is said to be the assertion of the unaccomplished soul that "I am accomplished (nurakrtārthasya krtārtho 'smi)."<sup>7</sup> This soteriologically false sense of feeling accomplished is a result of the bhāva "vairāgya", non-attachment, which is of a lower order (adhasthana viśayah). In his commentary on the Mrgendra Āghora Śiva describes vairāgya as the cause of the various distinctions of Contentment; he quotes the Śrīmat Parākhyā Āgama which describes the manner in which the ten vairāgya cause the ten kinds of Contentment:

VAIRĀGYA QUA BHĀVA:

TUṢṬI QUA PRATYAYA:

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 1. seeing living creatures bound to torment .....  | aversion                                    |
| 2. yoking to the 3 <u>Duḥkhas</u> : internal ..... | abhorence of the <u>Duḥkha</u> of: internal |
| 3. " " " " " : external .....                      | " " " " external                            |
| 4. " " " " " : divine .....                        | " " " " divine                              |
| 5. acquisition of wealth .....                     | detachment from possessions                 |
| 6. lamentation .....                               | [things] born from lamentation              |
| 7. women .....                                     | deception                                   |
| 8. irritation .....                                | intoxication                                |
| 9. cognitions .....                                | things born from <u>Karma</u>               |
| 10. acceptance of gifts .....                      | ascetic comportment                         |

This classification of the ten Contentments is obviously very different from the account given in the Sāṃkhya Kārikā<sup>90</sup> which lists the Contentments as nine: four internal (ādhyātmikatva) -- prakṛti, upādāna, kāla, and bhāgya -- and the five external -- i.e. those that result from the abstinence from the five sense organs. The Sāṃkhya Kārikā text it-

self does not give the import of these nine Contentments or the soteriological role they play, except to say that Contentment, along with Incapacity and Error, is a "hindrance" (añkuśa) to mokṣa. The commentators, however, interpret the Contentments as the way the other systems construe mokṣa, i.e., "the error of confusing puruṣa with prakṛti" etc.

"Incapacity" is described as the inability (asāmarthya) in obtaining prosperity etc. (śubha etc.) due to the defects in one's "organs" and, by extension, in one's "body".<sup>91</sup> "Prosperity" is glossed by Aghora Śiva as "the joy which arises from the activity of the organ of generation" (upasthendriyavyapārā āhlāda ucyate). The "etc." is extended to include the incapacity of the eightfold yogic powers as these are considered to arise on account of the sense organs with the body. The Mrgendra Āgama offers a broader definition of Incapacity: "the lack of power over existent objects (śadarthāprabhaviṣnutā)."<sup>92</sup> Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha lists the number of Incapacities at twenty-eight: eleven defects of the sense organs and manas and seventeen which are considered to be the contraries of Accomplishment and Contentment; he quotes the Sāṃkhya Kārikā (v. 49) to justify this view. Aghora Śiva, on the other hand, quotes from a Śaivite text which enumerates twenty-one Incapacities: eight incapacities of the yogic powers (which are caused by anaśvarya), the incapacity of the body, the ten organs, manas, the ego and the buddhi.

"Error" is described as "the discernment of a thing otherwise than as it is" (ayathāvastuvijñānam). As based on a "resemblance", error is on some truth, as it is a "jñāna" that involves the illuminating power of construing one thing as another thing because of some common trait

(kīmcitsāmānyato 'nyatra matiranyā viparyayaḥ). Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha gives the example of seeing a mirage of water in a desert to explain the element of truth in "error". Aghora Śiva states that "Error" is fivefold, all consisting of varieties of ajñāna.

#### 8. The Relation Between the bhāvas and pratyayas according to the Śaiva Darśana and Sāṃkhya

As has been mentioned, both Keith and Larson think that the doctrine of pratyayas is a later interpolation into the Sāṃkhya Kārikā text, given the disharmony between the bhāva and pratyāya doctrines and the lack of any explanation of the relation between the two doctrines in the text itself. The Śaivite authors, as it has been pointed out, agree with the Mrgendra Āgama that the bhāvas are the "material causes," (upādānāni) of the pratyayas; the pratyaya is a result of certain collocations of dispositional qualities which exist in a vāsanā-state, a pre-cognitive and affective condition prior to their more formal instantiation in the form of pratyayas. Moreover, the bhāvas function as the material causes of the three character types (samsiddhika etc.); this threefold distinction is said to apply to the pratyayas as well (MĀ, 10.-25).

The various commentators on the Sāṃkhya Kārikās each has developed a specific terminology and interpretation to discuss the relation between the bhāvas and pratyayas. Perhaps closest to the Śaivite position is the author of the Yuktiḍipikā who regards the pratyayasarga as the final "result" (phala) of the bhāvasarga.<sup>93</sup> Regarding the threefold division of the bhāvas into samsiddhika, prākṛta and vaikṛtika, the Yuktiḍipikā discusses the various interpretations of these given by the early Sāṃkhya teachers. A "Pañcādhikaraṇa", for example, subdivides

the bhāvas twofoldly into prakṛta, innate, and vaikṛta, acquired.<sup>94</sup>

A certain "Vindhyavāsin", on the other hand, denies that there can be any innate (prakṛta), bhāvically influenced cognition; rather, Vindhyavāsin maintains that there is only the "vaikṛta", even for a sage such as Kapila.<sup>95</sup>

The author of the Yuktidīpikā argues against the positions of Pañcādhikaraṇa and Vindhyavāsin, by upholding the view that the Sāṃkhya Kārikā puts forth a threefold distinction wherein Samsiddhika relates to the sage Kapila, prakṛtika to certain Gods and vaikṛtika to ordinary mortals. In this respect the author of the Yuktidīpikā agrees with Gauḍapāda,<sup>96</sup> although they differ with respect to the details of their expositions. Vācaspati Miśra, on the other hand, agrees with Pañcādhikaraṇa and maintains that the bhāvas are only twofold.<sup>97</sup>

Gauḍapāda introduces the pratyayasarga by stating that the nimitta and naimittika aspects of the bhāvas are described as the causes and effects of the bhāvas, i.e., dharma leading to heaven etc.; the concept of the pratyayasarga describes the "ātmaka" of the bhāvas, as a further subdivision of their basic eightfold constitution. Vācaspati Miśra denies that the four pratyayas are a "collection" (samāsa) of the eight bhāvas, while the fifty varieties of the pratyayas represents an individual (vyāsa) accounting of the bhāvas. Vācaspati Miśra also appears to agree with the Sāṃkhya Sūtras in emphasizing the soteriological aspect of the Bhāva-Pratyaya doctrine;<sup>98</sup> Vācaspati Miśra says that Īśvarakṛṣṇa brings in this analysis of the Bhāvas and Pratyayas for the sage who is desirous of mokṣa; the further distinctions of the doctrine are important for the sage to conduct himself to this goal.

Clearly the Sāṃkhya commentators each had a particular interpretation of the ontological relation between the bhāvas and pratyayas, in spite of the fact that the SK text itself does not spell out such a relation in much detail. As well, the Śaivites do not find an incongruity or incompatibility between the two doctrines. Although there is no way to "prove" that the two doctrines are an unhappy and unconvincing amalgamation of two doctrines that were originally developed as separate accounts of the psychological constitution of the Buddhi, one is struck, nevertheless, by the redundancy of having two separate sets of psychological categories explaining the same phenomena. Of more particular interest than the incongruity in viewing the pratyaya (as a more developed form of the bhāvas is the fact that the bhāvas are considered to be the "form" in which and through which the saṃskāras are manifested. The bhāvas are the saṃskāric-form that marks all empirical consciousness or "bodha". One does not discover a "separate" buddhi as a separate substratum harbouring the saṃskārically constituted bodha. "Buddhi" is in fact the recognition that the bodha is considered to be a separate reality or phenomenon distinct from other phenomena in the tattvic doctrine. The "buddhi" is simply the formal structure determining the saṃskārically constituted bodha.



## Chapter IV

### NOTES

<sup>1</sup>"Manas" is also referred to as "citta", cf. TS, v.7.

<sup>2</sup>Deussen, p. 271. Deussen cites as examples the following Upaniṣads: Aitareya 3.2; Bṛhadāraṇyaka 5.6.1; Taittirīya 1.6.1; Muṇḍaka 2.2.7 and Chāndogya 3.14.2.

<sup>3</sup>As it has already been pointed out, the Nyāya Sūtras, for instance, does not include manas in the list of sense organs (1.1.12) nor does it serve a role in the explanation of the act of perception (1.1.4). However, in other sections of the Nyāya Sūtras, Manas is presupposed as a mediating faculty in both external and apperceptive perceptions (31.8; 3.2.1 and 5.2.5), which led to the view among later Naiyāyikas that four factors are involved in the act of sense perception (i.e. ātman, manas, indriyam and arthah) as well as the view that manas has two functions, manasapratyakṣa and bāhyendriyapratyakṣa. In the Padārthadharmasaṅgraha, for example, Praśastapāda construes manas as a dravya (as it has qualities) which functions as an instrument for the manasapratyakṣa of all internal states, including buddhi, which is on the same footing as desire etc. As such, manas is a recognized quality of the soul. On the contact of the soul with manas, "jīvana" qua "samrambha" arises. Cf. Padārthadharmasaṅgraha of Praśastapāda with the Nyāyakandālī of Ācārya, trans. Ganganatha Jha (Benares: E. J. Lazarus and Co., 1916), pp. 365 and 563.

In the Saṅkhya Kārikā, verse 36, manas is described as an indriya involved in both the motor and sense organs; its function is said to be "samkalpaka", discernment. manas does not play a part in Sabara's account of the cognitive act. Indeed, even the notion of a separate antahkarana is absent in his epistemology. However, both Kumārila Bhaṭṭa and Prabhākara hold views concerning the manas; for a discussion of such views, cf. Ganganatha Jha, Pūrva Mīmāṃsā in its Sources (Banaras: Banaras Hindu University, 1964), pp. 35-37. Stcherbatsky claims that while the Madhyamika Buddhists generally consider manas to be a special organ; cf. Stcherbatsky, Buddhist Logic, II, 318. "Manas" is mentioned three times in the Yoga Sūtras (3.48 and 1.35), all with reference to its "rapid activity" with respect to the activity of mundane consciousness.

For a general discussion of manas in the various systems, cf. Saraswati Chennakaswami, Concept of Mind in Indian Philosophy. (New York: Asia Publishing, 1960).

<sup>4</sup>Cf. Brahmasūtrabhāṣya, 2.3.32. The antaḥkaraṇa is ultimately considered an "upadhibhūta" of the ātman.

<sup>5</sup>After assigning manas a samsāya function, Śaṅkara refers to manas as the "controlling factor" (avadhāna) over perceptions; he cites the Bṛhadaranyaka Upaniṣad. Cf. Vedānta Sūtras with the Commentary of Śaṅkarācārya, trans. George Thibaut, Sacred Books of the East. XXXIV, 2 Vol. (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1904), p.

<sup>6</sup>Cf. footnote 3 above.

<sup>7</sup>Neither the BK, TS, MĀ, nor MPĀ adds that manas is also the pravartaka of the karmendriyāṇi as well as the jñānendriyāṇi, as does the SK, v. 36.

<sup>8</sup>The analogy of the dancer is given by Kamalaśīla to explain the notion of the simultaneity of perceptions giving rise to a unified experience in vs. 1254-1256 of the Tattva Saṃgraha, trans. p. 631, where in the analogy of the whirling fire brand is given.

<sup>9</sup>cf. MĀ (10,7), p. 319 :

Manas, by rapid activity, sets in motion the senses and is characterized by "synthesis" (saṃkalpa); with regard to hearing and the other senses, it perceives, each one in its own domain, sound etc.

devappravartakam śiḅnacāri saṃkalpadharmi ca  
manaśśabdāvisaya grāhakāśśravaṇadāyaḥ

<sup>10</sup>cf. TP, v. 56, p. 120. The TP claims that Manas is of the "nature" of "icchā" (icchārūpa) and that its function (vyāpāra) is "saṃkalpa". Srikumara glosses icchā-rūpa as icchā-svarūpa. Aghora Siva provides two synonyms for saṃkalpa, avadhāna and ekagrata, attention and concentration; he further claims that icchā is the rūpa of Manas by means of the vyāpāra of saṃkalpa. Srikumara, on the other hand, describes icchā as prārtha, wish or desire, and saṃkalpa more logically as anirdhāra, mental specification, and ultimately as samsāya, doubt, whose existence provides the hetu for the inferential postulation of manas. In the SPB Sivāgrayogin describes saṃkalpa as niscaya and vilkapa as samsāya, both of which he describes as the basic epistemological categories of the manas (cf. p. 250).

<sup>11</sup>The regulation of this flow of perceptual activity assigned to manas i.e. the regulation of the yugapad or kramika nature of perception, also concerns the question regarding the "magnitude" of manas. Some think of manas as limited in its magnitude, i.e. as atomic (anutva), while others construe it as having an unlimited magnitude, i.e. as pervasive (vibhūta) [like ākāśa]. The basic argument in favour of its anutva is based on the claim that the soul during empirical consciousness would not kramikajñāna if manas were vibhūta. The argument in favour of its vibhūta is based on the claim that since the soul is vibhūta, so must the manas be. For example, according to the post-Sāra Mīmāṃsākas,

manas is said to be pervasive for a number of reasons: because it is "like ākāśa," as it is not open to sense perception; because it is a substance which lacks a special quality, "like time"; and because it is "like the soul", on account of being the ādhāratva of the asamavāyīkaraṇa-samyoga of jñāna. For a discussion of the various arguments, cf. Tarkasamgraha, p. 147. According to Srīdhara manas is atomic because it is the instrument governing kramikajñāna; cf. Padārthadharmasamgraha trans. p. 160. Prasastapāda discusses the quality of "dimension", which subdivides in a fourfold manner: atomically, pervasiveness, longness and shortness. He says that atomicity (anūtva) is of an eternal and non-eternal form. The eternal variety belongs to two realities only, manas and atman (ākāśa, space, time and the atman have eternal pervasiveness as well); cf. pp. 284-285. According to the Vaiśeṣika Sūtras (7.23) manas is atomic, like ākāśa or atman.

Neither Sadyojyoti nor Aghora Śiva addresses the question concerning the mahatva or anūtva of manas. Nor do we find this discussion in either the MA or MPA. Sivāgrayogin, however, discusses it, arguing that manas must be atomic, since it is the cause of kramikajñāna; cf. SPB, pp. 251-254.

<sup>12</sup>SK, v. 24, incidentally, describes the specific function of Ahaṅkāra or "grāhakādhyavasāya" (qua abhimāna). The TP also subdivides Ahaṅkāra threefoldly into "jivana", the modification of the five vital airs, samrambha (qua prayatna), the locus of the prāṇa/vāyu movement in the body, and garva, the determinative-cognition (adhyavasāyah) of the apprehender (grāhaka) in the form of "aham"; cf. TP, v. 54, p. 117

<sup>13</sup>Cf. SK, v. 25. For the various interpretations of this verse by the commentators, cf. V. V. Sovani, A Critical Study of the Sāṅkhya (Poona: Oriental Book Agency, 1935), pp. 32-33. The author of the Yuktidīpikā explains the schema in v.25 in a way that emphasizes the priority of the eleven organs; he says that this three fold distinction of Ahaṅkāra is a result of the sāttvika element (in itself having niṣkriyatva) requires the rājasa element as an instigating factor (pravartakatva) and the tāmasa element as a differentiating factor (bhedatva) in the tattva-śrṣṭi. Cf. Yuktidīpikā, p.98. The MPA follows the same manner of classification given in the BK and also MA, although it uses the same terminology as SK, v. 25 to designate the sāttvika and rājasa aspects; cf. MPA, p. XXXI.

<sup>14</sup>"Akṣāni", the term used to describe the organs, seems more fitting to describe the jñānendriyāni. The sense of the term is stretched to apply to the karmendriyāni as well. Both Aghora Śiva's and Srikumara's interpretation of this verse depends on the meaning of the term akṣāni in v.55. Srikumara's identification of sattva with vaikārika and rājasa with taijasa certainly goes against the grain of v. 54, but provides the basis for his interpretation of manas as "rājasa" due to its "cala svabhāva"; cf. TP, p. 115.

<sup>15</sup>Aghora Śiva argues that in BK, v. 54, taijasa, vaikārika and bhūtādi are respectively described as sāttvika, rājasa and tāmasa; as

well, he says that they respectively create manas and the jñānendriyāni, the karmendriyāni and the tanmatrāni.

<sup>16</sup>This is the same inference employed by MĀ, 10.6, p. 318: "prakāśakarmakṛtvarga vailakṣanyāttanobhāvāḥ." Another reason is also given: "prakāśyatvāt", which Nārāyaṇa and Aghora Śiva take to mean that the tanmatrāni are open to the perception of the yogins.

<sup>17</sup>J.A.B. van Buitenen, "Studies in Sāṃkhya," JAOS, 76 (1956), I, 155-157; 77 (1957), II, 15-25; 77 (1957), III, 88-107.

<sup>18</sup>van Buitenen, II, 16. In this process the ego is itself divided into three different forms, from which the whole empirical cosmos evolves. Van Buitenen maintains (III, 89) that in the Mokṣadharmā section of the Mahābhārata one finds an attempt to harmonize the vertical and horizontal evolutionary schemes, as instances are found wherein the buddhi evolves into manas that gives rise to the indriyāni which then give rise to the bhūtāni. For a more general discussion of van Buitenen's conception of the two different schemes cf. Michel Hulin, "Sāṃkhya Literature," A History of Indian Literature, ed. Jan Gonda. Vol. VI, Fasc. 3 (Wiesbaden: Otto Harrassowitz, 1978), p. 129 and Gerald James Larson Classical Sāṃkhya (Santa Barbara: Ross ERIKSON, 1979), pp. 184-186.

<sup>19</sup>van Buitenen, II, 16-17.

<sup>20</sup>"Self-maker" stresses the -kāra aspect, as in kumbhakāra; van Buitenen also points out other senses, as "the utterance of aham", as in "om-kāra"; cf. van Buitenen, II, 17.

<sup>21</sup>ātmaivedam agra āsīt puruṣavidah/so 'nuvīkṣya nānyad ātamano 'paśyat/so 'ham asmity agre vyaharat /tato jñānamābhavāt (Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, 1.4.1); cf. S. Radhakrishnan, The Principal Upaniṣads, ed. and trans. S. Radhakrishnan (London: George Allen and Unwin Ltd., 1953), p. 163. Van Buitenen also cites Kātha Up. 3.10.11 and Svetāśvatara Up. 6.13.

<sup>22</sup>Madeleine Biarreau. "Ahamkāra: The Ego Principle in the Upaniṣad," Contributions to Indian Sociology, 8 (1965), 62-84. Biarreau finds van Buitenen's philological analysis of the concept of ahamkāra inadequate; she argues that it is "meaningless to rearrange the texts so as to build a continuous line of evolution for a given concept." (p.62) Her interpretation of the Ahamkāra is a more specific application of Deussen's interpretation of the ideological import of the Upaniṣads: "They are nevertheless radically opposed to the entire Vedic sacrificial cult, and the older they are the more markedly does this opposition declare itself." Cf. Deussen, p. 396.

<sup>23</sup>This is a purely individual process, that is, the practical quest of one desiring the highest and eternal bliss, the liberation - mokṣa -- from the bondage of perpetual rebirths. Still, at a certain

point, the yogic process leads beyond the limits of empirical individuality [i.e. "ahamkāra"] to some kind of experience of the whole." cf. Biardeau, pp. 66-67.

<sup>24</sup>Etymologically, sam-rabh derives from rabh, meaning to seize on strongly desire. The concept of "samrambha," plays no part in the SK or its commentaries, although it has much in common with the idea of the five karmayonayah, as described in the Yuktidīpikā, comm. on vs. 23 and 24, wherein the karmayoniḥ collection is said to instigate the five vāyu into action (pravartate); for a discussion of the karmayoni in the Yuktidīpikā, cf. Chakravarti, Origin and Development of Sāṃkhya, pp. 270-277.

<sup>25</sup>Cf. MA, 11.20, p. 307: "By its activities, the five airs of the body are set in motion (vyaparādyaśya cestante śārīrah pañca vāyavaḥ)."

<sup>26</sup>Cf. SK, v. 29, wherein it is claimed that each internal organ has its own peculiar (asādhāraṇa) "vṛtti," while combined the organs have a general or shared (sādhāraṇa) "vṛtti," which is said to be the five vital breaths. In his commentary on this verse Vācaspati Miśra argues that the vṛtti which is sādhāraṇa to the three internal organs is the "karana" for the five vital breaths -- i.e. "jīvaṇa," which is relegated to a function of the Ahamkāra by Sadyojyoti and Aghora Śiva.

<sup>27</sup>Neither in the BK nor in the MĀ is more emphasis placed on this aspect of the ego as the cause of the ego's onto-genetic activity, as is the case in SK, v. 24 wherein it is stated that "on account of the abhimāna/ahamkāra, there is the threefold creation (abhimāno 'hamkāra tasmāddvidyaḥ pravartate sargah)" or the Yoga Sūtras (4.4) that the "created, individualized forms of consciousness (nirmana-cittas) are solely a result of the ego-sense." cf. James Haughton Woods, The Yoga System of Patañjali, Harvard Oriental Series, 17 (Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1977), p.303. This sense of ahamkāra involves the error or illusion of "erroneous self-projection" whereby the empirical ego is assumed to be the self or soul. Van Buitenen points out that in the early Upaniṣadic context this erroneous self-projection is not taken in a negative sense but a positive one. The process of cosmic creation involves the recognition of the "I AM" of the Supreme and is a result of a sense of incompleteness being completed; cf. II, 20-21.

<sup>28</sup>For a detailed analysis of the difference between "adhyavasāya" as a buddhikārya and as a ahamkārakārya, cf. the discussion in SPB, p. 246.

<sup>29</sup>Annambhatta provides a proof for this: the anvaya example given is "when the two gross elements (earth and water) are mixed up, water smells" and the vyatireka example is given "when they are not mixed, water does not smell." and the vyatireka example is given "when they are not mixed, water does not smell." Cf. Tarkasamgraha, p. 43.

<sup>30</sup>cf. Vātsyāyana on 1.1.12: "The expression 'originating from

LEAF 102 OMITTED IN PAGE  
NUMBERING.

FEUILLET \_\_\_\_\_ NON INCLUS DANS LA  
PAGINATION.

material elements' is used (to indicate that) the characteristic of being restricted to the respective objects is possible only if these (senses) 'originate from different elements (nāna-prakṛti) and it is not possible if these 'originate from a single substance' (eka-prakṛti). Each of the senses receives a specific type of object and this characteristic of the senses is explained only when there is 'the law of being restricted to respective objects (viṣaya-niyama).' Cf. Nyāya-sūtra with Vātsyāyana's Bhāṣya, p. 24.

<sup>31</sup>This position leads to the conclusion as stated by Vātsyāyana (comm. on 3.1.73) that "ākāśa is ultimately considered to be the auditory organ." cf. ibid. p. 218.

<sup>32</sup>For Vaiśeṣika all events which involve human experience involve adrṣta (karman); even in the experience of the quality of colour, the adrṣta functions; cf. Praśastapāda, p. 233: "After this the contact of the selves with the atoms, as aided by the adrṣta (destiny) of the selves destined to experience (the effects of the jar), produces action in the atoms in which the colour has been produced by the baking." This brings about the conjunction of the diadic atoms. Cf. also p. 109: "...the unseen potential tendencies of all souls that are the causes of their bodies, sense organs and gross elements." The "adrṣta" instrumentally brings about all creation through the conjunction of the souls and atoms.

<sup>33</sup>Neither the Nyāya nor the Vaiśeṣika works have dedicated much analysis to the epistemologically foundational status of the padārthas. The padārthas are usually thought of in a neutral sense outside of any connection to consciousness as consciousness as a reality is subsumed under the category of a padārtha. In his commentary on Nyāya Sūtras 1.1.1 Vātsyāyana described the category ["padārtha" termed "tattva"] as 'whatever is known as what it is, either as existent or non-existent.' This description, however, doesn't explain why the sixteen accepted categories are the basic ones nor does it address the epistemological question regarding their connection to consciousness. Praśastapāda's basic description of the Vaiśeṣika padārthas also fails to answer this question when he boldly describes their properties: "To all six categories belong the properties of beingness, predicability and cognisability." Cf. p. 37.

<sup>34</sup>The same argument is taken up in some detail in MĀV, p. 329.

<sup>36</sup>"Jāti" only exist in three padārthas: dravya, guṇa and karma; therefore, no jāti of "samavāya", for example, can exist. The samavāya relations thought to exist between the jāti and that in which it adheres is considered to be perceptual by the Naiyāyikas, although only inferable by the Vaiśeṣikas. In BK, v. 40, Sadyojyoti singles out karma, sāmānya and samavāya, which addresses the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika view that the "bhautika" is limited to the sphere of dravya and guṇa while karma, sāmānya and samavāya are in principle out of the direct range of the senses.

<sup>37</sup>This only applies to laukika-pratyakṣa; presumably, in yogipratyakṣa the padārthas would be perceived directly.

In his commentary on section 99 of the Padārthadharmasamgraha (p.408) Śrīdhara describes the manner in which karma can be perceived.

<sup>38</sup>cf. Padārthadharmasamgraha, p. 161.

<sup>39</sup>Ibid., p. 683.

<sup>40</sup>In the Nyāya Sūtras the ego does not attain inclusion into the list of the basic aggregates of experience constituting the twelve "objects of correct cognition" (prameyāni): the self, body, organ, object, buddhi, manas, motivational activity (pravṛtti) after-life (pretyabhāva), result (phala) suffering and liberation. The ego technically falls under the category of the buddhi although it does not serve as the cause of the motivational activity as it does with the Saivites. According to the Nyāya Sūtras (1.1.17) motivational activity is the "setting into engagement" ("ārambha") -- Saivite works use the term "saṃrambha" to describe this activity through speech, mind (buddhi) and body whose immediate cause are the saṃskāra-linked "faults" of passion, hatred and delusion. Vātsyāyana comes to construe the ahamkāra as a sub-category of the buddhi; he attempts to prove the existence of a separate self (ātman) in his commentary on 3.1.1 wherein he appeals to the fact of egohood qua self-identity as proof of a self-subsistent and persisting self. The self is identified with the subject who uses "aham" in the various perceptions of things through "recognition" (pratyabhijñāna). In this case the ahamkāra is simply the act of recognition in the soul. Recognition, in turn, is a form of "memory" (smṛti) which is, qua "buddhi", simply a "quality" of the self (cf. comm. on 3.1.14 and 3.2.25). Although Vātsyāyana uses descriptions of this ahamkāra activity suggest an equiprimordializing of the self and the ego ("...it is the conscious self which recognizes an object previously perceived...", p.220), the self has egohood only insofar as it has mundane consciousness (i.e. buddhi).

<sup>41</sup>In the Sāṃkhya Sūtras, v. 1.99, we find such an attitude; the "antaḥkarana" -- is lighted up with the light of consciousness, as an iron ball with fire; cf. The Sāṃkhya Sūtra Vṛtti, ed. and trans. Richard Garbe (Calcutta: Bibliotheca Indica, 1888), p.56. .

<sup>42</sup>This is a clear instance where "vṛtti" in the sense of "modification" is considered to be an "effect" (kārya); "vṛtti" and "kārya" are synonymous: "ayam ghaṭa ityādyadhyavasāyatmanā kāryeṇa buddhiḥ siddhā" (TPV, p.115).

<sup>43</sup>TP is more general in its characterization of buddhi as "viśayādhyavasāyarūpin"; cf. TP, v. 52, p.103 .

<sup>44</sup>Aghora Śiva adds to Sadyojyoti's definition of bodha that it is a prakāśa which is characterized by the bhāvas and pratyayas, as this is not stated by Sadyojyoti, as it is in the MA, v. 11.8. p. 195 .  
Such topics as savikalpa- and nirvikalpa-jñāna are dealt with by Aghora Śiva



in TSV, pp. 8-9.

The threefold division of memory, discernment and imagination can also be interpreted in a temporal sense as being respectively related to the past, present and future, although the Saiva thinkers do not draw such an analogy.

<sup>45</sup>BK and MĀ descriptions of this are almost identical: "bodhavyakti-bhūmitayā pāsoḥ" (MĀ, v. 11.8; p. 295) and "pumbodhavyaktibhūmitvāt" (BK, v. 46).

<sup>46</sup>The MĀD describes this more clearly in terms of the bhāvas which collectively act as the cause of the manifestation of the cognition of the soul through acting as the "objects of enjoyment" in the samsāric sphere: "dharmādayo 'pi bhāvāḥ samsāravasthāyām bhogyatvenātmano jñānavyaktihetavo bhavanti." Cf. MĀD, p. 295.

<sup>47</sup>Both buddhi and the ahamkāra share this role of adhyavasāya, although in the case of the former it applies to an external ascertainment and in the latter an internal one.

<sup>48</sup>Cf. SPB, pp. 226-229.

<sup>49</sup>sā buddhiruditā tantre viṣayādhyavasāyinī  
boddho 'tra dvivīdho prokto viṣayādhyavasāyakah;  
anyo 'nadyavasāyātma vyavasāyātmakastu yah  
sabuddhiritarastvātmasvabhavo grahakātmanah; cf. SPB, p. 227.

<sup>50</sup>For a detailed exposition of the bhāvas and Pratyayas, cf. MPĀ, p. 390 and SPB pp. 228-246.

<sup>51</sup>It is unlikely that the doctrine of the jñānakevala, pralaya and sakala souls, which respectively apply to the dissolution of Mala, karma and māyā, is a Saivite "reworking" of the doctrine -- which is more Sāṃkhya in origin -- of the sāmsiddhika, vainayika and prakṛta souls.

<sup>52</sup>cf. A. B. Keith, The Sāṃkhya System (Calcutta: YMCA Publishing House, 1949), p. 96. Larson also agrees that it is impossible to reconcile the two doctrines. cf. Classical Sāṃkhya, pp. 193-194.

<sup>53</sup>SK, v. 46-51, contain the pratyayasarga.

<sup>54</sup>MĀV, p. 281.

<sup>55</sup>MĀD, p. 283.

<sup>56</sup>SK, v. 63, states that the puruṣa, although bound by the seven bhāvas, is released by just one, i. e. "jñāna", which is the cause of the pratyaya "siddhi".

<sup>57</sup>In this case the basic principle is that "the quality which is seen in the effect resides as well in the cause ("...guṇo drṣṭaḥ kārye kāraṇasamśrayaḥ)." Cf. MĀ, v. 11.6; p. 293.

The Sk, v. 12, describes the nature of the gunas as constituted by pleasure, pain and indifference (prīti, aprīti and viśada), which Vācaspati Misra glosses as sukha, duḥkha and moha; in v. 38 even the subtle elements are said to be constituted by these three more psychological aspects of the gunas. K. Sivaraman summarizes the manner in which the author of the Tamil work Cindanaiyura, a commentary on the Sivaprakāśam, analogically construes the three gunas qua sukha, duḥkha and moha in a direction beyond prakṛti and the gunas themselves:

SUKHA----typical of----PATI and the ICCHĀ power of the self----ANANDA  
DUḤKHA----typical of----PASU and the CIT power of the self----CIT  
MOHA----typical of----PASA and the KRIYĀ power of the self----SAT

Cf. K. Sivaraman, p. 563.

<sup>58</sup>Sataratnasamgraha, p. 67. He further emphasizes that although experience (bhoga) is of the nature of sukha, duḥkha and moha, karma is still the basis of all experience (p. 69).

<sup>59</sup>E. H. Johnston, Early Sāṃkhya, (London: R. A. S. Prize fund, 1931), pp. 31 ff.

<sup>60</sup>Van Buitenen, I, 56.

<sup>61</sup>Ibid.

<sup>62</sup>In I, 57 Van Buitenen says: "We find in the older portions of the Mokṣadharmasamgraha clear evidence that the "gunas" are indirectly responsible by their influence on a higher principle for the evolution of three bhāvas, 'forms of being or becoming (bhā) cosmic phases' which in one text we have reconstituted correspond to manas, senses and elements.

<sup>63</sup>Ibid., II, 25.

<sup>64</sup>Padārthadharmasamgraha, p. 111.

<sup>65</sup>Ibid., p. 557. Sukha and duḥkha are two of the eight qualities said to belong to the soul; the other six are desire, diversion, effort, virtue, vice and faculty (cf. p. 211).

<sup>66</sup>Ibid., p. 601.

<sup>67</sup>In the various Śaivite works the term "bhāva" has a host of designations and synonyms, all of which are usually affixed to buddhi, i.e. "-dharma" (BK, 64A), "-rūpa" (BK, 55), "-vāsanā" (SPB, p. 238), "-sthita" (MAD on 11.24), "-vṛtti" (SPB, p. 234) and "-saṃskāra" and "-guṇa" (MA, 11.23).

<sup>68</sup>Commonly eight rasas are mentioned: love (śṛṅgāra), heroism (vīra), disgust (bībhatsa), anger (raudra), mirth (hāsya), terror (bhayānaka),

pity (karuṇa), wonder (udbhūta), tranquility (śānta) and paternal fondness (yātsatya); such an enumeration is found in Mammata's Kāvya prakāśa. In his Sringāraprakāśa Bhojaraja classifies all the rasas under one, love; cf. E. Gerow, Indian Poetics A History of Indian Literature, ed. Jan Gonda, Vol 5, Fasc. 3 (Wiesbaden: Otto Harrassowitz, 1977), 270.

<sup>69</sup> Ibid., p. 249

<sup>70</sup> A. K. Warder, The Science of Criticism in India (Madras: Adyar Library and Research Centre, 1978), p. 14-15.

SK, v. 42 may be alluding to this psycho-aesthetic conception of the bhāvas when the subtle body (liṅga) is said "to play its part" (vyavāṭistate) like an actor (naṭavat) through the instruments of the bhāvas.

<sup>71</sup> Cf. section 8 of this chapter.

<sup>72</sup> The Pauṣkara Āgama describes the eight bhāvas as the eight spokes of a large wheel in which the souls repeatedly revolve in the samsāric conditions; cf. SPB, p. 242.

<sup>73</sup> MĀ, 10, v. 65-66; p. 233. Devasenapatti, not citing his sources, says that "jñāna" is fivefold; laukika, vaidika, adhyātmika, adhimargaka and mantra; cf. V.S. Devasenapathi, Saiva Siddhānta, Madras University Philosophical Series, No. 7 (Madras: University of Madras, 1974), p. 154. In the SPB Sivāgrayogin says that jñāna is tenfold, although the description is not provided; although he claims that the details can be found in the Muktiprakāraṇa (ch. 5) no such description can be found in this section. Cf. SPB, p. 231.

<sup>74</sup> Cf. MĀD, p. 288.

<sup>75</sup> In the Yoga Sūtras these are respectively called avidyā, asmitā, rāga, dveṣa and abhiniveśa; cf. The Yoga System of Patañjali, 3.3-9. Incidentally, the "astabhāvas" are not specifically mentioned in the Yoga Sūtras, nor in the Yoga Bhaṣya or Tattva Vaiśār adi.

<sup>76</sup> (I) anīmā, capacity to penetrate all things; (II) mahimā, extensive magnitude; (III) laghimā, extreme lightness so that one can rise up on the rays of the sun; (IV) garimā, extreme heaviness; (V) prāpti, extensive reach; (VI) prākāmya, obtaining all objects of one's desire; (VIII) vaśitva, subjugation of elemental forces; (VIII) yatra kāmavasāvitva, infallibility of one's intentions, goals.

<sup>77</sup> "Adharma" is not described in the texts; the assumption is therefore made that adharma simply represents the opposite of dharma.

<sup>78</sup> Yama is further subdivided into ahimsā and satya.

<sup>79</sup> These powers are said to be possessed by both gods and men; the

gods are listed as Piśācas, Rākṣas, Yakṣas, Grandharvas, Indra, Soma, Prajāpati and Brahman. The ŚPB describes the manner in which the "powers are generated: "For that soul (anu) who is virtuous (dharmin), settled in wisdom (jñānaniṣṭhasya) desirous of non-attachment (virāgecchā), endowed with a (keen) intellect, the constituent of sattva in the intellect generates lordly powers according to his desires." SPB, p. 237.

<sup>80</sup> It is clear that the four "bad" bhāvas, adharma etc., are to be thought of as "privations" of the four "good" bhāvas, dharma etc. The Pauṣkara Āgama (cf. SPB, p. 245), for instance, construes the eight bhāvas as the various aspects of the four pratyayas, which are also designated as the four varieties of jñāna. The four "good" bhāvas are described as "varieties of jñāna" (jñānaviśeṣa) while the four "bad" bhāvas are described as varieties of ajñāna, which is not the non-existence of jñāna (jñānābhāva) but "incorrect" jñāna (anyathājñāna).

<sup>81</sup> According to the MPĀV (17.157; p. 417) there is a total of 220 bhāvas; dharma has ten divisions; jñāna 80; vairāgya 100; aiśvarya 64; adharma 10; ajñāna 5, avairāgya 10 and ānaisvarya 10. The SPB lists 149 bhāvas with another 463 subdivisions; cf. p. 289.

<sup>82</sup> SK v. 44 and 45 and BK vs. 57-58 use identical terms to describe the "results", "gamanamurdhva" etc. Neither the BK nor the MA attributes the specific Bhāva to the specific "result", i.e. "Dharma" specifically causes svarga etc. In the BKV Aghora Śiva basis his coordination on that given in the MĀV.

<sup>83</sup> For example:  
 "svargomuktih prakrtibhāvo vighātaśca..." (BK, 57A)  
 "svargomuktih prakrtatāvighātau..." (MA, 10.28B)  
 "vaśyordhvasthitisaddrstibhrtvam bhogāsprha..." (BK, 58A)  
 "vaśyākraṅtistatparijñānayogo bhogānicchā..." (MA, 10.30A)

<sup>84</sup> MĀV, p. 280.

<sup>85</sup> Pauṣkara Āgama; SPB, p.152.

<sup>86</sup> MĀV, p. 28. Bhāvas play a more soteriological role at the phenomenal level (linga)--they are said to "bring it about" (bhāvayanti). The pratyayas serve a more epistemological function by causing the consciousness (pratyāyayanti) of the soul and by thus serving as the bhogyā.

<sup>87</sup> MĀ, 10.24; p.

<sup>88</sup> In both the BK and MĀ it is claimed that siddhi, although caused by the sattvic bhāvas, is slightly connected to that which is rajasic, which both Nārāyaṇa Kantha and Aghora Śiva explain as a reference to Vairāgya, even though Vairāgya is described as sattvic in both the MĀ and BK; just Avairāgya is rajasic. Cf. MĀV, p.291 and MĀD, p. 292.

<sup>89</sup>The eight are: oral instruction, study, threefold suppression of pain, acquisition of friends, and purity. Vācaspati Miśra subdivides these into principal (mukhya) and subordinate (gauhya); only the suppression of the threefold duḥkha is mukhya -- the rest are only important insofar as they act as a means (upāya) to the mukhya. Both Gauḍapāda and Vācaspati Miśra provide different descriptions of the eight siddhis used by other teachers. Cf. T.G.Mainkar, The Sāṃkhyakārikā of Īśvarakṛṣṇa with the Commentary of Gauḍapāda, trans. and comm. T. G. Mainkar (Poona: Oriental Book Agency, 1964), pp.133-137. Tattva-kaumudī, text and trans. Gaṅgānātha Jhā (Bombay: Theosophical Publication Fund, 1896), p. 95.

<sup>90</sup>MĀD, p. 282: "ata eva sūtrakārena-abhihitārthaḥ sāmkyamatādauprasiddha ityārthaḥ vṛttikāreṇa pi tad apekṣayāvoktam uktam ca sāmkyairityādi."

<sup>91</sup>BK, v. 62 uses the term "devayaikalyāt" which Aghora Śiva glosses with "sariravaikalyāt"; MĀ (11.3; p. 292) describes it as "kārikāpāye" which Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha glosses as "kārikānāmantakaraṇābahikaraṇānāpāye vināśe".

<sup>92</sup>Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha describes this as the inability to "see" colours, hear sounds, etc.; cf. MAV, p.

<sup>93</sup>The author of the Yuktidīpikā regards "creation", i.e. "the manifested condition" (vyakta), as constituted by "form" (rūpa) intentional activity (pravṛtti) and the results (phala) of this intentional activity. The "form" represents all the tattvas from buddhi to prthivi; intentional activity represents the level of the sentient and is circumscribed by the bhāvas; the "result" represents the sphere of the pratyayas. Cf. Yuktidīpikā, p. 126-127 and Origin and Development of the Sāṃkhya System of Thought, pp. 302-305.

<sup>94</sup>Prakṛta is threefold vaikṛta is twofold; cf. Origin and Development, p. 182 for the details.

<sup>95</sup>In the case of a sage such as Kapila, the proper dispositional understanding is developed very rapidly upon birth, due to a predominance of sattva in such a being.

<sup>96</sup>As well as Jayamaṅgala and Maṭhara.

<sup>97</sup>Vācaspati Miśra's interpretation of v. 54 does seem to go against the syntactical grain of the verse. He takes "prakṛtika" and "vaikṛtika" as adjectival to samsiddhika: bhāvas are either samsiddhika or asamsiddhika; the former are "prakṛtika", i.e. svabhāvika while the latter are vaikṛtika, i.e. naimittika.

<sup>98</sup>Sāṃkhya Sūtras 2.23-24, i.e. "jñāna muktiḥ" and bandho viparyayāt", are stated in a context discussing the attaining of mokṣa, not in dealing with the bhāva-pratyaya doctrine specifically; in 2.37/46 the pratyayas are enumerated just after the notion of practice is discussed. Neither the sūtras nor Anirruḍha's commentary specify any distinction between the bhāvas and pratyayas.

## Chapter V

### THE TRIADIC STRUCTURE OF EMPIRICAL CONSCIOUSNESS

#### 1. Introduction

With his doctrine of bhoga Sadyojyoti makes explicit his conception of the triadic structure of empirical consciousness that is based on the elements of the knower, knowledge and the known. With reference to the soul the triadic structure refers to both the enjoyer, enjoyment and enjoyed-object as well as the agent, the act and the-object-so-acted-upon. Having made explicit his conception of the buddhi qua "the object of empirical consciousness" Sadyojyoti turns to a description of the relation between the consciousness of the soul and the buddhi vis-à-vis a criticism of the views of consciousness as held by the Buddhists, Cārvāka, Sāṃkhya and Nyāya. Sadyojyoti does not enter into a debate with Advaita Vedānta; in only one verse (BK, v. 108B) does he criticize Advaita when he claims that the plurality of subtle bodies establishes the plurality of souls. In the process of criticizing other doctrines Sadyojyoti places himself at the center of the debate within Indian Philosophy over the nature of consciousness and clearly indicates his doctrinal affiliation with the orthodox position of the Mīmāṃsā doctrine of the soul as expounded by Śabara and Kumārila Bhaṭṭa.

#### 2. The Distinction Between Cognition and the Object-of-Cognition: The Sākāra-Jñāna Vāda Vrs. the Nirākāra-Jñāna Vāda

In the section of the Bhoga Kārikā that he identifies as being

directed against the Buddhists, mainly the Sautrāntikas of the Dignāga-Dharmakīrti school [i.e., Svatantra Vijñānavādins],<sup>1</sup> Aghora Śiva focuses the basic arguments put forth by the Buddhists that are direct attacks on the Śaivite conception of the soul, i.e., the doctrine of momentariness (kṣanikavāda), the doctrine that a valid means of proof (pramāṇa) only relates to "unapprehended objects" (anadhigatārthagatṛ pramāṇam), and the doctrine that there is no distinction between a cognizer and cognition (jñātrjñānākārābheda-vāda). The Buddhists use these arguments, maintains Aghora Śiva, in order to establish their position that the buddhi itself is the source of consciousness (buddhi-caitanyavāda) and that, furthermore, within buddhi no distinction between a separate cognizer and cognition can be drawn. Aghora Śiva attacks the view of the inseparability of the cognizer and cognition by first establishing the distinction between cognition and the object of cognition.

Both Aghora Śiva and Sadyojyoti illustrate the degree to which they are in agreement with the Mīmāṃsākas when they formulate their position of the triadic nature of consciousness. In the next section of this chapter the arguments put forth by the Mīmāṃsā in support of the bhoktrtvā and kārtṛtvā of the soul will be examined in order to explicate more clearly Sadyojyoti's own position regarding the nature of the soul; hence, at this point of the discussion concerning the Śaivite construal of the triadic structure of consciousness it is important to illustrate the similarity between Sadyojyoti's and the Mīmāṃsāka's insistence that the cognition and cognized-object are structurally separate objects in the triadic formula of cognizer, cognition and the object of cognition. We

begin our discussion with the position of Śābara.

According to Śābara the Buddhist holds that the "cognized-thing" and "the cognition of it" cannot be structurally separated. Although the Buddhists and Śābara agree that "external objects" -- pots, tables, etc., -- are always to be considered, at least in their ontological status, as "objects of consciousness", i.e. as pure objects outside of any relationship to consciousness and not dependent on consciousness for their ontological status; these "objects" are furthermore only revealed not as they are "in themselves" but only as "objects of consciousness". The Buddhist and Śābara disagree, however, over the exact relationship between "the objects of consciousness" and "the consciousness of such objects-of-consciousness". The Buddhist position has come to be known as the "Sākāravāda", the doctrine that "the form of the object" and "the object so cognized" are two aspects of one conscious act (ekam eva sākāram jñānam grāhyam grahyaṃ ca).<sup>2</sup> According to Śābara the Buddhist argues that there is no apprehended distinction between the "form" of an object and the "form" of its cognition (arthajñānayoḥ ākāraḥhedam na upalabhāmahe);<sup>3</sup> he quotes the Buddhist:<sup>4</sup>

What is perceived (pratyakṣa) is the cognition (buddhi), hence we conclude that there is no form of any object (artharūpa) apart from that object itself.

This view is wrong, argues Śābara, since it mistakenly identifies the form (ākāra) of an object with its cognition (buddhi or jñāna). Only the "object" is perceivable as an "ākāra" -- not cognition itself, which is the central tenant of the Nirākāravāda.<sup>5</sup> "ākāra" only applies to "external objects" and is perceived as existing in "external space" (bahirdeśasambaddha); "cognition", jñāna, does not exist in external



space and is not an external object.<sup>6</sup> Only external objects can enter cognition as specified objects; the property of ākāra is clearly a spatial property indicative of the three dimensional extension of objects of perception. Consciousness simply represents the form of an object but does not in itself possess this form; in all the various cognitions, cognition itself remains of one nature (ekarūpa).<sup>7</sup>

Having attacked the Buddhist conception of the inseparability of consciousness and the object of consciousness on structural grounds, Śabara turns to a criticism of this view on temporal grounds. The Buddhist maintains that the object and the consciousness of it arise together, i.e. simultaneously, like a lamp which illuminates itself and other objects (utpadyamānaivāsau [buddhiḥ] jñāyate jñāpayati ca arthāntaram pradīpavat iti).<sup>8</sup> When the cognition arises it causes the cognized object to be cognized; the emphasis is placed on the arising of cognition just as the emphasis is placed on the light in the illuminating of objects. This view is considered false by Śabara since the Buddhist is actually claiming that first there is the cognition and then there is the cognition of an object; in fact, when an object (artha) is uncognized (ajñāta) there can be no simultaneous apprehension of a cognition. Thus, it is only after an object has been cognized, i.e. only after it has arisen (utpatti) as a known object, that the fact of the cognition of it can be postulated, and then only through inference. It is from the cognized-object having arisen that the cognition is itself cognized (buddhijñāyate). Since a cognition cannot in principle be perceived, it must be inferred.<sup>9</sup>

In the verses from 64Ab to 64B Sadyojyoti specifically indicates

that the cognition--here considered as "bhoga" -- is distinct from the object-of-cognition, "bhogya"; he makes it clear that the bhoga is not coterminous with the apprehended object. Rather, he says, once an apprehended object has arisen and has been so established as an apprehended-object (bhogyatvam cāsyā saṃsiddham) the cognition that arises on account of this apprehended-object is technically designated as the object of bhoga (yenotpanno 'nubhuyate sa cāpyanubhāvo bhogo...). The crucial term is "arising" (utpatti), which implies a constitutive distinction between the bhoga and the-object-of-bhoga; constitutively the two do not arise simultaneously (yugapad) nor can they be considered to be of one nature (ekarūpa).

In the face of such an argument the Buddhist would continue to argue that the sheer fact of the-object-of-bhoga already entails the presence of some bhogya and that to begin with this object-of-bhoga is really to begin with a complex of the two, which implies that the bhoga is not a secondary element in the equation but one more coterminous with the object-of-bhoga. In Sadyojyoti's terminology, Śabara, for instance, would allow that in order for there to be an object-of-bhoga there must first be the presence of bhoga--but that in order for there to be the bhoga of this connection between the two, a different cognitive event must occur, i.e. an inference. According to Mīmāṃsā principles, Śabara is interested in driving a wedge between the object and its cognition in

order to establish a basic prāmaṇic realism between the cognition and its object; he does this in a manner agreeable to the Buddhist idiom and ontology. In the Bhoga Kārikā Sadyojyoti is more interested in pointing out that bhoga can be established from the fact of the presence of the-object-of-bhōga in order to drive a wedge between the two. The-object-of-bhoga, i.e., the "bhogyā", is in fact the buddhi and is only one member in the triadic complex of the bhogyā, bhoga and bhoktr.<sup>10</sup>

### 3. The Soul Considered as the Enjoyer (bhoktr) and the Agent (kartṛ) of Empirical Consciousness

Having established the separate existence of "bhoga" Sadyojyoti concludes that this bhoga is sufficient for explaining the existence of a separate "enjoyer", i.e., bhoktr. Such a position again conflicts with the Buddhists who claim that, not only are the bhoga and the-object-of-bhoga two aspects of one event, but also that the so-called bhoktr is simply an aspect of this single phenomenon. In light of the Buddhist position, Sadyojyoti establishes the existence of a separate and active bhoktr as the apprehending agent (grāhaka) involved in the activity of bhoga.

In explicating Sadyojyoti's position Aghora Śiva spells out the Buddhist position concerning the structural "unity" of the act of consciousness:<sup>11</sup>

Consciousness appears solely as of one nature (ekamevedam saṃvidrūpām); we see a 'modification' (vivarta) of manifold 'forms' (anekākara) such as joy, depression, etc. In this case you can use any name you desire [to describe one of the manifold 'modifications' of consciousness].

According to this view, as Aghora Śiva points out, the notion of continuity or permanence attributed to a substratum behind the cognitions --

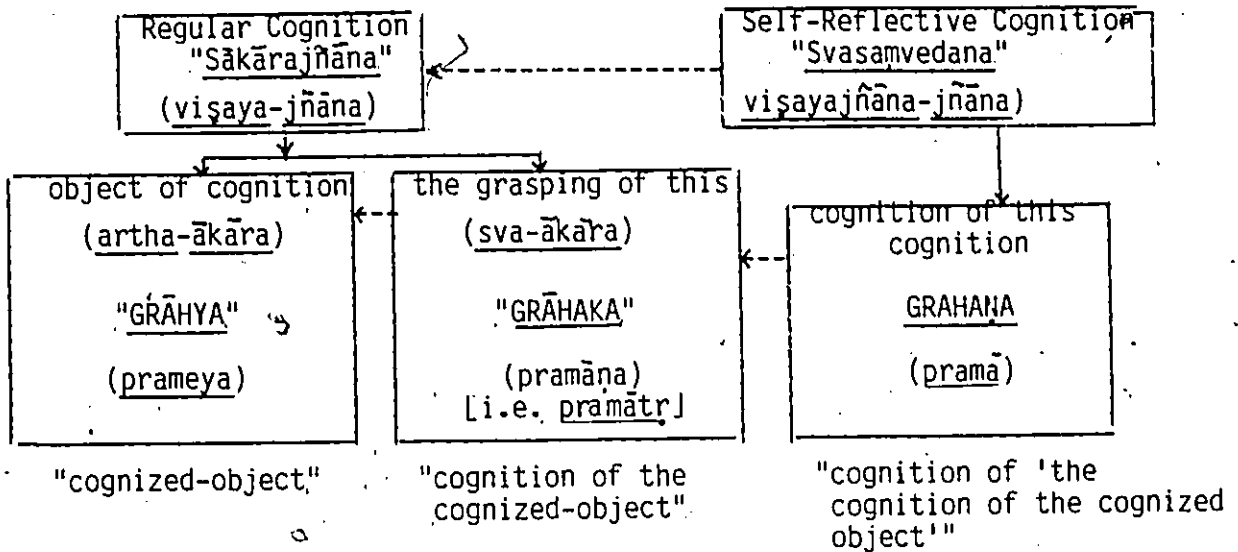
a notion which corresponds to a concept of a separate cognizer -- is itself simply a modification (vivarta) of impermanent cognition. In his commentary on the Mrgendra Agama<sup>12</sup> Aghora Śiva cites more psychological arguments to bolster the Buddhist view of "the manifold self-modifications of the one cognitive event." The Buddhists, he says, argue that to postulate a separate "apprehending-self qua agent" outside of the sole fact of the cognitive event (jñāna) is to set up a basic epistemological and soteriological distinction between "one's self" -- i.e. what belongs to "oneself" -- and "the other", what inalienably belongs to another person; this possessive attitude, argues the Buddhist, is ultimately derived from an egotistic desire which engenders further attachments and passions -- thus impeding liberation.<sup>13</sup> The Buddhists further claim that the postulation of a separate self is simply a result of "self deception": "It is said that the superimposition (adhyāropitva) of permanence arises on account of the similitude (sādrśya) of the successive moments which are arising."<sup>14</sup> In the Bhoga Kārikā and its Vṛtti the epistemological argument put forth by the Buddhists, i.e. that the cognitive event is one reality with three basic aspects, is directly attacked while the psychological criticism is only addressed incidentally through a criticism of the doctrine of momentariness.

Epistemologically, the Buddhists hold that the triadic elements of consciousness are simply "aspects" of a single cognitive event; the "cognizer" is simply one aspect of this event. The proof brought forth by the Buddhists to prove that the cognizer is one aspect of the cognition comes from the sphere of perception (pratyakṣa), technically an "internal

perception" (mana apratyakṣa) according to Dignāga:<sup>15</sup>

Every cognition is produced with a twofold appearance, namely that of itself [as subject] (svābhāsa) and that of the object (viṣayābhāsa). The cognizing of itself as [possessing] these two appearances or the self-cognition (svasaṃvitti) is the result [of the cognitive act].

In his Pramāṇasamuccāya Dignāga further describes this internal perception as of two kinds; one is directed towards internal emotive states, which he terms "svasaṃvedana", and the other is directed towards other cognitions, which he terms "svasaṃvitti".<sup>16</sup> In the latter case cognition can itself be its own object. This allows the Buddhist, who holds that all things are momentary, to account for the continuity in experience without postulating a "self" as a permanent substratum behind the fluctuating cognitions;<sup>17</sup> it allows the Buddhist analysis of empirical experience to remain within the sphere of cognition itself and at the same time to hold the doctrine of momentariness. In place of the uniqueness of each aspect of the triadic cognitive event the Buddhist holds a similar formula except that in place of the cognizer he establishes "self-cognition", instead of a subject's self-reflective state of consciousness one discovers cognitionself-cognizing itself. This impersonalistic conception of the cognitive event is also discussed in terms of the pramāṇa doctrine whereby the object, instrument and the result, i.e. the prameya, pramāṇa and the pramā are described as belonging to the one cognitive event of the triadic state of consciousness.<sup>18</sup> Epistemologically, the "self-consciousness" (svasaṃvedana), according to Dignāga, is simply a "result" (phala) of the cognitive activity:<sup>19</sup>



According to Dignāga the self-reflective cognition itself conforms to the structure of a regular cognition, i.e., as a "sākāra-jñāna", which is descriptive of every cognitive event. An opponent may indeed question the necessity of postulating a distinction between a regular cognition and a self-reflective cognition as the cognition of the object in itself is indicative of self-awareness. Dignāga begins his own description of self-reflective cognition by pointing out the necessity of positing the distinction between the two types of cognition. He begins by pointing out that since self-reflective cognition itself appears in the form of a regular cognition it too has a cognizing and a cognized aspect. Its specific "cognized" aspect appears as the cognition, which is in conformity with the original cognition (arthānurūpajñānābhāsa); its cognizer aspect is simply the cognition of this cognized aspect. If the description of the cognition of an object were limited to either the "cognized-object" aspect or the "cognizing" aspect, argues Dignāga, the following calamitous results would follow. In the former case there would only be the cognized

object and the self-awareness of it while in the latter case there would only be the cognition of the object and the self-awareness of it -- in both cases there would be no distinction between the original cognition of the object (viṣaya-jñāna) and the cognition of this original cognition (viṣayajñānajñāna)! To explain: if we postulate just the cognized-object and the self-reflective cognition involving it, the self-reflection would not have another cognition for its object (which it by definition requires) but simply the cognized-object -- and thus by Dignāga's definition it would be a simple "cognition" (svākāra) and not a self-reflective cognition; if, on the other hand, we postulate just the "cognition" or "cognizing" aspect and the self-reflective cognition, there will be no distinction between these two types of cognition as the objectless "cognition" will remain self-identically contentless and the self-reflective cognition will have nothing to distinguish itself from.<sup>20</sup>

In attacking this epistemological position of the Buddhists and in the consequent establishment of the triadic structure of consciousness in which the cognizer is the soul endowed with enjoyership and agency, the outline of Sadyojyoti's argument rests on the same premises as the Mīmāṃsāka attack of the Buddhist position. Śabara, for instance, first establishes the separate existence of the soul qua cognizer by drawing a distinction between, on the one hand, the body with its physical properties such as colour, weight, etc., properties which are "observable by all", and, on the other hand, the soul with its emotive and cognitive properties of "pleasure, pain, etc.", which are only "observable by oneself". He then gives a number of arguments to prove that the "internal properties" must

belong to the soul qua cognizer:<sup>21</sup>

- 1) Personal pronouns lead one to assume the existence of a separate cognizer.
- 2) "Desire" leads to the inferential postulation of a cognizing self. Desire depends on memory which depends on a self-subsistent cognizer, i.e., in order to desire (x) one must first recognize (x) to be desirous, which itself involves the memory of (x) and which entails a subject who remembers.
- 3) Self-reflective cognition (svasamvedana qua pratyakṣapramāṇa) proves that the cognizer, in cognizing, is self-cognized.
- 4) Scriptural texts (i.e. the Upaniṣads and Brāhmaṇas qua Śabdaprāmāṇa) also recognize that the soul is the cognizer possessed by internal properties.
- 5) By analogy: "just as you perceive yourself (identity), so I perceive my self (-identity)."

In explaining the Mīmāṃsaka's conception of the soul in this anti-Buddhist manner, Śābara both describes the nature (rūpa) of the soul -- i.e., as something which possesses "properties" in the way the body possesses properties, albeit radically different kinds of properties -- and he as well establishes the nature of this soul in pramāṇic terms. There is, however, a lacuna in Śābara's response to the Buddhists. Śābara is not precise enough in his description of the nature of the soul; he is not precise enough in describing the exact ontological relationship between the "eternal" and "self-illuminated" soul and its "transitory" properties, emotions and cognitions. Kumārila attempts to spell Śābara's position out more clearly and in doing so he helps to explain Sadyojyoti's position



more clearly as well.

For Kumāriḷa Bhaṭṭa it is clear the enjoyership and agency are attributed to the soul in order to explain its engagement in the sphere of karmic activity occurring most basically at the "property" level of "pleasure, cognition, etc." Kumāriḷa expands upon this "property" conception found in Śābara but changes it to include two sets of properties, those that are intrinsic to the soul and those that are incidental: enjoyership and agency belong to the former class of properties and pleasure, cognition etc. belong to the latter class.<sup>22</sup> In explaining the indirect connection (lakṣaṇāsambandha) as opposed to the direct connection (sākṣāt sambandha) the soul has with the body in the accomplishment of karmically determined activity--i.e., such "activities" meant to soteriologically "change" the soul -- Kumāriḷa claims, contra the Buddhists, that the self is not just of the nature of consciousness (viḷṅṅānamātratva) but rather enjoyership and agency as well.<sup>23</sup> Agency applies to the soul in order that it may "carry out" (sādhana) injunctions; enjoyership applies to the soul that it may reap the effects (sādhya) of the karmically determining injunctions. Furthermore, being possessed of eternality the soul is separated (vyatiriktatva) from the buddhi, sense organs and body, which are "finite" -- i.e. "open to destruction". Kumāriḷa explains the soul's engagement in karmic activity which involves the specific description of the soul's connection to the fruits of the activities tied to the sphere of finitude (anityatva).

Kumāriḷa first addresses the Buddhist criticism that, if the soul is in fact eternal and yet possessed (pratipannatva) of enjoyership and

agency, then at the time of its enjoyment it must be directly connected to the fruits of its karmic activities (karmaphalasaṃbandha). In response Kumārila argues that in such activity the soul indeed undergoes a "modification" (vikriyā) -- but not a total transformation which actually leads to the "destruction", i.e. non-existence, of a former condition (ucchedatva).<sup>24</sup> The modification is not in opposition to the aspect of the agency of the soul. Due to its "active character" (sakriyātva) the soul comes to be "the performer of sacrifices" (yajamānatva); the "instrument" for this activity is the body understood in a metaphorical sense, which refers to the sphere (avasthā) of the "means" whereby this activity occurs.<sup>25</sup> All change at the level of embodiment occurs at this level (avasthā) itself while "the common character of the soul" (sāmānyātma) never gives up its character as the "superintending factor" (adhiṣṭhāna) and "instigator" of this change. This is definitely a very similar account of the soul's connection to karmic fruits that Sadyojyoti accepts. For Sadyojyoti the closest this "modification" comes to the soul is at the level of the "buddhivṛtti". Basically the transformation aspect occurs at the level of "avasthā", which is essentially altered by the yajñasādhana occurring through the śarīra-dvāra.<sup>26</sup> For Kumārila the "śarīra-dvāra" essentially includes the triadic complex of buddhi, indriya and śarīra, which in Sadyojyoti's view would simply include the sphere of "buddhi etc." For Sadyojyoti the "yajñasādhana" would entail dealing with the three bonds -- mala, karma and māyā -- at the level of embodiment characterized by "kalādi". Both Kumārila and Sadyojyoti construe the soul as "jñāna-śakti-sadbhāva", attributing jñānatva with

bhoktr̥tva and śaktitva with kart̥tva.

In his confrontation with the Buddhists over the nature of consciousness Sadyojyoti follows the Mīmāṃsakas in attributing consciousness to the soul but he differs with the Mīmāṃsakas over the nature of the third order cognition described by the Buddhists as self-reflective cognition", svasaṃvedana. Both the Mīmāṃsakas and the Nyāyayikas attach a certain personalism to the soul; for both systems the notions of "I cognize" and "I am self-conscious" attribute a self-subsistent entity behind the act of cognizing.<sup>27</sup> In this case the "I" is considered to be a permanent quality of the soul whereas the act of cognizing is itself a product of an impermanent process carried out at the level of the buddhi. In the context of the debate with the Buddhists over the substratum of cognition Śabara quotes scriptural evidence in support of the view that the self is the substratum of consciousness, i.e., that it is the self which is self-aware in the act of svasaṃvedana. Kumārila spells this out more clearly when he states that there is an immediate intuitional insight of the soul by the soul through a conception of "aham" (ahampratyayavijñeyah svayamātmopapadyate), which is neither a perception nor an inference in the strict sense.<sup>28</sup> According to Aghora Śiva, Sadyojyoti clearly indicates that self reflective cognition is simply a form of perception (manasa-pratyakṣa), which serves as the basis for an inference regarding the existence of the soul; it is impossible to attribute a conception of "ahamkāra" to the soul. Moreover, since cognition at the level of the buddhi occurs due to the obfuscation of the soul's "jñānaśakti" there can be no "self-illumination" of the soul through the notion of "I" or "ahamkāra".

Aghora Śiva explains the inferential process whereby the soul is established on the grounds of "svasamvedana". The act of dreaming, he maintains, is a perceptual event which falls under the definition of perception, since it involves "touching" (sparśa)-- not of an external object (viṣaya) but of an "internal" one. This perception, argues Aghora Śiva, must depend on a permanent "internal" cognizer involved in the continued perception of the internally perceived objects. This internal cognizer cannot be attributed to consciousness itself as the Buddhist conceives of it, i.e., as a momentary event which ultimately is based on the momentary world of "objects". The Buddhist claims that the internal experience of phantasmal objects in fact proves that consciousness is momentary and not that there is a separate self, since there are no phantasmal appearances separate from internal experience itself.<sup>29</sup> Internal momentary experience which projects imaginary objects appears to have a stable base (i.e. a self) because of the "illusion" produced by the similitude of the successive arising of the objects -- as is the case in the continuous flow of water.<sup>30</sup> Aghora Śiva reiterates his position that the phantasmal object is in fact internally perceived in a permanent or constant manner, which indicates that the grasper must also be permanent.

A second inference is brought forward to prove the existence of a separate soul qua enjoyer. In this case it is maintained that "desire" (or "intention"-- i.e. samīhita) cannot be explained without the postulation of one who does the desiring; similarly, enjoyment, bhoga, cannot be explained without one who does the enjoying, the bhoktr. Although such an argument is similar to the one proposed by Vātsyāyana whereby desire is considered to be a quality requiring a substratum, i.e. the soul, Sadyojyoti does not accept the quality-substance ontology in

terms of a notion of the "inherence" of the quality in the substratum. Aghora Śiva adds that the argument from "desire" also proves that the soul is an agent, since the activity-of-bhoga implied by "desire" cannot be logically explained without the postulation of an active enjoyer. (BKV, 99B)

These two inferences which Sadyojyoti employs to prove the existence of the soul qua enjoyer and agent are categories of the sāmānyatodrṣta inference according to which something imperceptible (adrṣta) is inferred from something perceptible (drṣta); this inference is described by Vātsyāyana in his commentary on Nyāya Sūtras 1.1.5: "When the relation between the probans and the probandum being imperceptible, the probandum is known from a probans having the same nature with any other object."<sup>31</sup> Taken together, these two inferences satisfy the requirements that a positive concomitance (vyāpti) in an inference be complimented by an example of negative concomitance. For example, the constant concomitance of smoke and fire that we find in the kitchen, for instance, must be complimented by its co-absence in water, for instance. The standard charge brought against the Buddhists by the Śaivites and others is based on this criterion of a proper inference; regarding the Buddhists' doctrine of momentariness the critic claims that the Buddhist cannot provide a negative instance (vipakṣa) to prove permanence -- i.e., non-impermanence. To establish impermanence from existence there should be a negative instance in which the non-existence (abhāva) of impermanence would be concomitant with the non-existence of existence. However, since everything is considered to be impermanent according to the Buddhist, no counter instance can be cited. When the Buddhist brings a similar charge against the Śaivite's inferential establishment of the soul, Aghora Śiva,

for example, maintains that the positive concomitance is provided by the inference based on the svasaṃvedanapratyakṣa and the negative concomitance by the inference based on the activity of bhoga. This latter (sāmānyatodrṣṭa) inference is a negative concomitance as it is an inference based on presumption (arthapatti), termed anyathānupapatti by Sadyojyoti), which, according to Nyāya, is an inference based on negative concomitance.<sup>32</sup> In this case the Śaivite infers that, since all actions require an agent, given the fact of the activity of bhoga, an active Enjoyer must be presumed.

The final criticism the Buddhist brings forth concerning the Śaivite's doctrine of the soul is based on the doctrine of impermanence. According to Aghora Śiva in both his commentaries on the Bhoga Kārikā and on the Mṛgendra Āgama the Buddhist establishes the doctrine of momentariness in the following manner:

- 1) All things are either momentary or permanent.
- 2) All things occur either sequentially or simultaneously.
- 3) If all things are permanent, sequentiality is ruled out.
- 4) If all things are permanent and simultaneous, the sequentiality established by practical experience (arthakriyā) [the ultimate criterion of logical truth according to the standard of Buddhist pramāṇic theory] is ruled out.
- 5) Consequently, all things must be momentary and occur sequentially.

Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha succinctly states the Buddhist position: "All being (yat sat-tat-sarvam) is momentary on account of the unestablishment of the "being" (sattā) which is due to the impossibility of having an "arthakriyā" -- correspondence with practical experience -- of

sequentiality and simultaneity."<sup>33</sup> The Pramāṇavārtika states this clearly<sup>34</sup>

The higher truth (paramārthasat) is that which relates to whatever is "for the purpose of the correspondence (samartha) with the practical situation (arthakriyāsamartha); the non-existents are the non-momentary things--this position is established by the conflict with [holding] simultaneity and sequentiality.

It is quite clear that sequentiality falls on the side of momentariness. As D. N Shastri points out, the doctrine of practical efficiency is actually equated with "reality" or "existence" (sattā) itself. Consequently, when the Buddhist claims "everything is momentary, on account of [the nature of ] existence" (sarvam kṣaṇikam sattvāt), the claim is simply being made that in terms of practical experience, everything is in fact momentary.<sup>35</sup> Of course the equation that "arthakriyā=sattā" goes one step further and identifies this "arthakriyāsattā" with sequentiality (krama) -- i.e., flux, continual change. Hence, in a more temporal sense of the Law of Non-contradiction, concerning moments A, B and C, if (x) exists at moment A it cannot also exist at moment B, as the existence of (x) at A cannot include its existence at B--as "existence" at one moment implies non-existence at another.<sup>36</sup>

Aghora Śiva brings forth two arguments against the doctrine of momentariness. The first argument is based on what can be described as the "gem analogy". A "gem", an entity which the Śaivite considers to be "permanent", i.e. non-momentary, can be involved in two "activities" at one and the same time: the gem can "reflect" various separate objects occupying various separate spaces at one and the same time and in one and the same place, i.e. the gem.<sup>37</sup> This is an example of a permanent thing carrying out two things simultaneously; by implication the "illumination" of the gem is meant to parallel the manner in which being or existence

itself can manifest things both simultaneously and sequentially, i.e., the soul and impermanent cognition.<sup>38</sup>

The second argument brought against the doctrine of momentariness is more properly directed against the doctrine of arthakriyā: given the position of universal momentariness entailed by this doctrine the ability to relate to anything becomes impossible as everything is being destroyed the moment it is arising -- consequently there is nothing to relate to. In principle, pramāṇic knowledge becomes an impossibility for the Buddhists, even if they define pramāṇic knowledge as "the comportment towards an unapprehended object (anadhigatāṛthagantṛ),"<sup>39</sup> as even an unapprehended object becomes an impossibility.

#### 4. The Cārvāka Doctrine of Consciousness Understood as a Purely Empirical Phenomenon

Immediately after treating the Buddhists Sadyojyoti treats the Cārvākas solely in terms of their doctrine of consciousness. The most notable difference between the Buddhists and the Cārvāka is that "mokṣa" is the first priority for the former while "jīvana", life, is the first priority for the latter. As lying outside the sphere of brāhmaṇical orthodoxy, i.e. as "nāstika" doctrines, the Buddhists are more intent in upholding a "nāstyātmavāda" while the Cārvākas are more intent in upholding a "nāstiparalokavāda".<sup>40</sup> However, both the Buddhists, who espouse buddhicaityanyavāda, and the Cārvākas, who espouse the dehātmavāda, begin with the sphere of the "drṣṭa" as the starting point of their views of consciousness; the Buddhists construe this "drṣṭa" mainly in terms of momentariness while the Cārvākas construe it in terms of the "modifica-



tion" (vikāra) of the material substances. While Sadyojyoti restricts his criticism of the Dehātmavāda to the more ontological framework of the four elements accepted by Cārvāka, we find Aghora Śiva in his commentary on the Mrgendra Vṛtti criticizing this doctrine for epistemological reasons, i.e. that there is only one pramāṇa--pratyakṣa. Unfortunately we do not possess an extant text of the Cārvāka doctrine. In limiting his criticism of the dehātmavāda to the doctrine of elements Sadyojyoti is obviously dealing with the Cārvāka doctrine according to what he considers to be its essential position. We know from other authors, however, that the Cārvāka doctrine had many different "schools"; for example, in his Vedāntasāra Sadānānda claims that there are four schools of Cārvāka each of which holds a different interpretation of the origin of the conscious-self:<sup>41</sup> 1) the physical body is the self (sthūlaśarīramātma), 2) the sense organs are the self (indriyānyātma), 3) the bio-force is the self (prāṇa ātma) and 4) manas is the self (mana ātma). As well, we know from a late Cārvāka text, the Tattvopaplavasimha, that there also existed two main branches of Cārvāka, one with a more materialistic and the other with a more sceptical orientation; in his examination of the Tattvopaplavasimha Eli Franco<sup>42</sup> argues that the "original," Cārvāka doctrine of the four material elements, i.e. the lost "Bṛhaspati Sūtra", apparently rejected the validity of inference, mainly as a rejection of the attempt to establish some "other worldly" foundation of the phenomenal world, such as God.<sup>43</sup> It was probably the weakness in this original "pratyakṣa only" position of Bṛhaspati, maintains Eli Franco, that led to the postulation of anumāna, as it became increasingly clear that more than perception is required to establish the four elements.<sup>43</sup> After the rise of the hyper-

critical epistemology inaugurated around the time of Dignāga, Cārvāka was faced with the serious charge that it was founded on a petitio principii (ātmaśraya): after all other means of valid cognition are denied, perception, in order to be established as a valid source of knowledge, must establish itself.<sup>44</sup> According to Franco there were only two ways to solve this problem: either to accept inference, albeit in a limited sense, or to accept a radical scepticism and deny the validity of both perception and inference, as did the author of the Tattvopaplavasimha.

The charge that Cārvāka must employ inference in order to establish its doctrine of the four elements, the cause of consciousness, is found in Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha's commentary on the Mrgendra Āgama.<sup>45</sup> In order to correctly ascertain the manner in which the four elements constitute the body as well as the world as a totality, argues Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha, the Cārvāka must adopt a means of cognition other than mere perception -- i.e., inference.<sup>46</sup> According to the Cārvāka position we in fact only "perceive" the differences in the qualities (guṇabheda) of the gross elements (bhūtāni); the gross elements, as a result, must be inferred. Inference must be employed, for instance, when "earth" is discerned to be the "element" constituting clay, stones, etc. and "water" of such things as ponds, rivers, the ocean etc.:<sup>47</sup>

There where "hardness" is known, there is earth, as in the case of a plateau, rock, mountains etc.; there where the earth element is absent, as in the case of the wind, etc., hardness is likewise absent. Or, everything which is liquid is [in the final analysis] constituted by water, as oil, ghee, milk etc. have the nature of water.

Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha concludes, with respect to the body, that it is not immediately clear "by perception alone" exactly which "qualities"

that are manifested in the appearance of the body belong to which elements: "one may not conclude, without the aid of inference, which of the four elements, earth etc. constitute the body."<sup>48</sup>

It is also pointed out by Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha that the prāmaṇa-pratyakṣa itself cannot justify the denial of other means of correct cognition, anumāna etc. He quotes Dharmakīrti in this respect: "As what is both the means and what is not the means of correct cognition are in a similar situation, i.e., isolated from anything else, another means of correct cognition in fact exists."<sup>49</sup> In other words, the very truth of the validity of perception is based on a petitio principii. The Cārvāka response to this criticism is typical of the central debates between the various schools of Indian thought: Cārvāka charges the upholders of anumāna with a petitio principii themselves. Cārvāka maintains that in the case of inferring fire from smoke -- based on the vyāpti "where there is smoke, there is fire, as in the kitchen but not in the lake" -- what is actually being apprehended is not the real fire but the "fire" as part of the universal formula of the vyāpti. Hence, we are simply apprehending what has already been apprehended:<sup>50</sup>

If a particular object is to be established then the relation of invariable concomitance between it and the reason cannot be established. We may infer fire but cannot infer the particular fire which belongs to the hill in question. If we infer fire in general then we apprehend what has been already apprehended. It is like doing what has been done. Moreover, fire, having no peculiar trait of its own exists nowhere. Hence the talk of inference is an absurdity.

In the Bhoḡa Kārikā and its commentary the rebuttal of the Cārvāka position is restricted to ontological issues concerning the dehātma-vāda. Sadyojyoti introduces the Cārvāka position in opposition to the

Buddhists' unwillingness to accept a separate cognizer; the Cārvākas accept that there is a separate and conscious "bhoktr" of cognitive acts -- however, they identify this conscious Enjoyer with the body. The "body" is understood by Cārvāka in a twofold sense as both "body" and "consciousness". The body is specifically defined as a modified aggregate (vikāra -samāhāra) of the four material elements, earth, water, fire and air (with ākāśa apparently being left out because it is imperceptible).<sup>51</sup> Consciousness is said to be manifested (abhivyakti) as a "modified characteristic of the body" (kāyasyaiva parināmaviśeṣana).<sup>52</sup> Aghora Śiva provides the example traditionally used to explain the manner in which a phenomenon like "consciousness" can arise from something "unconscious" and "material"; fermenting agents in the production of alcohol are said to have the "ability" or "capacity" (śakti) to intoxicate. The fermenting agents qua "material elements", when in one state, do not exhibit the "quality" of being able to intoxicate; while in another state, they do. Likewise, argues Cārvāka, the material elements combine together to form the body; once the proper combination is reached, the elements possess the ability to manifest consciousness.<sup>53</sup> The Cārvāka base this analogy on the perceptual observation that consciousness is seen only so long as the body is infused with the vital forces (i.e. prāna etc.).

The principle appealed to by the Cārvāka in the identification of consciousness with the body is simply stated: "it is improper to postulate something imperceptible when something [perceptible already] exists (drste sambhavatyadrṣṭaparikalpanā na nyāyyā iti)."<sup>54</sup> Elsewhere this principle is expressed in a manner which emphasizes the conception of causality: "that in the presence of which is seen something else is recognized to be the cause of the latter (yadyasmin satyeva sandṛṣṭam

tadiṣṭam tasya kāraṇam).<sup>55</sup> Sadyojyoti begins his verse introducing the Cārvāka position with the statement, "just on account of the cause" which stands for both this principle as well as the body.

Sadyojyoti criticizes this view on the grounds of the pratyakṣa-pramāṇa that consciousness cannot be identified with material, perceptual objects like pots and so forth. He claims that the Cārvāka can provide no proof of such an identification between consciousness and the body, as the "reason" -- wherever there is the body, there consciousness is seen -- is too general, as in the case of the corpse: the body is present but there is no consciousness. Ultimately Sadyojyoti is basing himself on the position that the body's vital activity (ceṣṭitā) or non-activity is dependent on the presence or non-presence of the self, which is separate from the body.<sup>56</sup> This criticism is particularly directed against the Cārvāka position that "consciousness" is seen to arise only as a result of conception, i.e., the material conjunction of sperm and ovum which develops into the foetus qua the locus of consciousness. The Śaivite argues<sup>57</sup> that conception does not indicate that the conjunction of consciousness and the body are coterminous, but merely indicates that consciousness is prior to the body; "memory" exists prior to conception (śuklaśonitasamyogātprāgapi)<sup>58</sup> since at the time of the animated activity of the newborn child, the child's movements presuppose a memory of beneficial or harmful things, indicating that intentional activity (prayatna) precedes bodily behavior (pravṛtti). The newborn child, for instance, immediately wants to breastfeed and cries when not allowed to do so. Aghora Śiva adds the further argument, again based on the pratyakṣa-pramāṇa, that

consciousness and the body cannot be identified as one and the same entity based on the example of the perception of pain caused by some external factor; the sensation itself is experienced "in the body," proving that there can be no strict "identification" of the body and consciousness -- i.e., being of the same nature (ātmakatva). If there were this identification, pain would always be experienced exactly and only at the locale of the body where the cause of the pain occurs.<sup>59</sup>

The body itself, together with the experiences of "sukhaduḥkhādi" associated with it as bhāvas of the buddhi and so forth, is "an object of enjoyment" (bhogyatva) for the soul.<sup>60</sup> As an object of the soul's consciousness, the body is what is "grasped"; therefore, the body cannot be that which does the grasping or enjoying. Arguing against the Sārvāka in this manner, Sadyojyoti employs an argument shared by the Advaitin Śaṅkara, who points out the logical necessity in there being a radical distinction between the "subject," and the "object." For Śaṅkara, consciousness cannot be a "quality" (dharmatva) of the body, as the body is an "object" (viśayatva) of consciousness. Śaṅkara brings forth a simple argument to defend this view: it is contradictory for something to act upon itself (svātmani kriyāvirodhāt): "Fire is hot indeed but does not burn itself, and the acrobat, well trained as he may be, cannot mount his own shoulders."<sup>61</sup> In his Śaivism in Philosophical Perspective K. Sivaraman describes this notion in more exacting terms:<sup>62</sup>

The known categories of the object cannot be applied to what forms the very precondition of objectivity itself. The self being a transcendental condition of experience cannot be evidenced in the same manner in which any content of experience becomes evident to our understanding. It is like the sense organ being expected to turn its gaze at the seer by whom and at whose

service it is able to see.

Concerning the nature of consciousness, the Śaivite and the Cārvāka view certain "evidence" in a manner which leads to different conclusions. Take, for instance, the two statements, "I am short" and "This is my body." According to Cārvāka, "I am short" appositionally indicates that the self and the body are one entity, i.e., belong to the same locus (sāmānādhikaraṇa); while "This is my body" (mama deho 'yam) does not indicate the separation of the body and the self but is merely a "metaphorical" (aupacārika) manner of referring to the embodied self. The Śaivite, on the other hand, claims that the first statement "I am short" is actually the metaphorical statement while the second statement, "This is my body" actually describes the correct state of affairs, i.e., the separation of the soul and body.<sup>63</sup>

Aghora Śiva states the final argument against the Cārvāka concerning the theory of consciousness. This argument is centered around the "four stages of life": infancy, adolescence, adulthood and old age. Accordingly, each "bodily" stage is considered to be separate (vibhinna) because of the difference in the transformation (pariṇāma viśeṣaṇa); these changes are said to involve the destruction of the previous stages due to the repeated transformations. Aghora Śiva puts the question before the Cārvāka: if you identify the self with the body, how can and does one remember previous stages in one's life, since these former stages no longer exist? The Mṛgendra Āgama, for instance, voices this same criticism: "[The body], exists as a characteristic of a transformational process (pariṇāmasya vaiśiṣṭyāt); No! This would not account for memory."<sup>64</sup>

According to this criticism the Śaivite is taking the Cārvāka extremely literally: "transformations" of the body apply to particular cognitions as well as life stages. The Cārvākas, claims Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha, maintain that "consciousness" in the condition of living beings is an "effect" of the transformation of a collection of elements (vidhabhūtapariṇāmakṛta); as these respective changes are repeated effects of the transformations of the elements which constitute the body, the successiveness in experience and the destruction of former experiential "states" is just a characteristic or quality of transformation (pariṇāma) itself -- there is no reason to attribute cognitive and experiential changes to anything else, such as the soul. The Śaivite replies that, if one holds that the transformation is itself a quality of the successive cognitions (saṃkramasamvedana viśeṣasya), i.e., if one claims that the particular consciousness which accompanies each object is a product of a certain transformation, memory becomes an impossibility: in order for there to be memory transitory cognitions cannot be based on something unstable (pariṇāmatva), due to the separateness of each successive moment which is characteristic of something unstable or transformative (pariṇāmaviśeṣānām kramabhāvinām bhinnatvāt). This clearly means that it becomes impossible to remember an experience which no longer exists in another experience and even whether the former experience belonged to someone else or not (asamviditasyānya-viditasya cānyānāsmaranāt). In addressing this argument against the Cārvāka the Śaivite is almost attributing a kṣanabhaṅgavāda at the basis of the Cārvāka's dehātmavāda.



In concluding the argument against the Cārvāka over the role of memory and the self qua consciousness, the Mr.gendra Āgama puts forth the Śaivite view succinctly:<sup>65</sup>

And the self may not be said to be without memory, for it is evident to all. Hence, there must be one who remembers, apart from the body.

Since the Mr.gendra Āgama describes "memory" as based on something "stable", i.e., the self, and describes memory as a "quality" of the self, a certain amount of clarification is called for. Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha explains that the successively occurring cognitions (saṅkramajñāna) belong to the buddhi and not technically to the soul's consciousness. Aghora Śiva further adds the quote: "The one who unites (anusanghātr) these cognitions is just of the form of an agent (kartr)... established as the soul." According to this quote "the body", which is characterized by continuous transformation or alteration (asakṛtpariṇāmitva), is set in opposition to the stable experiencer (anubhāvitr), the "conjoiner" who, in the presence of certain objects, "joins" certain cognitions or joins different cognitions together. "Memory" is thus just a conjoining activity.<sup>66</sup>

Sadyojyoti closes his criticism of the Cārvāka with a criticism of the doctrine which holds that the senses are sufficient for explaining the origin of consciousness, the Indriyacaitanyavāda. (BK, 72B-73A). The senses, argues Sadyojyoti, cannot be considered to be identical with consciousness, or be consciousness itself qua "bhoga", as they are simply the means (karṇa) in the presentation of the object of consciousness (bhogyatva). Aghora Śiva adds that the sense organs qua "karṇa" cannot be the agents whereby consciousness comes about since the agent

must be distinct from the agency as the sword, for example, is distinct from the one who engages it. The soul is the agent and is said to be the cause of the "engagements in" and "cessations of" all agentive acts (sarvānyākāraka-pravṛttinivṛttihetutva). Aghora Śiva quotes a passage to illustrate this "non-engaged engagement" on the analogy of God's participation in agentive activity: "The Lord is the one responsible for the engagements in and cessations of agentive activities; the Lord is the unengaged one who is the agent responsible for the causative acts."<sup>67</sup>

#### 5. The Debate with Sāṃkhya

The Śaivite authors including Sadyojyoti' tend to deal with Sāṃkhya within a purely ontological context as a criticism of the Sāṃkhya conception of prakṛti and its relation to "puruṣa", which the Śaivites interpret as the individual soul. From the context of this criticism the argument between the two doctrines either remains more epistemological and treats the specific relation between the soul and buddhi or it becomes more soteriological and deals with the conception of mokṣa. The Śaivite is willing to accept points of agreement with the Sāṃkhya doctrine and even, in the case of Mārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha, to quote sections of the Sāṃkhya Kārikā as authoritative.<sup>68</sup> However, in matters which they disagree over, all Śaivite authors agree in condemning the Sāṃkhya for the same reasons.

In the Bhoga Kārikā and its commentary Sadyojyoti and Aghora Śiva criticise the Sāṃkhya epistemological doctrine that the buddhi is itself

the locus of empirical consciousness. Aghora Śiva cites Sāṃkhya Kārikā, verse 20, at the outset of the epistemological criticism of Sāṃkhya; the verse describes "puruṣa" as a "witness" (sākṣitva), as possessed of isolation or freedom (kaivalya), as "indifferent" (madhyasthyā), as a mere "spectator" (draṣṭṛ) and as inactive (akartṛbha).<sup>69</sup> According to the Śaivite interpretation of the Sāṃkhya, the soul or "puruṣa" is thought of as a "bhokṭṛ" of empirical consciousness but not as a "karṭṛ" involved in this empirical consciousness.<sup>70</sup> The Sāṃkhya explains its notion of the "puruṣa" as bhokṭṛ by means of a doctrine of "reflection" (pratibimbavāda) according to which the buddhi is construed as the means or matrix (dvāram) through which "the subject" and "the object", i.e., "the soul" and "the contents of the buddhi", are brought together as if in a mirror.<sup>71</sup> The buddhi functions as the mirroring factor (chāyā) for the conjunction of its contents and the soul; as a result of this conjunction of the two reflections, the buddhi appears as if it is of a conscious nature. Aghora Śiva summarizes the Sāṃkhya doctrine of "reflection":<sup>72</sup>

The "formal connection" (ākārānuṣaṅga) is just a "contact" (samsleṣa) of the two "images" (chāyā) or "reflections" which are of the nature of the conscious and the unconscious; due to this connection, the souls, enjoyers and bonds are transformed into objects of enjoyment through the instrumentality of the cognitive activity of the buddhi, which itself functions in a mirroring manner and is called enjoyment. It is just for this reason that the Samsārin makes the mistake of seeing the soul and so forth in what is not the soul etc.

One of the analogies used by the Sāṃkhya to describe this doctrine of reflection is given as the reflection of the moon in water; in this case the water itself appears to manifest the light which actually belongs to the moon.<sup>73</sup> Aghora Śiva criticizes this on the grounds

that it draws a false comparison, since the soul and the buddhi are of radically different natures -- one of a conscious and one of an unconscious nature -- while the moon and the water are of the same nature both are by nature unconscious. The moon analogy is meant to explain more than just the connection between the soul and the buddhi in terms of the idea of the soul's consciousness; although the soul is, according to the Sāṃkhya, "in some sense" a bhoktr, it is a completely uninvolved bhoktr. The Sāṃkhya "soul" has no real connection to bhoga. The buddhi is said to be the locus of bhoga. All soteriological activity occurs in the buddhi itself as the reflection of the soul qua bhoktr and the buddhi qua locus of the bhoga.

With the criticism of the moon analogy Aghora Śiṅya has the Sāṃkhya appeal to another analogy in order to explain the unengaged enjoyment of the puruṣa; <sup>74</sup>

Just as there takes place a movement in the iron in the proximity of the unmoved magnet, so there takes place a movement in Nature in the proximity of the unmoved soul.

In upholding the uninvolvedness of the soul in the activity of the buddhi Sāṃkhya appeals to this magnet analogy in order to avoid attributing agency, kartṛtva, to the puruṣa: "agency entails engagement in activity (kriyā-veśā); if agency is attributed to the soul, the soul becomes subject to transformation (parināmatva)."<sup>75</sup> The objection brought against the magnet analogy adopted by the Sāṃkhya is based on a theory of causality. According to the Śaivite the agent is not to be identified with the activity (kriyā); the terminology adopted to describe this state of affairs is rather that the agent "does not reside in (veśā) or have its locus in the activity". Rather, just the

power or ability (śaktitva) to effect activity resides in the activity.

In the case of the magnet, the magnet has the ability to cause the iron filings to move; in the movement of the iron filings the magnet remains the agent and its ability to cause the movement becomes engaged in the activity of the movement. Hence, the soul qua agent remains ontologically unmodified (pariṇāta) in the activity of empirical consciousness.

In a last attempt to defend the karṭṛtva of the soul and to attribute karṭṛtva to the buddhi, although the buddhi itself is not by nature constituted by consciousness, Sāṃkhya appeals to the analogy of the calf: "As the non-conscious milk 'acts' for the sake of the growth of the calf, so prakṛti [qua buddhi] 'acts' for the sake of the release of the puruṣa."<sup>76</sup> According to Sāṃkhya, as long as the puruṣa has not attained soteriological perfection through the "discernment" (vivekajñāna) of the separation of puruṣa from prakṛti, the prakṛti-based buddhi continues to function or act "for another" (parārthapravṛtti), as it is dependent on the puruṣa. However, even though it is for the sake of another, it still functions by itself for this purpose, just as the milk flows by itself for the benefit of the cow. Aghora Śiva turns the analogy around and argues that buddhi qua prakṛti is not "autonomous" because -- even though it is unconscious-- it is superintended over by consciousness, just as the flowing of the milk is superintended over by the conscious cow. Superintendance (adhiṣṭhitatva) in this case implies "instigation" (pravartakatva); even though the activity is unconscious, the "instigator" must be considered to be conscious, as the cow-milk analogy points out.

These arguments against the Sāṃkhya conception of the relation

of the soul to the buddhi which Aghora Śiva brings forth in his commentary on the Bhoga Kārikā are based on his commentary on the Mrgendra Āgama Vṛtti. Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha offers arguments defending the notion that the soul is actively engaged in the activity of the buddhi; as an illustration of the succinctness of Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha's argumentation we cite the following passage:<sup>77</sup>

If the soul is not the bhoktr, what is the purpose of the body that is the locus of bhoga (bhogāyatana), the sense organs that are the instruments of this bhoga (bhogasādhana) the objects of bhoga (bhogārtha) and finally [as the culmination of all this], the bhoga, itself which is constituted by experience which is pleasurable or painful? As bhoga is necessarily accompanied by its locus (adhikaraṇa) and its instruments (sādhanasahitvatva) it is impossible to deny to the soul the status of being a bhoktr. Moreover, if the soul is a bhoktr, how can it not be an agent, kartr? If it is purely inactive (akartr) there is no justification for its conjunction with the instruments etc. (kaṇṭha etc.). Furthermore, since the soul is essentially constituted by both consciousness [qua being a bhoktr] and activity, to deny its agency is ipso facto to deny its consciousness.

Sadyojyoti and Aghora Śiva conclude the critique of Sāṃkhya with a soteriological criticism of the Sāṃkhya conception of mokṣa. According to Sāṃkhya all soteriological activity takes place on the level of the buddhi. Although the soul or puruṣa is said to be of a soteriologically "pure" nature (nirmalatva), the process of "mokṣa" that is restricted to the prakṛti-based sphere of the buddhi is said to be "for the purpose of the puruṣa". Mokṣa is thus defined as the ceasing of the activity that arises on account of prakṛti; this cessation arises out of account of the discrimination that is instigated by the buddhi through the "jñāna" designated bhāva. Verses 62 and 63 of the Sāṃkhya Kārikā describe the Sāṃkhya doctrine of mokṣa.<sup>78</sup>

Verily, not any spirit is bound, nor released, nor migrates; it is Prakṛti, the Primal Nature alone, abiding in manifold forms, that is bound, is released, and migrates.

By seven forms Prakṛti, the Primal Nature, binds herself by herself, by one form she releases herself for the deliverance of the Spirit.

The first objection brought forth against this conception of mokṣa is stated by Sadyojyoti in verse 76A-76B: given that the soul or "puruṣa" is considered undefiled (nirmalatva) at all times, whether in the bound state or the liberated state, there can be no distinction between the bound and the liberated soul, since the soul is at all times "unconnected" to that which could defile it. As a result, the liberated and the unliberated states cannot be distinguished. Secondly, even if we allow the Sāṃkhya position that the activity of the buddhi and prakṛti "are for the sake of" the soul, which remains "unconnected" to this activity, there is nothing to prevent the activity from taking place for one who is already liberated, as the soul has no control over the activities of the prakṛti. Thirdly, and finally, if all karmic activity were limited to the sphere of the prakṛti-constituted buddhi, this activity would apply to all souls indiscriminately, as there would be no restricting-factor involved in linking a certain soul with a certain buddhi. As a result, liberation again becomes an impossibility given the Sāṃkhya doctrine.

## Chapter V

### NOTES

<sup>1</sup>Most of the quotes taken from Buddhist sources that appear in the BKV are found as well in the MAD and are identified by M. Hulin as taken from Dignāga's Pramāṇasamuccaya. Since Aghora Śiva also discusses the arthakriyāvāda we must assume that Dharmakīrti is as well criticized as Dignāga was unfamiliar with the concept of arthakriyā; cf. Dignāga On Perception, trans. and annotation by Massaki Hattori, Harvard Oriental Series, Vol. 47 (Cambridge, Massachusetts: Harvard University Press, 1968), p. 80. It may be argued that the concept of arthakriyā as conceived by later Buddhist writers was actually latent in Dignāga's conception of the distinction between the "svalakṣaṇa", the unconceptualized particular, and the "sāmānyalakṣaṇa", the conceptualized object or event. One of the marks of the svalakṣaṇa, according to Dharmakīrti, is its arthakriyāśakti while the sāmānyalakṣaṇa possesses no such capacity; cf. Hattori, p. 80.

Concerning epistemology, the Sakarajnanavada is held by the Sautrāntikas and some Yogācāras (some Yogācāras also hold a Nirakara-jnanavada); cf. Hattori, p. 88.

For a discussion of the distinction between the two doctrines, cf. also Bimal K. Matilal, Perception (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1986), p. 151. Kamalaśīla, for instance, maintains that both schools accept the basic principle of the sākāravijñānavāda; the Sautrāntikas, however, accept the independent existence of external objects while the Yogācāras do not (cf. TS, v. 1344).

<sup>2</sup>The Nyāyamañjarī of Jayanta Bhaṭṭa, ed. Surya Narayana Sukla. Kashmir Sanskrit Series No. 106 (Benares: Jaya Krishna Das Haridas Gupta, 1935), p. 15.

<sup>3</sup>The Aphorisms of the Mīmāṃsā by Jaimini, with the Commentary of Śavara-Svamin, ed. Pandita Mahesvarachandra Nyayaratna (Calcutta: Bibliotheca Indica, 1873), p. 9.

<sup>4</sup>Ibid., p. 9 and Shabara-bhāṣya, trans. Ganganatha Jha. Gaekwad's Oriental Series, No. LXVI, 2 Vol. (Baroda: Oriental Institute, 1933), p. 13.

<sup>5</sup>Matilal points out that the terminological distinctions used by Dignāga in his Pramāṇasamuccaya to designate the "object-aspect" and the "cognizing-aspect" are, respectively, "arthābhāsa" and "svābhāsa", which are more commonly referred to as "grāhyākāra" and "grāhakākāra" by the Yogācāra authors: "Later on this arthābhāsa transpired as arthākāra, the 'object-form' of the cognition, in the writings of post-Dignāga expo-



nents and hence the nickname sākāravādin (sākāra = 'awareness with an object') was given to this school." Cf. Matilal, Perception, p. 151.

<sup>6</sup>The context of this debate concerns the theory of the relation between consciousness and its object. Sabara extends the self-evidential character of śabda qua Vedic "scripture" into other spheres of cognition; hence, in the sphere of perception he upholds a type of realism (arthālambanaḥ pratyayaḥ) wherein actual perceptions are in themselves valid (satpratyakṣam) -- and can only be proven to be false "after the fact" of the cognitive event. Kumārila describes this state of affairs: "Therefore, the authoritative character of a conception recognized through the mere fact of its having the character of 'cognition', can be set aside only by the contrary nature of its object or by the recognition of discrepancies of its causes." Cf. Ślokovārttika, trans. p. 46.

The Buddhists, on the other hand, because of their more ontological commitment to the kṣanikavāda, hold that perception has no ontological support (nirālambanaḥ pratyayaḥ) and in itself simply represents the false sphere of the undifferentiated and unconceptualized svalakṣana.

<sup>7</sup>The Aphorisms of the Mīmāṃsā, p.9: "yadyarthākārabuddhiḥ syāt; nirākārā tu no buddhiḥ, akāraḥ bahyo rthaḥ sa hi bahirdeśasambaddhaḥ pratyakṣamupalabhyate."

<sup>8</sup>Ibid., p. 9.

<sup>9</sup>Sabara says that the cognition becomes cognized (buddhi jñāyate); terminologically, the buddhi becomes "jñāta". Buddhi (ālambhana) is apratyakṣa -- because it has no "ākāra"; (therefore, it is only open to anun Buddhi can only be said to have akāra) when it has an object: "Further, the form of the cognition is never apprehended except in terms of the object (sākāram cārtham pratyakṣam evāvagacchāmaḥ." cf., ibid. p. 10.

<sup>10</sup>If we were to speak of it in terms of "levels", level one constituting vyavasāya-jñāna and level two constituting avyavasāya-jñāna, buddhi-jñāna qua "bhogyā" would be comparable to the level of vyavasāya-jñāna. Such is the manner in which Aghora Śiva tends to construe this activity. The buddhi is the locus for a certain type of cognition (jñāna) which leads, so to speak, "a life of its own". The jñāna terminology is used to explain the events which take place in the buddhi; this "buddhi-jñāna" then becomes an object of the soul and comes under the category of "ātma-jñāna", i.e. "bhoga" or "anubhava" and is more comparable to a avyavasāya-jñāna. Of course, in this section of the BK under discussion this is not Sadyojyoti's concern; rather, the separate existence of bhoga is meant to establish the radical distinction between the bhoktr and the bhogyā.

<sup>11</sup>BKV. p. 30 quoted from Dharmakīrti, Pramāṇavārttika, ed. Swami Dwarikādas Sāstri (Varanasi: Bauddha-Bharati, 1968), p. 78.

<sup>12</sup>The MĀ is very concise in its criticism. The first and no

doubt most important argument attributes a "category mistake" to the Buddhists who are said to confuse consciousness with the instruments whereby consciousness becomes manifested (i.e. senses, manas, etc.) and thus confuse the impermanence of the instruments with the impermanence of consciousness. The MA employs two other basic arguments: it is wrong to attribute impermanence to the self since we in fact enjoy the fruits of previous activities and since we remember previous experiences.

<sup>13</sup> MĀV, p. 100: "If the soul exists, there is a conception of an "other"; this distinction of the "self" [i.e., as "what is mine"] and the "other" engenders the attachment to possessions and animosity (yaduktam "ātmani sati parasamjñā svaparavibhāgātparigrahadveṣau. anayossampratibaddhāssarve doṣāḥ prajāyante" iti). The quote is from Pramānavārttika, p. 77.

<sup>14</sup> MĀV, pp. 102-103: "nanu sadṛśaparāparakṣanotpattivipralabdhatvāt sthairyamadhyāropitamityuktam."

<sup>15</sup> Dignāga, On Perception, p. 28.

<sup>16</sup> Ibid., p. 28 (v.9a): "or [it can be maintained that] the self-cognition or the cognition cognizing itself (svasamvitti) is here the result [of the act of cognizing]." Dharmakīrti describes the inner perception of emotive states as manovijñāna and the self-cognition as sarvacittacaitanam ātma samvedanam. There is a sense in which svasamvedana is co-temporal with every cognitive state, which thus provides the continuity in experience, as Dharmakīrti states: "All (simple) consciousness, as well as all mental phenomenon, are self-conscious." Cf. Stcherbatsky, Buddhist Logic, I, 163. For a discussion of the Buddhist notion of svasamvedana, cf. Hattori, pp. 93-94 and Matilal, Perception, pp. 149-153.

<sup>17</sup> Of course there is a difficulty in explaining continuity in the svalakṣana sphere of experience, as svasamvedana qua manovijñāna appears to infuse some kind of conceptuality into the svalakṣana experience. It is exactly this cryptic problem in Dignāga which has led M. Nagatomi to refer to it as "a conundrum in the Buddhist pramāna system." Cf. M. Nagatomi, "Arthakriyā," Adyar Library Bulletin, 31-2, (1967-1968), 243-260.

<sup>18</sup> "The resulting cognition arises bearing in itself the form of the cognized object and [thus] is understood to include the act of [of cognizing] (savyāpāra)." Cf. Hattori, p. 28. The Buddhist is arguing against the Nyāyayika who construes the kāraṇa qua kāraṇa as separate both ontologically and temporally from the kārya.

<sup>19</sup> v. 10; Hattori, p. 29.

<sup>20</sup> For the reasons behind the two alternatives, cf. Matilal, Perception, pp. 151-152

<sup>21</sup>Cf. Śabara, trans. pp. 26-31.

<sup>22</sup>Unlike Śabara, Kumārila Bhāṭṭa does not construe sukhaduhkha etc. as "properties" of the soul; cf. Śloka-vārttika, trans. p. 385.

<sup>23</sup>Bhoktrtva and kartrtva must be included if the sādhana-sādhyasambandha is to be established (v.4).

<sup>24</sup>These two positions are respectively known as vikriyānityatva and ucchedānityatva. Kumārila states: "The applicability of the term anitya applied to the ātman is not rejected if the non-eternality is one of modification [of the eternal soul] and not of its destruction."

Cf. p. 385. Parthasarāthi uses more standard philosophical vocabulary to describe this state of affairs: the soul is nitya in its svarūpa and anitya and anitya in its upādhi.

<sup>25</sup>In order to explain the specific ontological manner in which the soul qua kartr acts (kriyate) in activity (kriyā), v.75 lays down the principle that the kartr need not always be the locus in which the activity adheres; actions are only brought about by the soul in its capacity as a superintending factor (adhiṣṭhāna or instigator (prayojika) [v.75] and is so involved in activities qua kartr in a different manner: for example, through movement, language, proximity etc. (vs. 95-96).

<sup>26</sup>Kumārila does not accept a subtle body (cf. v. 62); transformation occurs at the level of "avasthā" with the soul taking on different physical bodies qua "avasthā".

<sup>27</sup>Cf. Śāntarakṣita, Tattvasamgraha (contra Nyāya), pg. 213-214). Kamalaśīla quotes Uddyōtakara (Nyāyavārttika, 3.1.1). Śāntarakṣita objects to this view since nityatva and vibhūtva etc. do not become manifest in ahamkāra; rather, the cognitions of physical attributes, like "fair complexion" etc., become manifest.

Cf. note 40 for chapter IV above concerning the notion of ahamkāra as held by Vātsyāyana. In Vātsyāyana's case it can be argued that he does attribute a certain "personalism" to the soul, even though this is not his intention. On the one hand, in his commentary on 4.2.44 he makes it clear that the "I" notion is only constitutive of the soul insofar as it has cognition; in the state of release there is no cognition. All cognition is a result of the condition of embodiment: "The conditions (necessary for the production of knowledge) are there only if there is a body produced as a result of adrsta which is the substratum of actions (ceṣṭā), senses (indriya) and pleasure and pain. Thus cognitions are invariably produced (only in the presence of such a body)." Cf. Nyāya-Sūtra with Vātsyāyana's Bhāṣya, p. 370. In his commentary on 1.1.22 Vātsyāyana further argues against construing mokṣa as the svasamvedana [which would definitely involve a form of ahampratyaya] of eternal bliss. On the other hand, however, Vātsyāyana describes "the eternal soul" as sarvadraṣṭṛtva, sarvabhoktrtva, sarvajñātrtā and sarvānubhāvin (comm. on 1.1.22 p. 20); since the ahampratyaya leads to the inferential conception

of a permanent self qua substratum of the fleeting cognitions, it appears that this ahampratyaya also applies to the "more eternal" qualities of the soul such as sarvadraṣṭṛtva etc.

<sup>28</sup>Slokavārttika (ātma-vāda, v. 107), trans. p. 401: [According to the Bhāṣya] the soul is directly cognizable by the notion of 'I'." In v. 132 a similar idea is expressed: "The notion of 'I' must always (be accepted to) refer to the soul (ātma-bhīmānenetyahambuddhirdhruvātmani)."

<sup>29</sup>MĀV, p. 99: "cideva hīyam kṣanikā tattadarthaprakāśarūpā anubhavasiddhā natvetadvyatirikta ātma vidyate samvedanavyatirikṭasya bhedanāpratibhasanāt."

<sup>30</sup>Ibid. "samvedana eva kṣanike jaladhārāpravāhavatsaddrśaparāparot-pattibhramāt vikalpena sthairyamadhyaropyata ityavidyājanitā seyamatmadrṣṭih." Also see Kamalaśīla's commentary on vv. 1920-1922 which argue against the position of the Cārvāka that all consciousness proceeds from sense-organs and objects: "If all cognition were apprehended only through the sense organs and the objects, -- then our assertion would have been an audacious one; as a matter of fact, however, in Dreams and other states there appears Subjective Consciousness envisaging the Blue and objects, which subjective consciousness is apprehended even when there is no Sense-organ nor any object in the shape of colour, etc. (yadī sarvameva jñānamindriyārthabalenaiva jñāyate tadā sāhasam bhavet, yāvata svapradyavasthāyāṃ nīlādipratibhasam manovijñānaśatyapi cakṣurādīndriye vinā 'pi rūpadinārthena samvedyate)."<sup>31</sup> Cf. Tattvasamgraha of Śānt araksita with the Commentary, trans. pp. 919-921, ed. p. 345-347.

<sup>31</sup>Nyāya Sūtras, p. 18. The two inferences Sadyojyoti employs to prove the existence of the soul are categorized as the sāmānyatodrṣṭa form, i.e., inferring something imperceptible (adrṣṭa) from something perceptible (drṣṭa). Gautama (1.1.5) subdivides inference into three categories: pūrvavat (lit. "that which has the antecedent") is an inference from the cause to the effect, as from the viewing of clouds one infers that it will rain; śeṣavat is from the effect to the cause, as when one infers that it has rained from the viewing of swollen rivers; and sāmānyatodrṣṭa inference occurs when the perception of an object which is perceptible provides the basis for the establishment of something imperceptible, as the movement of the sun is inferred from the perception of its location in different places. Both the pūrvavat and śeṣavat inferences concern perceptual objects while the sāmānyatodrṣṭa only concerns imperceptible objects. In his commentary on 1.1.5 Vātsyāyana subdivides these basic three kinds of inference into two alternative ways of viewing them, i.e. temporally and spatially (or logically). With respect to the sāmānyatodrṣṭa inference, the temporal manner would concern the movement of the sun whereas the spatial or logical manner would concern something like the postulation of the soul from the fact of cognitive qualities, which is more in line with Sadyojyoti's use of the sāmānyatodrṣṭa inference: "When the relation between the probans and the probandum being imperceptible, the probandum is known from a probans

having the same nature with any other object. As, for example, self from desire, etc. Desire etc. are qualities. Qualities reside in substances. Therefore, that which is the substratum of these (i.e. desire etc.) is the self." Cf. Nyāya Sūtras, p. 18. With respect to the example of the sun's movement as given by Gautama, Keith claims that the sun is inferred to move based on the analogy of ordinary motion even though the sun's movement is not open to perception; cf. Arthur Berriedale Keith, Indian Logic and Atomism (New York: Greenwood Press, 1968), p. 89. Kisor Chakraborti, however, argues that the sāmānyatodrṣṭa is an inference based on seeing or proving (drṣṭa) the universal (sāmānyatā) two things must necessarily share and not on an analogy; cf. Kisor Kumar Chakraborti, The Logic of Gautama, Society for Asian and Comparative Philosophy, Monograph no. 5 (Honolulu: The University Press of Hawaii, 1977), pp. 14-31.

The sāmānyatodrṣṭa inference is generally accepted by the other schools. For example, in v. 6 of the Sāṃkhya Kārikā Īśvarakṛṣṇa accepts this form of inference: "sāmānyatastu drṣṭādātīndriyānām pratitiranumānāt..." Cf. The Sāṃkhyakārikā of Īśvarakṛṣṇa, p. 19. Sabara, as we have seen, accepts it when he uses the fact of "desire" to establish the nature of the soul; The Vaiśeṣika Sūtras (2.2.15 and 2.1.16) as well accept it. Even a Buddhist text, the Upāyahrdaya, a pre-Dignāga work, accepts the sāmānyatodrṣṭa inference; cf. G. Tucci, Pre-Dignāga Buddhist Texts on Logic from Chinese Sources, G.O.S., no. XLIX (Baroda: Oriental Institute, 1929), p. 14.

<sup>32</sup>By the later tradition, following Uddyotakara, the sāmānyatodrṣṭa inference was seen to include many forms of inference, including arthāpatti; cf. The Logic of Gotama, p. 16.

<sup>33</sup>MĀV, p. 100: yatsattatsarvaṃ kṣaṇikāṃ akṣaṇikasya kramayaugapadyabhyāṃ arthakriyā nupapatteḥ sattāvāṃ evāsiddhatvāt."

<sup>34</sup>MĀV, p. 100; quote from Pramāṇavārttika, p. 100: "arthakriyāsamartham yat tadatra paramārthasat asanto 'kṣaṇikāstasmāt-kramākramavirodhatah."

<sup>35</sup>Sastri, The Philosophy of Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika, pp. 191-194.

<sup>36</sup>T. Stcherbatsky, I, 86-87.

<sup>37</sup>The same argument is put forth in the MĀD, p. 104. As well, Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha gives the example of a "pot": it is both involved in many things and is one thing (MĀV, p. 104).

<sup>38</sup>The "jewels and the thread" example (manisūtravat) that many jewels are related to one thread is meant to illustrate the point that one object can be related to three different temporal events, the past, present and future; cf. Padarthadharmasamgraha, trans. p. 81-82. The classic example is that a ruby (padmarāga) remains the same and does not become different due to its association with the past and present; For a well presented discussion of this in a Buddhist

context, cf. Stcherbatsky, I. 203 and II, 21-24, 33-34.

<sup>39</sup> Another formulation of this is ajñātārthajñāpakam pramāṇam; since the object is always momentary, it always appears as a new event.

<sup>40</sup> Besides presenting the basic philosophical position of the Cārvāka as is corroborated by such works as the Brahmasūtrabhāṣya, Nyāyamañjarī and Tattvasamgraha, Mādhava in the Sarvadarśanasamgraha gives an account of the Cārvāka as an anti-Brahmanic and anti-theistic social movement dedicated to a form of hedonism: Mādhava sees this "social" aspect of Cārvāka as the expression of those who neglect the four traditionally accepted "puruṣārtha", i.e. kāma, artha, dharma and mokṣa -- accepting only the first two; cf. Sarvadarśanasamgraha, pp. 10-11. In the Brahmasūtrabhāṣya (3.3.5) Śaṅkara sees Cārvāka through its denial of a "separate" self, as denying the possibility of bondage and release both for the Pūrvamīmāṃsā, as it would deny the possibility of a separate self-attaining heaven and for the Vedānta, as it would deny the possibility of the identification of the self with Brahman: cf. Vedānta Sūtras with the Commentary of Śaṅkarācārya.

<sup>41</sup> Cf. Sadānanda, Vedāntasāra, trans. Swami Nikhilananda (Calcutta: Advaita Ashrama, 1974), 39. Although Jayanta Bhaṭṭa treats the śarīrātmavāda, indriya-caitanyavāda and the manascaitanyavāda, he only attributes the śarīrātmavāda to the Cārvāka. He also discusses the "Suśikṣita Cārvākas" who accept a "soul" which is distinct from the body but which perishes with the death of the body; cf. Nyāyamañjarī of Jayanta Bhaṭṭa, ed., II, 39.

<sup>42</sup> cf. Eli Franco, "Studies in the Tattvopaplavasimha," Journal of Indian Philosophy, 11 (1983), 147-166.

<sup>43</sup> Ibid., p. 148.

<sup>44</sup> It was generally assumed by the other schools that the pratyakṣa - only Cārvākas slipped anumāna in the side door. For example: "When he [Cārvāka] denies the existence of another world, he actually has resort to a proof called negation (anupalambha) [which is inferential knowledge]. Therefore, how can the Cārvāka be sane when he argues by means of inferential knowledge, while saying that inference is not valid knowledge." Cf. Mokṣakāragupta, Tarkabhāṣā, trans. Y. Kajiyama (Kyoto: Rinsen Books, 1966), p. 31. In his commentary on vv. 1482-1483 Kamalaśīla identifies a certain Puranda who is quoted as claiming that the Cārvāka accept inference in a limited sense as that which is held by most people in everyday affairs (lokaprasiddha-anumāna) but does not accept it to prove things beyond the worldly sphere (laukikamargātikramya-anumāna). Sāntarākṣita observes that the notion such as "the effect arises from the cause" etc. is accepted "in the world" -- i.e. by the person in the street; however, it is exactly such an idea, says Sāntarākṣita, that the early logicians used to found anumāna on. Consequently, he argues, if one accepts anumāna in a laukika sense one accepts it in a paralaukika sense

as well; cf. Tattvasamgraha, p. 738.

<sup>45</sup>MĀV, pp. 181-189.

<sup>46</sup>Nārāyaṇa Kantha attacks the pratyakṣaikapramānavāda mainly in terms of the discernment of the four elements constituting the body; without inference, it is impossible, he insists, to have a "synthetic view" (anvaya-grahanatva) of the totality of things within sphere of experience; cf. MĀV, pp. 188-189.

<sup>47</sup>MĀV, p. 188: "apī ca yatra kāthinyam sā prthivī sthalopalaparvatādivat. prthivyabhāve kāthinyasyābhāvaḥ. vāyvādāviva. yacca dravasvarūpam tājjalam tailaḥ; takṣīraderapyudakatvādityadyanvayagr-ahaṇamanumanāṅgam kalpanīyam."

<sup>48</sup>MĀV, p. 188: "[dehe] prthivyādibhūtacatuṣṭayārabdhatvamapi nānumānam vīna 'vagantum sakyam."

<sup>49</sup>MĀV, p. 189: "pramānetarasāmānyasthiteranyavīyogataḥ pramānāntarasad bhāva'iti."

<sup>50</sup>Jayanta Bhaṭṭa's Nyāya-Maṅjarī, trans. Janaki Vallabha Bhattacharya, Vol. I (Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1978), p. 247; cf. ed. p. 208: "viśeṣe 'nugamābhāvātsāmānye siddhasādhanāt/ tadvato 'nupapannatvadanumānakathā' kutah."

<sup>51</sup>"prthivyapastejovāyuriti", Tattvasamgraha of Śāntarakṣita, ed. p. 520.

<sup>52</sup>Just as "kāya eva" appears to be an original maxim or nyāya of the Cārvāka school, as it is cited by many commentators, so also this manner of describing consciousness as a "viśeṣa" of the body; eg., "caitanya viśiṣṭab kāyaḥ puruṣa iti" --cf. The Brahmasūtrasāṅkarubhāṣyam, ed. Narāyaṇa Rām Acharya (Bombay: Satyabhamabai Pandurang, 1948), p. 424 (on 3.3.53). Sāṅkara also refers to the Cārvāka notion of consciousness as a "quality" (dharmatva) of the body. Kamalaśīla on vv. 1858-1859 points out that some Cārvākas hold that consciousness is "produced out of" (utpadyate) the body while others hold that it is "manifested by" (abhivyajyate) the body; cf. Tattvasamgraha of Śāntarakṣita, p. 887.

<sup>53</sup>Kamalaśīla proffers an interesting argument against this Cārvāka position: "For instance, when one sees such disgusting things as the blood of a tiger, etc., there appears a manifestation in the mind of a cowardly person, in the shape of savour and so forth; and yet this does not make the said Subjective Consciousness a material effect of that blood." Cf. Tattvasamgraha, trans. p. 900.

<sup>54</sup>BKV, p. 36.

<sup>55</sup> Paṣkara Āgama, paśupaṭala, v. 61: SPB, p. 100 (yadyasmin sati sandr̥ṣtam tadīṣtam tasya kāraṇam). Sīvaḡrayogin expresses this slightly differently: "if something is seen where there is something else, the latter is sure to be the cause of the former (yadyasmin satyeva dr̥ṣyate tattasya kāraṇam dr̥ṣtam)." SPB, p. 97. Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha expresses it as: yasmin sati yasya bhāvaḥ yadabhāve cābhāvaḥ tattasyakāryam, MAV, p. 184. He gives the example of cold and the winter season. In the Brahmasūtrasāṅkarabhāṣya (3.3.51 and 3.3.52) we find a similar explanation of the reason adduced by the Cārvāka to defend their position, although the emphasis in this case is placed more on the relation between localities or loci than on the relation between cause and effect: wherever x exists only when y exists and does not exist when y does not exist, x is considered to be an "quality" (dharma) of y; for example, light and heat are considered to be qualities of fire (yadi yasminsati bhavatyasati ca na bhavati tattaddharmatvenādhyavastiyate yathā (gnidharmāvausṇyaprakāśau), Brahmasūtrasāṅkarabhāṣyam, ed. p. 424). The two sūtras which appear as 3.3.51 in Srikāṇṭha's Bhāṣya do not criticize Cārvāka but are treated as a reference in the relationship of individual and supreme consciousness in light of proper meditation. Indeed, nowhere in his Bhāṣya does Srikāṇṭha take up a criticism of Cārvāka; cf. The Brahma-Mīmāṃsā with Srikāṇṭha-Sivāchārya's Commentary, ed L. Srinivasacharya. Government Oriental Library Series, Bibliotheca Sanskrita No. 30 (Mysore: Government Oriental Library, 1903), pp.

<sup>56</sup> For instance, cf. Paṣkara Āgama, paśupaṭala, v. 68; SPB, p. 99; "yadbhāvayadabhāvābhyāṁ cestāceṣṭe bhajettanuḥ/ taccaitanyaṁiti proktaṁvyatiriktaṁ tu dehataḥ."

<sup>57</sup> MAD, p. 190.

<sup>58</sup> In this case the "sūklaśonita" implies the foetus (kalana), a term specifically referring to the embryo a short time after conception (kāryāśrayiṅaśca kalalādyāḥ, Sāṁkhya Kārikā, v. 43).

<sup>59</sup> Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha uses a similar example: we see a small cognition (alpajñāna) in a large body (mahākāya) and a large thought (mahāmati) in a small body (alpakāya); cf. MAD, p. 187. M. Hulin gives the illustration of a mouse being smaller than the crocodile, which indicates that consciousness is not in direct proportion to bodily size; cf. Mrgendragama; Sections de la Doctrine, p.164.

<sup>60</sup> In BK, v. 72 provides the reason, using the phrase "jīvacchāyopabhogyatvāt" as a reason for holding that the body is an unconscious material object; the term "-upabhogyatvāt" is clear enough although "jīva-chāyā" is more difficult to understand in this context as it smacks of the Sāṁkhya doctrine which construes the buddhi as a chāyā of the puruṣa; this doctrine is criticized by Sadyojyoti in vv. 74B-77B. Aghora Siva explains the idea of the chāyā in v. 72 as referring to the reflective or mirroring activity of the buddhi in its



"presentation" of objects to the soul; qua "object", therefore, the body has the same status as any other "object" and no more privileged access to consciousness than any other "object". "Chāyā" in this Saivite sense is a one-way mirroring, the presentation of objects in the buddhi, whereas with the Sāṃkhya, the chāyā is a two-way mirroring, the buddhi presenting objects and the subject in one activity.

<sup>61</sup>Vedānta Sūtras, p. 271.

<sup>62</sup>Śivaraman, Śaivism in Philosophical Perspective, p. 271.

<sup>63</sup>Cf. SPB, pp. 97-99. The "corpse" provides a similar use of the same phenomenon to prove the opposite conclusions. The Saivite sees the corpse as proof that the physical body is dependent on consciousness for its continued existence. The Cārvākas, on the other hand, claim that when the body is no longer functioning as a body, ie. when the "prāṇa" is no longer in tact, there is no consciousness; death is said to be the departure (nirgama) of the elemental bio-force.

<sup>64</sup>MĀ, p. 186: "pariṇāmasya vaiśiṣṭyādasti cenna smṛtistadā."

<sup>65</sup>Ibid., p. 187: "nāpyevaṃ supratītatvāt smartā kāyataro 'styatah."

<sup>66</sup>The Cārvāka, however, might reply that the fact remains, the cognitions according to the Saivites are themselves transitory: if memory neither belongs to the unstable cognitions nor, to the soul, then who or what actually remembers?

<sup>67</sup>BKV, p. 35

<sup>68</sup>MAV, p. 281.

<sup>69</sup>The differences among the various commentators concerning the interpretation of this kārikā are typified by the debate between Vācaspati Miśra and Vijñāna Bhikṣu over the concept of "bhoktrtva" in their commentaries on the Yoga-Sūtras. For Vācaspati Miśra the puruṣa is really a non-experiencer assuming the pose of an experiencer while for Vijñāna Bhikṣu the puruṣa is a real experiencer; for a discussion of the various interpretations cf. Latika Chattopadhyaya, Self in Sāṃkhya Philosophy (Calcutta: Roy and Chowdhury, 1982), pp. 43-46.

<sup>70</sup>In Sāṃkhya Kārikā, v.17, one of the reasons postulated to prove the existence of the puruṣa is the fact of an enjoyer (bhoktrabhāvāt). The Sāṃkhya Sūtras, v. 6.54, explicitly states that agency belongs to the ego, not the puruṣa (ahamkāraḥ kartā na puruṣaḥ). In his commentary on Sāṃkhya Sūtras 1.96 Aniruddha argues that kartrtva, bhoktrtva and adhiṣṭatṛtva are falsely ascribed to the self when in fact it is the "prakṛta" [i.e. qua buddhi] which possesses these qualities.

<sup>71</sup>The pratibimbavāda is associated more with the Sāṃkhya Sūtras and Yoga Sūtras than with the Sāṃkhya Kārikā. The pratibimbavāda is

also expressed in Vedānta, as for example, in the Bṛhadarāṇyaka Upaniṣad 2.4.12 and the Brahma Sūtras 2.3.50; for a discussion of the doctrine outside Sāṃkhya, cf. Latika Chattopadhyaya, p. 132. In the Sāṃkhya-Yoga writings the "reflection" doctrine is based on a number of analogies. In the Yoga Sūtras 6.28 the analogy of the moon in water is given; in Sāṃkhya Sūtras 2.35 and 1.96 the analogy of the gem's proximity to the red flower is given.

<sup>72</sup>BKV, p. 36.

<sup>73</sup>Ibid., p. 37. The magnet analogy is given in Yoga Sūtra Bhāṣya on 1.4

<sup>74</sup>BKV, p. 36.

<sup>75</sup>Samkhya Kārikā, v. 57.

<sup>76</sup>MĀV, pp. 82-86.

<sup>77</sup>MĀV, pp. 84-85: "abhoktuḥ puruṣasya bhogāyatanena deheṇa bhoga-sādhanaḥ indriyairbhoktavyairindriyarthairbhogena ca sukhaduḥkhavedanātmanā phalena kim prayojanam. yataścaśya bhogastadadhikaranatatsādhanasahito 'sti ato bhoktrtvamapahātumaśakyam. yaśca bhoktā sa kathamakartā akartari karaṇādisambandhasya nirarthakatvat. drkkriyātmakatvameva svarūpam caitanyasa tatasca kartṛtvānirāsāt jñātvamapi."

<sup>78</sup>The Sāṃkhyakārikā of Īśvarakṛṣṇa, trans. Mainkar, pp. 159 and 158.

8

9

## Chapter VI

### THE TRANS-BUDDHI CONDITIONS GOVERNING EMPIRICAL CONSCIOUSNESS

#### 1. Introduction

The Śaivite doctrine of the thirty-six tattvas is often subdivided into three distinct groups.<sup>1</sup> The first five tattvas are characterized as "pure"<sup>2</sup> and are designated as "prerakakāṇḍa", i.e., as those created by Śiva; they are also collectively referred to as the śivatattva. Inclusive within this more mythic group are the śiva-tattva, śakti-tattva, sadāśiva-tattva, īśvara-tattva and sadvidyā-tattva. The next group consists of eight tattvas and is characterized as "pure and impure". This group of tattvas specifically governs the trans-buddhi conditions which are a priori to empirical consciousness. For this reason, they are collectively referred to as the "bhokṭṛkāṇḍa" (or "bhojyiti-kāṇḍa"), i.e., the group concerned with the enjoyer of empirical consciousness; secondarily, this group is referred to as the "vidyātattva".<sup>3</sup> Inclusive within this group are the māyā-tattva, kalā-tattva, niyati-tattva, kāla-tattva, vidyā-tattva, rāga-tattva and puruṣa-tattva. The final group of tattvas is known as the "bhogyakāṇḍa" which implies that this collection of tattvas constitutes the "object" for the soul qua enjoyer of empirical consciousness. This group includes the tattvas from prakṛti to the earth and is referred to in a collective fashion as the "ātma tattva".

In line with the position of the Raurava Āgama Sadyojyoti does not

LEAF 156 OMITTED IN PAGE  
NUMBERING.

FEUILLET \_\_\_\_\_ NON INCLUS DANS LA  
PAGINATION.

consider kāla and niyati, Time and Restriction, to be tattvas.<sup>4</sup> Hence, Sadyojyoti speaks of the threefold "vesture" of kalā, vidyā and rāga, which constitute the soul's "cloak" during the period of empirical consciousness; elsewhere it is referred to as being fivefold.<sup>5</sup> Sadyojyoti also does not consider "puruṣa" to be a tattva in the strict sense. By not accepting kāla, niyati and puruṣa as tattvas, Sadyojyoti accepts only thirty-three tattvas instead of the more common thirty-six. Aghora Śiva accepts the doctrine of thirty-six tattvas throughout his commentaries on the Tattva Prakāśa and the Mrgendra Āgama Vṛtti; in his commentaries on the Bhoga Kārikā and Tattva Saṃgraha he argues for the inclusion of kāla, niyati and puruṣa as tattvas, even though Sadyojyoti, according to Aghora Śiva, only "assumes" them.

In this final chapter we shall first discuss the concept of prakṛti and the three guṇas and then turn our attention to the threefold "vesture" of kalā, vidyā and rāga as well as the absence of kāla, niyati and puruṣa as tattvas. To conclude, the allied concepts of māyā, the foundational ontological concept grounding empirical consciousness, and mala, the foundational soteriological concept, are treated.

## 2. The Concepts of Prakṛti and the Three Guṇas

The prakṛti-tattva and the guṇa-tattva -- the former the cause of the latter -- immediately lie above the buddhi-tattva. The guṇa-tattva is constituted by the three guṇas: sattva, rajas and tamas. Although imperceptible, the three guṇas are inferrable through their immediate effects, the buddhi and so forth.<sup>6</sup> The guṇas are described as the "material causes" of the tattvas beginning with buddhi. Aghora Śiva quotes the

Sāṃkhya Kārikā to explain the manner in which the three guṇas combine together to form the results such as buddhi, etc., i.e., "through mutual subjugation, interdependence and co-operation."<sup>7</sup> For example, in the attainment of "siddhi", the guṇa "sattva" dominates over tamas and rajas. Each entity, which is a result of the guṇas, is a particular "blending of the guṇas" (guṇasamprkta). The analogy provided by Sadyojyoti in the Tattva Saṃgraha to explain the manner in which the triadic guṇa-tattva forms different products is based on the relational manner in which the "earth" qua substratum exists in many different products, such as pots, skulls and so forth.<sup>8</sup> The guṇas, however, are not considered to be the immediate causes (sakṣātkāraṇa) of all the tattvas below buddhi but take on a mediate role by becoming "transformed" (vikṛti) into the lower tattvas.

The Śaivite disagrees with the Sāṃkhya over the ontological status of the guṇas. For the Śaivite, the guṇas, although "causes of the lower tattvas", are themselves "products" of prakṛti, and in themselves do not constitute self-subsistent realities. According to the Sāṃkhya, the guṇas and prakṛti constitute one tattva. The guṇas are simply the condition of equipoise (sāmānya-avastā) of the prakṛti-tattva, considered to be the foundational cause of the empirical world constitutive of buddhi and so forth. Sāṃkhya argues that there is no evidence that prakṛti is in fact an "effect" of some higher tattva. For example, verse 3 of the Sāṃkhya Kārikā simply states that the "prakṛti" qua "mūlaprakṛti" is "avikṛti", i.e., not a result of some causative transformation of a higher tattva. Commenting on this conception of prakṛti, Gauḍapāda<sup>9</sup> states that

prakṛti is not produced by anything and therefore cannot be considered to be an "effect," of anything. Also commenting on this conception of prakṛti Vācaspati Miśra offers a more interpretive explanation; he says that if we were to ask for a cause of prakṛti, which is itself the "root cause" (mūlaprakṛti) of the whole collection of effects, we would be seeking a "root" of this "root" and such a mode of inquiry leads, in the final analysis, to an infinite regress.<sup>10</sup>

Contrary to the Sāṃkhya conception of prakṛti and the guṇas, the Śaivite argues the prakṛti is in fact the cause of the guṇas, as the guṇas are both material (jaḍatva) and manifold (anekatva);<sup>11</sup> since whatever is material and manifold must have a cause, the guṇas cannot in themselves be considered to be fundamental uncaused causes; in spite of the claim by the Sāṃkhya that the guṇas can only be considered "manifold" in a transformed sense (since they remain of one nature in their pre-causative and pre-engaged condition of equipoise qua "prakṛti").

The Śaivite also disagrees with the Sāṃkhya over the temporal nature of the guṇas. According to Sāṃkhya the guṇas are eternally in a state of equipoise in the prakṛti state while in a transformed state in their manifested condition. According to Sadyojyoti (BK, 89B-90A), on the other hand, the guṇas are said to be in an undivided state when in Prakṛti prior to their engagement in the manifested sphere. Moreover, although prakṛti is described as the material cause of the guṇas, prakṛti does not constitute an eternally independent causal factor (svātantryam), as it does with Sāṃkhya, but must be "set in motion" or "agitated" into activity by Śiva, specifically operating through the instrumentality of Śrīkaṇṭha.<sup>12</sup>

Commenting on the criticism of the Sāṃkhya conception of the gunas and prakṛti in the Mrgendra Āgama, Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha summarizes the Śaivite position:<sup>13</sup>

The followers of Kapila imagine that prakṛti, which is of the nature of the equilibrium (sāmya) of the three gunas (sattvā, rajas and tamas), is a "higher cause" (paramakāranatā). This prakṛti, first of all, is not something which is different from the gunas. Just the gunas themselves are prakṛti. But, if prakṛti is identified with the gunas, it is necessarily multiple (aneka); such a non-conscious and multiple thing depends on another cause- (tatkāranatāntarapūrvaka) [other than itself], as when there is the existence of threads, mud or clay. If it depends on another cause, it cannot be a supreme cause.

The higher cause of prakṛti that Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha has in mind is the mala-māyā complex working through the instrumentality of kalā. In terms of serving as the ultimate and obfuscatory cause of the world, the mala-māyā complex performs a similar function that prakṛti serves in the Sāṃkhya.

### 3. The Exclusion of "Puruṣa" as a Tattva

The "puruṣatattva" is described differently in different works and with varying degrees of detail. In the Tattva Prakāśa, for instance, the puruṣa-tattva is technically described as "the soul circumscribed by the five sheaves":<sup>14</sup>

When prompted by these tattvas [the pañcakañcukāḥ, kalā etc] the soul is brought to the condition of Enjoyership; it receives the designation of "puruṣa" and a place among the tattvas.

In his commentary to this verse Aghora Śiva explains that there is no real "puruṣatattva" apart from the soul, as all the vidyā tattvas -- of which the puruṣa tattva is one -- are of an unconscious nature (jaḍatva). Puruṣa, i.e., the soul, is, on the other hand, of a conscious nature, like Śiva. Placing the bound soul in the tattvic order would also be subjec-



ing the soul to the causal process of the tattvas; the bound soul would thus become a "product" of the tattva above it. Since the soul pervades over all the vidyā tattvas it is illogical to place it "as a tattva" after rāga and before prakṛti. Aghora Śiva maintains that Bhoja Deva points this out when he states that the bound soul, which is a result of the five sheaves, becomes an Enjoyer and therefore is designated as the puruṣa-tattva, as it is only after the investiture of the five sheaves ending with the rāga-tattva that it becomes an enjoyer. The puruṣa-tattva is not, however, a "tattva" proper nor does it support a "world" (bhuvana), as it is claimed in Śaivite works dealing with certain initiatory and purificatory practices (i.e., dīkṣā).<sup>15</sup> In the Śrīmat Mātāṅga Āgama, Mrgendra Āgama and other Āgamas, for instance, only the rāga-tattva is the locus for the worlds that apply to the soul yoked to the five sheaves.<sup>16</sup> Aghora Śiva states that "puruṣa" is counted as a tattva in the works that deal with dīkṣā because it serves a role in the ritualistic purification of the soul vis-à-vis a sequential purification of the tattvas beginning with the most gross, i.e., the elements.<sup>17</sup> In the works on dīkṣā, "puruṣa" is designated as the tattva that follows "prakṛti," because after the purification of the prakṛti-tattva there must take place the purification of the "impurity" (mala) that is a quality of the bound soul (puruṣatva-mala); the "puruṣa-tattva" is simply the designation of the bound soul whose "mala" needs purifying. In his commentary on the Bhoga Kārikā Aghora Śiva reiterates the same argument, adding that the "puruṣa" qua soul cannot be considered to be a means-of-bhoga and be of the form of a world,<sup>18</sup> since the soul-qua-bhoktr is both

conscious and unlimited (i.e. not limited by the pañcakañcuka).

In Aghora Siva's description of the "puruṣa-tattva" one finds a distinction between the soul considered as a "fundamental category" (padārtha), i.e. as "paśu," and as a tattva. The puruṣa-tattva only applies to sakala souls and not to the vijñāna-kala or pralaya-kala souls. In his commentary on the Mrgendra Āgama Vṛtti Aghora Śiva adds that it is not only the association (upabrmhitatva) with the five sheaves that is the cause of the puruṣa-tattva but also the delusive attachment to the objects belonging to the sphere of prakṛti (prakṛtigocara-prāpyābhilāṣamoha). The soul thus becomes "deluded" and identifies itself with the transitory prakṛti: in this context Aghora Śiva quotes Yoga Sūtra 2.5: "avidyā is entering the conviction (khyātipratipatti) that the perishing is permanent, the impure pure, the unpleasant pleasant and the non-self the self."<sup>19</sup> The Pauṣkara Āgama is even more adamant that the five sheaves are in need of "avidyā" in order for there to be the connection to prakṛti; this Āgama maintains that the five sheaves themselves cannot be the cause of the enjoyment of prakṛti since avidyā, which is a "prakṛta" phenomenon of the buddhi, is a prerequisite to the attachment. Avidyā, on the other hand, requires the five sheaves, since there can be no agency (kartrtva) in the absence of kalā -- thus, it would become impossible for the soul to become an enjoyer of prakṛti.<sup>20</sup>

#### 4. "Rāga" as a Trans-Buddhi Source of Engagement in Empirical Consciousness

Commonly in Āgamic Śaivism one finds the puruṣa-tattva, kāla-tattva and niyati-tattva lying between the prakṛti-tattva and the rāga-tattva.<sup>21</sup> However, in neither the Tattva Saṅgraha nor the Bhoga Kārikā does Sadyojyoti include puruṣa, kāla and niyati as tattvas. Kāla and

niyati find their place more as extensions of the notion of karma or as effects of karma, as Aghora Śiva explains:<sup>22</sup>

The Ācārya [Sadyojyoti] has not taken up the tattvas designated as kāla and niyati, which are discussed in the Āgamas, because it is self-evident from the context [of what has been discussed so far], as nothing would transpire (anupatti) without both the temporal sequentiality (kālāvaccheda) and individualized experience (bhoktrniyama) of that Enjoyment (bhoga) which is a result of karma.

One finds no attempt either by Sadyojyoti or Aghora Śiva to bring the trans-buddhi categories more in line with a Sāṃkhya understanding of empirical consciousness; there is no attempt to liken māyā to a higher order prakṛti nor rāga, vidyā and kalā to guṇic qualities similar to tamas, sattva and rajas, even though these tattvas share the qualities of the guṇas. Nor do we find Sadyojyoti, as Bhoja Deva for instance, attributing the powers jñāna, kriyā and icchā to the soul, with jñāna corresponding to vidyā, kriyā to kalā and icchā to rāga.<sup>23</sup>

For the soul there can be no experience (anubhava) of the objects of enjoyment without the concomitant "attachment" (sakti) or ontological relation to the object of enjoyment. Such an attachment requires a cause, which is taken to be rāga, "the desire for bhoga" (bhoga-anurañjaka). (BK, v.90B-91A) In explaining rāga as a tattva Sadyojyoti begins with the phenomenal "effect", the experience of the object with its concomitant attachment to this object:<sup>24</sup> the cause is postulated as the more general "bhoga-anurañjaka", the obfuscation by empirical consciousness. In the triadic relationship of the bhoktr-bhoga-bhogyā, rāga stands more on the side of the bhoktr. Directed more towards the subject, rāga is what causes the desire for bhoga. Once there is this desire the connection to the bhogyā follows as a direct and necessary result.

Rāga cannot be considered to be a "bhāva" or "pratyaya" of the buddhi; rāga is trans-buddhi not intra-buddhi. The classical Śaivite argument defending the postulation of a trans-buddhi cause of the "attachment" to the activity of buddhi is simply that, if there is no such cause, the attachment would arise even in the state of release. In this case the Śaivite argument rests on the formula that "causeless = beginningless = endless = without cessation". Sadyojyoti voices an objection raised by Sāṃkhya: the positing of this rāga as the source of the attachment is superfluous! Sāṃkhya attributes this craving for bhoga to the sphere of prakṛti itself, more specifically, as one of the eight bhāvas of the buddhi, i.e. "bondage" (avairāgya).<sup>25</sup> In the triadic configuration of the bhoktr-bhoga-bhogyā this locates the desire for bhoga on the side of the bhogyā and not on the side of the bhoktr, as Sadyojyoti holds.

Two objections are brought against the Sāṃkhya position. Firstly, it is pointed out that the prakṛti-based "bhogyā" is itself simply a means whereby bhoga is accomplished (bhogasādhana); hence, as a means it too requires some causative factor to explain the soul's desire for it. Secondly, the same argument employed defending the necessity of the postulation of the trans-buddhi rāga-tattva is sufficient for denying an intra-buddhi cause of the attachment to buddhi: without rāga being external to the bhogyā there could be no freedom from rāga, since the bhogyā itself would be the determining factor of the attachment and not the soul. In other words, the object and not the subject would determine the relationship between the object and the subject. Thirdly, and finally, a more direct attack is brought against construing rāga as a buddhi-bhāva

instead of a "puruṣa-upakāra" (an accessory in the experience of empirical consciousness): if rāga is said to have a "vāsanā" or bhāva as its cause, there will follow an infinite series of contradictory activities, since the vāsanās are considered to be endless in their dormant condition in the buddhi. In the face of this criticism, if Sāṃkhya attempts to identify the role of the Śaivite's rāga-tattva with a pratyaya of the buddhi the same criticism as construing it as a bhāva will follow.<sup>26</sup>

Aghora Śiva concludes the defence of the postulation of a separate rāga-tattva to explain the attachment to empirical consciousness with an argument against construing rāga as somehow ancillary to the activity of karma, a position that makes the rāga-tattva a superfluous postulation. Aghora Śiva argues that karma is solely concerned with bringing about specific results of specific causes. Karma is not responsible for bringing about the general desire for bhoga. Although neither in the Tattva Samgraha nor in the Bhoga Kārikā does Sadyojyoti emphasize this more "general" aspect of rāga, the Tattva Prakāśa, for instance, does: "rāga is of the nature of attachment, is the general cause of the activity in the soul and is without distinction between particular objects..."<sup>27</sup> It is this general nature of rāga as a cause of the soul's activity and this general non-distinction between objects that rules out the possibility of rāga taking on the function of karma. Aghora Śiva adds a final argument defending the separation of the rāga-tattva for inclusion within the notion of karma: if karma is accepted as the reason for the attachment to each object, then in every case of this attachment karma would be considered

a tattva. In order to avoid this problem, it is better to assume one tattva, i.e. rāga, to account for the multifarious activities.

#### 5. The "Vidyā-tattva" as the Facilitating Instrument for Empirical Consciousness

As a tattva, "vidyā" serves two interrelated functions. The vidyā-tattva functions both as the "instigating agent" of the soul's power of consciousness (citśaktipravartaka),<sup>28</sup> and as the "instrument" whereby the cognitive events of the buddhi are discerned by the soul (buddhibodhavivecana). These two functions are interrelated because they entail each other: the specific manner in which the vidyā-tattva prompts the "cit-śakti" of the soul is through the discerning of the "buddhi-bodha".<sup>29</sup> It is impossible for the "buddi-bodha" to be discerned without the soul's "cit-śakti" being "engaged-in" the discerning process.

Although neither in the Tattva Saṃgraha nor in the Bhoga Kārikā does Sadyojyoti draw clear links to the "jñāna-kriyā-śakti" of the soul and the functions of the collection of vidyā tattvas, he does establish the vidyā-tattva itself on an argument based on the conception of the soul as intrinsically of the nature of "kriyā-śakti" -- he thus, by implication, establishes a unity between the soul's jñāna and kriyā powers. In defining the nature and at the same time defending the postulation of the vidyā-tattva Sadyojyoti puts forth the principle that every activity which involves an agent requires an instrument in order to carry out the activity. The activity of the agent is said to "depend on" an instrument. Sadyojyoti assumes that the soul's cognitive powers are intrinsically related to its agentive powers when the argument is

put forth that in the discrimination of the presented "buddhi-bodha" the "instrument" of this discrimination is "vidyā". If the soul were solely construed along Sāṃkhya lines as constituted by jñāna, there would be no need to assume an instrument between the soul and the buddhi-bodha; according to such an account the relation so established between the soul and the buddhi-bodha would simply be accounted for by the discrimination itself.<sup>30</sup> However, since the Saivite considers the buddhi-bodha itself as an act or activity, the postulation of an agent is assumed; as a result, the necessity of construing the need for an "instrument" between the soul and the buddhi-bodha is self-evident.<sup>31</sup>

As an "instrument" in the production of empirical consciousness of which the soul is the discerning-subject, "vidyā" must be distinguished from the other major "instruments" involved in the production of empirical consciousness, i.e., the internal organs (buddhi, ahaṃkāra and manas) and the five sense organs. The terminology adopted by the various authors to describe the specific cognitive activity of vidyā implies a certain degree of objectivity on the part of this "instrument" or "organ" that the others do not possess: the term "viveka" literally means "to separate" or "split up"; as a term designating a cognitive act, "viveka" connotes a more objective discriminatory and judgemental activity whereas "jñāna" and "bodha", for instance, connote a cognitive act in general. A "vivekin" is a "judge" or someone who examines the "facts" as so presented in an objective manner.

At the level of the vidyā-tattva this "viveka-jñāna" is not considered a means whereby the soul attains the realization that it is in

fact separate from the prakṛti-based empirical consciousness, as is the case with the Sāṃkhya system. The Śaivite conception of vidyā as "viveka-jñāna is not equivalent to the Sāṃkhya ideal of "vyakta-avyakta-jñā-vijñāna." According to the Śaivite, at the level of this "viveka-jñāna," both the vidyā-tattva and the rāga-tattva are combined and thus limit the soul so it cannot actually discriminate itself from "buddhi-bodha". In so rousing the "citśakti" of the soul the vidyā-tattva "taints" this citśakti with the fact of empirical consciousness (bhogyoparaktacitvyakti), a process which leads to the "vidyā-tattva" being referred to as the "impure vidyā" (aśuddhavidyā). The Mrgendra Āgama provides the justification for this designation:<sup>32</sup>

Affected by this [rāga (as well as vidyā)], the soul desires the objects of enjoyment and, although they are impure, grasps them. However, in the enjoyment of these objects of enjoyment, the soul does not acquire the freedom from this passion for them.

It is imperative to point out that although "viveka" is actually a function of the vidyā-tattva, Sadyojyoti does not use the terminology of "vidyā-viveka" in a similar manner as he does when describing "bodha" as the function of buddhi as "buddhi-bodha". Rather, the terminology employed is "buddhibodha-viveka", as if "viveka" is in some sense intrinsic to the buddhi itself. Vidyā should not be thought of as a sort of "higher" buddhi, as one sort of buddhi over-looking another; instead of a "viṣaya-ākāra", as buddhi is in a presentative manner, vidyā is a "buddhi-viṣaya-ākāra" of which the soul is conscious. Such an analogy would of course needlessly entail the postulation of another instrument through which the soul could grasp the original "buddhi-bodha".



Sāṃkhya is willing to accept the principle that this argument is based on but will, however, take it one step further and argue that there is no need to take the discriminative process any further than the buddhi, i.e., that the vidyā-tattva is already superfluous. Sāṃkhya will argue that buddhi is itself self-illuminating in the way a light is self-illuminating. The Śaivite will reply that a light is taken to be an instrument when we observe posts and so forth; however, in order to view the light itself a further "instrument" is needed, i.e. "the eye", a receptor to light. In the same manner, Sadyojyoti grants that the buddhi has "manifesting powers" as is the case with a light but in order for the soul to grasp the buddhi, the buddhi itself cannot be considered to be the instrument. Hence, the postulation of vidyā. With this argument based on the analogy of the eye, vidyā is given a purely instrumental function whereas buddhi has the added character of being an agent in its own right, an agent in the sense of reflectively "lighting objects up", making them manifest (sākṣātbhogyatva) as well as serving the purely instrumental function of being the means whereby "objects" are brought forth in the process of bhoga (bhogasādhana). Thus, although buddhi is capable of illuminating through a process of reflection (viṣayākāra), it is incapable of manifesting itself. As well, the buddhi is constituted out of the three gunas, i.e. prakṛti, which is a "bhogya" phenomenon. In terms of the difference between vidyā and buddhi as instruments to the soul, Aghora Śiva describes "vidyā" as the "highest" or "most proximate" instrument of the soul's consciousness.<sup>33</sup> Technically, buddhi is described as an "external" member in the process of empirical

consciousness (bahiraṅgatva) while vidyā is described as an "internal" member.<sup>34</sup> Moreover, vidyā acquires a certain "importance" in the event of empirical consciousness:<sup>35</sup>

According to the maxim, "one travels by means of a horse, roadway and lantern," [where one "means", i.e. the lantern at night is the most important], a manifold number of instruments go into bringing about the effect; likewise, vidyā is considered to be the most important instrument.

#### 6. The "Kalā-tattva" as the Causative Factor Mediating Empirical Consciousness

Sadyojyoti begins his discussion of kalā by pointing out the more causative nature of kalā as opposed, for instance, to the more purely instrumental nature of vidyā. He begins by maintaining that when "bhoga" takes effect there has to be an instigating-agent (prayoktr) involved in the collection of agentive-factors (kāraṅka) involved in the activating of the buddhi. By defending the necessity of an instigating-agent between the soul and buddhi, Sadyojyoti establishes proof for the existence of the kalā-tattva.

The term for "agentive-factor", i.e. "kāraṅka" quite literally means "that which carries out the activity."<sup>36</sup> Sadyojyoti describes the soul as "self-willed" and as an "agent"; kalā is described as the "instigating-agent" of the self-willed agency of the soul. Kalā is not itself self-willed (svātantrya) and is not therefore considered to be an agent in its own right; rather, in the causal process which brings bhoga about, kalā functions as a subsidiary agent. Aghora Śiva attempts to clarify the difference between a cause (kartr) and a subsidiary cause (kāraṅka) as well as the difference between the soul qua "self-willed"

and the vidyā-tattva qua "instigating-agent"; he bases his clarification on Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha's discussion of Mrgendra Āgama 10.7:<sup>37</sup>

O brahman, these two [the soul qua kartr and kalā qua prayojika] in the effectuation of the activity of bhoga belonging to the bound souls, stand together as if indistinguishably united -- and are designated [collectively] as the "agent-concomitant" (kartrkarmaka).

Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha explains that the soul cannot be actively engaged in the bhoga-experience until it is so affected by kalā; as a result, the soul is described as the agent and/enjoyer while kalā is described as the concomitant or auxiliary cause which serves to "corroborate" (upodbalana) the agentive power of the soul.<sup>38</sup> The two "appear" as one causative factor; Nārāyaṇa Kaṇṭha quotes Bṛhaspati who describes the epistemological result of this unity in the manner in which the soul and kalā function: "in the [bound] soul, it [i.e., kalā] appears as a second consciousness, because consciousness is so united with it."<sup>39</sup> Aghora Śiva raises an objection by an opponent: how can there be a corroborational relation between the "kartr" and the "kāraka" when agency is a property of consciousness (i.e., of the conscious soul, centanadharmatvam) and kalā is of a non-conscious nature? Aghora Śiva replies that kalā can indeed have such a relation with the soul since kalā is superintended over and has its locus in the obscurational power (rodhanaśakti) which is considered to be of a conscious nature and of the nature of mala.<sup>40</sup>

Since the agentive soul, maintains Sadyojyoti, is of a pervasive nature (vyāpaka), something must be held responsible for "limiting its pervasiveness; mala is designated as the limiting factor. Kalā, which is likened to a light, "rends apart" (vidarana) some of this mala and

thus allows the agentive-power of the soul to be revealed. In the Saiva Paribhāṣā we find this role of kalā described by the analogy of moss in water: kalā is like that which separates the moss which covers all of the water.<sup>41</sup> In the analogy the moss is likened to mala and the water to the soul. The "separation" is only partial, both temporally and spatially. Śivāgrayogin gives a detailed analysis of this analogy through a precise explanation of the actual function of the removal of the obscurational mala.<sup>42</sup> He says that kalā is a manifesting tattva (abhiṣṭāyakaṁ tattvaṁ) of both the active and conscious powers of the soul. However, this manifestation takes on the form of that which terminates or suspends (nivṛtti) the obscuring factor (ācchāḍaka). But this is not the destruction of the very nature of the obscuring factor (sāpi nācchāḍakasya svarūpavināśaḥ); rather, it is the removal (vināśa) of the power (śakti) to obscure -- it is the suspension of that which possesses this ability. On the analogy of the rock thrown into a moss covered pond, the rock is said to remove the moss; it does this not by destroying the moss but by removing its power or ability (śakti) to cover the water. In more technical terminology the "śakti" of the mala is removed but not its "existence" (sadbhāva).

If the soul were not affected by kalā the soul would always be considered omnipotent and omniscient; never having been in contact with kalā means never having been in contact with mala. But it is impossible for any souls not to have been in contact with mala, for in order to be rid of mala (i.e. for the liberated souls) it is necessary to "work through" the connection to the beginningless condition of mala-obscuration which occurs in the empirical and samsāric sphere through

kalā. The soul is thus dependent "on the grace" of kalā for soteriological development; kalā is therefore described as "the gracious tattva" (anugrahikam tattvam).<sup>43</sup> With the emergence of kalā some of the original mala is removed and the soul is on its way to the full de-obscur-ation by the mala, i.e. on its way to mokṣa.

Sadyojyoti further discusses kalā in terms of being the representa-tive tattva most inclusive of circumscribing the tattvic range of the subtle body. The group of tattvas (tattvasamhati) that begins with earth and ends with kalā constitutes the subtle body. It is this "group of tattvas" that is said to migrate from one body to the next in the round of rebirths. In the soteriological development of each soul which takes place on the level of this collection of tattvas all of the individual tattvas are said to be "gracious" in the sense of providing the opportunity for mokṣa, kalā is said to be the most gracious of all.

Sadyojyoti concludes his discussion of the kalā-tattva with a more detailed discussion of the relation between the subtle body (qua the collection of tattvas beginning with kalā) and the soul; through this discussion Sadyojyoti argues persuasively that the establishment of the multiplicity of subtle bodies is sufficient for establishing the multi-plicity of souls, which is a direct attack on the position of Advaita. He as well includes a description of the spheres of existence or "bhuvana" which are associated with this collection of tattvas. Unlike the in-dividual collections of tattvas, which are relative to specific souls, the worlds or spheres of existence related to this collection are of a more general nature and are shared by all the souls associated with them.

7. The Soteriological Implications of "Māyā", the Fundamental Ontological Principle Governing the Empirical Sphere of Consciousness and Being

Sadyojyoti discusses the nature of the māyā-tattva<sup>44</sup> from verse 117B to verse 123B; he restricts his discussion of māyā to its role as the fundamental material cause (paramopādāna) of the empirical world which is constituted by the tattvas beginning with kalā.<sup>45</sup> He begins with an argument defending the postulation of māyā as the cause of the world with reference to kalā; in order for kalā to carry out its role of providing "bhoga" for the souls, kalā must have a cause.<sup>46</sup> This cause is designated as māyā. Having established the necessity of this "cause" Sadyojyoti proceeds to describe its specific characteristics: māyā is said to be of an unconscious nature, eternal, omni-pervasive and possessed of many "śaktis".<sup>47</sup>

Sadyojyoti does not defend the postulation of the unconscious nature of māyā although Aghora Śiva provides an argument based on the Saivite principle that an "effect" which is "manifold" is "unconscious". In itself māyā is described as one phenomenon, the material cause of the empirical world; however, in its transformation or modification into the world of empirical experience, māyā takes on many forms through a transformation of its "śakti" or "innate potentiality". In this manifested state of multifarious effects māyā itself is considered multifarious, and therefore unconscious.<sup>48</sup>

Sadyojyoti does defend the postulation of māyā as that which possesses manifold "śaktis"; he maintains that māyā possesses a manifold of "śaktis" both quantitatively and qualitatively. The proof of this

postulation is based on the observation that the effects of māyā are both quantitatively and qualitatively of a manifold nature. This argument is based on the accepted Śaivite principle that the cause must be of the same nature as the effect. As Aghora Śiva points out this principle is basic to the satkāryavāda: the "effect" does not come into being with its own and "new" śakti separate from the one which is its cause. Aghora Śiva explains that the effects of māyā are simply "forms" (rūpa) māyā takes on through a modification of its śakti; the "śakti", maintains Aghora Śiva, remains a property of māyā in spite of the fact that it exists in a transformed condition qua effect.<sup>49</sup> Concerning this conception of the relation between the cause and the effect, the Mrgendra Āgama voices an objection: since a cloth is produced out of a collection of threads, the principle can be upheld that a single thing, i.e. the effect, can arise from many causes. The reply to this criticism is typical of arguments defending the satkāryavāda: "But then, the plurality (viz., the threads in the instance given) is produced only from a single cause (i.e., cotton, out of which the threads were manufactured)."<sup>50</sup>

Defending the eternality of māyā poses more serious problems for Sadyojyoti, especially given the satkāryavāda principle that the effect is a transformation of the cause. In this case, the effect is the totality of non-conscious and manifold things. Anything considered "unconscious" is considered to be "material" and in principle non-eternal. Sadyojyoti defends the eternality of māyā in the face of this criticism in the same manner in which he defends the oneness of māyā: just as māyā, although of one nature, possesses many śaktis, so māyā is "eternal"

even though it is "unconscious." Māyā is "eternal" in the sense of possessing the continued existence which outlasts the manifold creations or "effects"; not only does māyā outlast the continued creation and destruction of individual entities, but it continues to outlast and provide both the "form" and the "matter" for the creation, maintenance and destruction of the continual succession of world orders. The eternality of māyā is further bolstered by the establishment of its omnipervasiveness (vpāpaka) since māyā affects all souls and since souls are innumerable, māyā must be omni-pervasive. This spatial pervasiveness is thought by Sadyojyoti to lend credence to the notion of the temporal pervasiveness of māyā.

In summing up the conception of māyā as a unitary phenomenon possessed of temporal and spatial omni-extensiveness, Aghora Śiva clarifies the Śaivite doctrine of causality: all "change" qua "transformation" (pariṇāmitva) is only "partial" (ekadeśa). With respect to māyā, its transformation into an omnifarious and viciscitudinous totality of various effects is simply a "partial" transformation of its intrinsic unity and eternality.

#### 8. "Mala" as the Fundamental Soteriological Concept

"Mala", literally "filth" or "defilement", is the fundamental soteriological concept employed by the Śaivites to explain the condition of the "fallenness" of the soul; the counterpart to mala in the Advaita doctrine is Avidya and even more precisely the Avidya-Māyā complex. The common argument put forth by all the Śaivite authors defending the postulation of mala as that which obscures the agency and conscious-



ness of the soul is succinctly stated by Sadyojyoti: the soul is found to be consciously engaged in the totality of that which is an effect of māyā and is therefore in a defiled condition, i.e. "covered by mala."<sup>51</sup> And more specifically, the soul's omnipotence and omniscience are "limited" by mala. In the Bhoga Kārikā Sadyojyoti does not provide an argument establishing the omnipotence and omniscience of the soul although it is clear that, like other Śaivite authors, he bases himself on "śabdapramāṇa", i.e., the authority of scripture, on the basis of which it is maintained that the soul attains the state of Śivahood in the state of release, i.e., attains omniscience and omnipotence.<sup>52</sup> Hence, the soul must have these two qualities prior to the removal of the mala. Ultimately it is the Lord who is responsible for the connection between the soul and mala for soteriological reasons; the Mrgendra Āgama provides a graphic analogy to illustrate this:<sup>53</sup>

(The Lord is) like a surgeon, who through inflicting pain on the patient by applying caustics and the like, cannot be said to cause his pain, since in the end he compasses the desired end.

Before engaging in a description of the specific characteristics of mala Sadyojyoti makes clear the distinction between mala and karma. The opponent immediately responds to the Śaivite conception of mala as the defiling principle governing the soul's defiled condition by pointing out that karma itself can carry out this function. Karma, argues the opponent, is sufficient for establishing the soul's engagement in the sphere of māyā, as Sadyojyoti states (BK, 125B-126A):

The Karma which is an effect of a previous existence provides the soul's fruits at birth -- why then imagine that the soul is defiled [i.e. covered by "mala"] when karma is already operative?

The opponent is not offering a radical criticism of the doctrine of mala but rather stays within the sphere of the Śaiva doctrine. According to Sadyojyoti, Śiva is engaged in the world through the quality of his śakti; in the case of the obfuscation of the world, Śiva's śakti becomes transformed into the three bonds, mala, karma and māyā. The opponent questions the necessity of postulating karma whose only function is, as Aghora Śiva points out, "to explain the variety of [the differences] of bhoga (bhogāvaicitrānyāthanvatti). Given the very notion of mala, mala should contain this restrictedness within itself if it is indeed to serve a useful function! Responding to the opponent's first criticism that karma is sufficient for explaining the bound condition of the soul, Sadyojyoti replies that karma cannot take effect without mala being present as we never see anyone who is born free from ignorance or limited consciousness, which is caused by a principle of obscuration -- i.e., mala. In this case, karma only provides the connection to a particular condition of embodiment and obfuscation; the obfuscating factor itself is something which is prior to the karmic activity.<sup>54</sup>

Responding to the second criticism that karma is a superfluous postulation since mala can account for the embodied condition of the bound soul, Sadyojyoti replies that there are souls who are only possessed by the bond of mala, i.e. the vijñānakevala souls. Since these souls remain unconnected to the sphere of māyā and embodiment, some other cause besides mala must account for such a connection. Hence, the postulation of karma.

A more radical criticism of the postulation of mala is addressed

when the opponent argues that it is contradictory to attribute mala qua Ignorance to the soul since the soul is by nature possessed of omniscience and omnipotence and an intrinsic unity; to attribute mala to the soul as a beginningless condition of its state of being is to contradict the intention of the postulation of its three original stated characteristics. Sadyojyoti responds that we in fact see souls who are bound in the sphere of māyā and its consequent limitedness; in order for there to be the removal of this limitedness, there must be some cause behind it. There must be something to account for the soul's consciousness and agency being released from the bondage to the sphere of māyā. The "veil" over the soul is thus described by mala. If souls were not to be originally covered by mala they would be equal to Śiva; in fact mala is the fundamental distinguishing mark between the souls and Śiva, the "paśu" and the "pati".<sup>55</sup>

After having established the necessity for the postulation of mala Sadyojyoti proceeds to describe the essential characteristics it possesses. These characteristics are also shared by māyā: eternality; oneness; unconsciousness, and temporal and spatial pervasiveness. The arguments given by Sadyojyoti defending these qualities of māyā are quite similar to those given in the discussion of mala.

Mala is said to be eternal, i.e. "beginningless", because it is a covering of that which is also eternal, i.e. the souls. Although it is said to be of one nature and applicable to all souls alike, it affects all souls individually through the application of its innumerable capabilities or "śaktis". This śakti doctrine is intended to silence the

opponents who criticize the universality of mala. The opponent puts forth two arguments: firstly, that if mala is eternally pervasive, the souls will never be capable of ridding themselves of it, and secondly, that even if we allow the possible freedom from mala, when one soul attains the freedom from mala all souls will attain the same freedom, given the universality and unity of mala. These two criticisms are brought forth by Sāṃkhya which locates the source of the connection of that which defiles the soul in the buddhi, i.e. in the notion of the "pratyaya" designated as "misapprehension" (viparyaya); the specific "misapprehension" which causes this connection is "Great Delusion" or "Mahāmoha" whose manifesting cause is accounted for by karma. The śakti doctrine does not silence these two criticisms, argues the Sāṃkhya opponent, because the fact remains that mala is the universal and pervasive veil over the soul prior to the evolution of the prakṛti-based sphere of objects.

Sadyojyoti replies to the Sāṃkhya by bringing the same criticisms against the Sāṃkhya doctrine of locating the cause of defilement in buddhi as aided by karma. If it is claimed that the soul is undefiled prior to its association with the "Mahāmoha" of the buddhi -- i.e., prior to this "prakṛta-mala" -- it becomes logically impossible for the defilement to occur (BK, v. 133B-134A):

[If it is claimed that] prior to the arising of the "mahāmoha" the soul is without defilement, it is then impossible for the soul to separate itself [from mahāmoha qua defilement] as [according to this view] the soul itself is not veiled by anything, as is the case with the Lord.

If the Sāṃkhya insists, in spite of this criticism, on maintain-

ing that the defilement does in fact have a temporal beginning as the defilement of the buddhi, then a cause must be brought forward to explain this beginning; ultimately, in order to avoid the charge of infinite regress, some single cause must be postulated, as the Śaivite conception of mala. However, if, on the other hand, Sāṃkhya maintains that the soul's connection to defilement does have a beginning but is without a cause, then again there will be nothing to prevent this defilement from continuing to defile the soul even in a released state as there is nothing to cause it to cease.

Sadyojyoti concludes his discussion of mala by stating that "on account of its connection to mala, the soul is termed 'the limited one' (anu)." Aghora Śiva points out that according to the Raurava Āgama the notion of mala is inclusive in the notion of the soul qua "the limited one". For, without mala the soul would not be considered to be "limited". In this sense mala tends to represent the category of "bond", pāśa; the "soul" is described as a "paśu" and not a "pati", for instance, because of its association with the category of pāśa. Just as, in the Mokṣa Kārikā, Sadyojyoti defends the identity of śiva and śakti i.e. that śakti is in some sense the instrument through which Śiva is active, in like manner, the paśu has a relationship of close identity with the pāśa. This is especially so given the fact that mala is essentially construed as a śakti.<sup>56</sup> Prior to liberation the soul plays out a similar role with the pāśa qua mala-śakti as Śiva with his Śakti; the soul's śakti, however, is impure and unconscious while that of the Lord's is pure and conscious. As well, the soul has no control over the essential direction its śakti takes -- i.e. in an obscurational direction. The only control the soul has

over this śakti comes about indirectly through dīkṣā and the pursuit of the Śaiva path.<sup>57</sup>

## Chapter VI

### NOTES

<sup>1</sup>Sivāgrayogin justifies the triadic grouping in spite of the fact that some texts postulate more than three categories; cf. SPB, p. 60: "Now since the categories seem to be differently enumerated in different works as, 'Seven categories are declared in the Svāyambhuva, six in the Pauskara and Mataṅga, five in the sacred Pārākhya, and three in the Raurava," how can it be said that there are three categories alone? If this be asked, true; but since those (others) which are different from pati and pasu are included even in pasa, and since for Vamadeva, the first sage in our succession (of teachers), the Raurava was the principal Āgama, the categories are said to be three; and there is no contradiction.

<sup>2</sup>The pure is often distinguished from the impure ontologically: "bindu" is said to be the material cause of the pure realm while "māyā" is the material cause of the impure realm. Although bindu is in a sense a "higher" type of māyā, and is often referred to as the "mahāmāyā", bindu simply represents a more subtle degree of bondage with more positive connotations than the gross māyā. The worlds and supernatural beings that inhabit the realm of the pure tattvas are all dimensions of bindu in its form as nāda, sound-essence. For a discussion of the Saivite doctrine of nāda, cf. Pandey, Bhāskari, pp. 91-98 and K. Sivaraman, "The Word as a Category of Revelation," Revelation in Indian Thought, ed. Harold Coward and Krishna Sivaraman (Emerville, California: Dharma Publishing, 1977), pp. 45-64.

<sup>3</sup>cf. "Tattva-Kattalei," trans. H. Hoisington, p. 19.

<sup>4</sup>Raurava Āgama, Srstikrama, vv. 2-4. K. Sivaraman suggested to me that one possible clue for the omission of the Sivatattvas and kālā and niyati may be found in TS, vv. 25 and 26 wherein the tattvas from kālā to prthivi are said to constitute the subtle body vis-à-vis the sthūladeha which is in immediate contact with the world as impelled by karma. Therefore, the Sivatattvas, niyati and kālā are not necessary to explain the condition of bhoga.

<sup>5</sup>For example, MĀ (.4-18), pp. 230-245 and Tattva Prakāśa (v.49), p. 103.

<sup>6</sup>Sadyojyoti says that the guṇas are visible or apprehensible (drṣta) in such things as the effects of the buddhi. The unapprehensibility applies

to prakṛti as well, especially insofar as the guṇas, as Sadyojyoti claims (BK, v.89B-90A), remain "undivided" in prakṛti. The Tattva-prakāśa states that prakṛti is undefinable or unapprehensible because of the unmanifested state of the guṇas (anabhivyaktaḥ guṇatvādayapadeśyam tadavyaktam); cf. Tattvapra-kāśa, ed. p.104. The Tattvapra-kāśa also specifically mentions that the prakṛti-tattva is for the purpose of enjoyment of the puruṣa, a point not found in either the TS or BK. The Sāṃkhya Kārikā, v.8, attributes the non-perceptibility of prakṛti to its subtlety (sauksmyāttadanulabdhir nā 'bhāvāt karyātas tadupalabdheḥ') cf. Tattva-Kaumudī, p. 18.

<sup>7</sup>Sāṃkhya Kārikā, v.12.

<sup>8</sup>TS, v. 9, p.12.

<sup>9</sup>Gauḍapāda on Sāṃkhya Kārikā, v.7.

<sup>10</sup>SPB, p. 222; Śataratnasamgraha, p. 55.

<sup>11</sup>The equation "anekatva and jagatva = kāraṇapūrvakatva" is as follows: because something is manifold and unconscious, it therefore requires a cause, as Aghora states in his commentary on TS, v.9; pp.12-13: "guṇā nām acaitanye satyanekatvāt yato ghatādivat kāraṇapūrvakatvam tatas teṣāṃavyaktādeva sambhūtirity."

<sup>12</sup>By Śiva's urging, Ananta creates the tattvas from kalā to pradhāna; from Ananta's urging Śrīkaṇṭha creates the tattvas from guṇa to pṛthivī; and finally, at Śrīkaṇṭha's urging, Brahmā creates the elemental sphere (bhautikasṛṣṭi) of the ānimates and inanimates; cf. Sataratnasamgraha, p. 54.

<sup>13</sup>MĀV, p. 83: "yeyam kāpilāḥ paramakāraṇatayā parikālpitā satvarajastamolakṣaṇaḥ guṇatrayasamyatmikā prakṛtiḥ tasyastavanna guṇebhyo nyatvam guṇā eva prakṛtiriti. hetubhiḥ pratijñate guṇebhyo nanyatve cāvaksyamaṇekatvamasyaḥ yaccacaitanye satyanekam tatkāraṇāntarapūrvakam. yathā tantavo mṛtpindā vasati ca kāraṇāntarapūrvakatve nā paramakāraṇatā idam ca te prastavyam."

<sup>14</sup>Tattva Prakāśa, v. 49, p. 103.

<sup>15</sup>In his commentary to the same verse Śrīkumāra emphasizes that the puruṣa-tattva is Śiva himself: "having attained the condition of paśu on account of the connection to the five sheaves (kalā, niyati, kāla, vidyā, and rāga), Śiva remains in the locale of the twenty-four tattvas beginning with the vyakta by means of His separation from the Sivatatva -- and is thus designated as the puruṣatattva" Cf. Tattva Prakāśa, p. 103 "yadāyamīśvaraḥ ebhiḥ kālaniyatikalāvīdyārāgākhyaiḥ pañcabhistattvaiḥ sambandhāt paśubhavam prāpya bhokṛtvavasthām prapnoti tada vyaktādicaturvīṃsatitattvamaye puri sayanāt puruṣasaṃjñam ca labhate Sivatatvavyatirekeṇa tattveṣu guṇānam ceti."



<sup>16</sup>MĀD, p. 103

<sup>17</sup>The ritual purification of the elements (bhūtaśuddhi) or "tattvanyāsa" is carried out by the Śāktas and Vaiṣṇavites in a very similar manner as in the case of the Saivites. For a discussion of the Śāktas' method, cf. Sri John Woodroffe, Introduction to Tantrāśāstra (Madras: Ganesh and Company, 1913), pp. 108-109; for the Vaiṣṇavites and Saivites, cf. J. Gonda, Viṣṇuism and Saivism, p. 47.

<sup>18</sup>There are six "adhvas" or aspects of the totality of creation: kalā, bhuvana, varna, mantra, pada and tattva; cf. Śivanjñāna Siddhiyār, p. 156.

A similar argument is found in the Śataratnollekha wherein it is argued that there are no superintending Rudras nor objects of experience in māyā. In an attempt to explain the scriptural texts which claim that the eight Maṇḍalas exist in māyā, the author says: "The statement is not to be taken literally in view of the fact that māyā is only a śakti wherein no bhuvana can have any spatial existence. What really pertains to kalā, deśa etc. is transferred to māyā by courtesy. Similarly, tattvasuddhi as part of dīkṣā that is ordained in relation to māyā really pertains to mastaka." Cf. Śataratnasamgraha, trans. p. 51. The Paṅskara Āgama uses the same lakṣaṇā-argument to claim that in the dīkṣā sections which mention bhuvanas existing in the prakṛti-tattva; cf. pumstattvapāṭala, v. 7-9, SPB, p. 221-222.

<sup>19</sup>Also quoted by Aghora Śiva in MĀD, 9.18, p. 271.

<sup>20</sup>Cf. SPB, p. 220.

<sup>21</sup>There is also debate over the origin of rāga and vidyā, Aghora Śiva follows the Raurava Āgama and maintains that both rāga and vidyā emerge from kalā: kalātattvādrāgavidye dve tattve sambabhūvatuḥ RA, II, v. 1.15A, p. 6. Other sources, such as the IP derive rāga and vidyā directly from māyā; cf. vv. 40-43.

<sup>22</sup>BKV, p. 49. Śivāgrayogin expounds on the notions of kāla and niyati qua tattvas. Kāla is that factor which determines the extent of empirical experience (bhōgeyattāparicchedha) and is the first transformation of māyā; Śivāgrayogin cites a number characteristics of the kālatattva, i.e., inertness (jaḍatva), manifoldness (satyanekatva), non-eternality (anityatva) and non-pervasiveness (avibhūtva). Kāla is non-eternal given that it is subject to origination and destruction during the periods of cosmic destruction; he further says that eternality, a quality of the soul, is not to be understood as "eternal time" but simply the freedom from the determination by time, niyati, described as the second transformation of māyā, is the karmically determined "link" (yojana) regulating the relation between the triadically bound soul and the condition of bhoga. Cf. SPB, pp. 202-209.

<sup>23</sup>Ibid., p. 217.

<sup>24</sup>TSV, v. 10, p. 14: "abhilāṣātmanā kāryeṇa rāgatattvasiddhiḥ."

<sup>25</sup>In his commentary on the Tattva Prakāśa, Aghora Śiva contrasts rāga understood in Sāṃkhya terms as a buddhidharma with the Saivite conception of it as a puruṣopakāra, i.e. as something which of some service or use to the soul; cf. Tattvapraśāsa, p.103; as well, cf. MAD, p. 162.

<sup>26</sup>Aghora Śiva states this more simply in the TSV, v.4, p.14: pratyayarūpasyāpi bhogyatvānnābhilāṣaheturam." In the MAD (10.11; p.262), however, Aghora Śiva accepts that rāga is also of the nature of a pratyaya as contributory to the bhogasādhana specifically brought about by rāga.

<sup>27</sup>Tattvapraśāsa, v. 18, p.102: "rāgo bhiṣvaṅgātmā viṣayacchedaṃ vinaiva samanyaḥ puruṣapravrttihetur vilakṣaṇo..."

<sup>28</sup>tena [vidyā-tattvam] prakāśarūpena jñānaśaktiprarocinā; MĀ 1010A, p.159.

<sup>29</sup>Kalā rouses the soul's kartrśakti while vidyā rouses its citśakti; cf. Tattva Prakāśa, v.45, p.99 and MA 10.8-9, p.258. The MA emphasizes that Śiva is ultimately responsible for the specific arousal of the two śaktis of the soul by the respective śaktis.

<sup>30</sup>An objection to Sadyojyoti's position is taken up in the TSV, v.14, p.17: "nanu prakrtireva buddhyātmanā parinatamātmanam puruṣasya bhogyatvena darśayati puruṣasya tu na kartrtvam api tu draṣṭrtvam."

<sup>31</sup>In so rousing the "citśakti" of the soul, the vidyātattva "taints" the citśakti with the bhogyā (bhogyoparaktā citvyaktiḥ, TSV on v.13, p.16) which leads to Vidyā being referred to as the "impure tattva" (aśuddhavidyā, TPT, on v. 45, p.99).

<sup>32</sup>MĀ, 10.12, p.262: "sa tena rañjito bhogyam malīmasamapi sprhan ādatte na ca bhujjāno virāgamadhigacchati."

<sup>33</sup>TSV, v.12, p.15: "tadvidyākhyam karanamātmana iti sannikṣṭatvāt-paramityucyate"; TPV, v.47, p. 100: "...iyam [vidyā] paramamantaraṅgakaraṇam ..."

<sup>34</sup>MAD, 10.10; p.260.

<sup>35</sup>TSV, v.12, p.15: "aśvena pathā dīpikayā yāṭītyadāvivātrānekakarapa-sādhye 'pi phale vidyaiva paramam karanam." A similar analogy is found in MAD, 10.9, p.259

<sup>36</sup>In grammar the term "kāraka" describes the syntactical relation between a noun and a verb in a statement; it includes all the Sanskrit declensions except the genitive (and vocative), which are kartr, karman, karaṇa, sampradāna, upadāna, and adhikaraṇa. For a discussion of the grammatical notion of a "kāraka" in light of the interaction between grammar and philosophy cf. Matilal, Logic Language and Reality, pp.372-378.

<sup>37</sup>MA, 10-7, p.257: "ityetadubhayaṃ vipra sambhūyānanyavatsthitam/ bhogakriyāvidhau jantōrnijaguṇ kartṛkarakam."

<sup>38</sup>MĀV, p.257: "tarhi bhoktrtayā kartṛvenātmoktab. tasya kartr śakterupodbalanakartrtvāt karakam hetuḥ kartri kalā."

<sup>39</sup>MĀV, p.257: "uktam ca brhaspatipādaib jantorvibhātyatiślesāt sādvitīyeva cetana" iti.

<sup>40</sup>Ibid., p.258: "kāraṃprayojakaṃ prayojakatvaṃ cāsyāstirodhāna- śaktyadhiṣṭānenetyavirodhaḥ."

<sup>41</sup>SPB, p.241.

<sup>42</sup>Ibid.

<sup>43</sup>Concerning the connection between the anādimalayrtatva condition of the soul and kalā, Aghora Śiva puts forth the following argument in the TSV (on v.18, p.20): since the consciousness (which is of the nature of drk and kriyā) of the soul in the samsāric state does not cognize all objects [i.e., since it is limited by something], it is concluded that Īśvara manifests things (abhivyanakti) in this sphere through the instrumentality of "pāśa". Aghora adds that the instrumentality of mala does not occur directly but through dīkṣā.

<sup>44</sup>The author of the Śataratnollekha (p.43) gives several synonyms used in the Āgamas for mahāmāyā: eg., nāda, parasumaṅgala, malini, anāhata bindu, aghoṣa vak, brahmakuṇḍalini tattva, vidyā etc..

<sup>45</sup>Sadyojyoti limits his discussion of mahāmoha to the sphere of the "suddhāsuddhatattvas", i.e. to those beginning with kalā, although in fact mahāmoha -- qua bindu -- has reference to the suddhā sphere as well. For a discussion of the distinction between māyā as the cause of the pure tattvas as well as the impure tattvas, cf. Śataratnollekha, p.44.

<sup>46</sup>In this respect mahāmāyā as the parigrahaśakti of Śiva; cf. Ibid, p.45.

<sup>47</sup>In the Svāyambhuva Āgama a further characteristic is added, i.e. "akala" which the Śataratnollekha explains as in note 18 above.

<sup>48</sup>cf. MA, (Māyāprakāna, v.4), trans. p.194: "It must be intelligent, since its products are seen to be so -- otherwise, there would be that most radical of all faults, uncertainty of causation itself." cf. ed.p.231: "tadacetanameva syāt kāryasyācittva-darśanāt; prāptas sarvaharo doṣaḥ karaṇāniyamo 'nyathā."

<sup>49</sup>BKV, p.56

<sup>50</sup>MA, trans. p. 194.cf. ed. p. 233: "tadapyanekamekasmādeva  
bījātprajāyate."

<sup>51</sup>Cf. Śataratnollekha, trans. p. 40: "The Kirāṇa and Matāṅgāgama bring out the difference between the two, the 'māya' and 'mala', the former that reveals (vyakti) and sheds light (prakāśa) and the latter that obscures (āvṛti) the soul and creates darkness (andhakāra)."

<sup>52</sup>SPB, p. 161: "And if their parviscience were natural, there would be conflict with the scriptural declaration of omniscience at release." MA, trans. p. 152: "The ātma is not avyāpi (not omnipresent, limited), not momentary, not one, not insentient (or inert), not a non-doer, and is ever united to intelligence, for, it is heard that after the pāśa is removed, he attains to the state of Siva."

<sup>53</sup>MA, (māyāprakaraṇa, v.78) trans. p.152.

<sup>54</sup>A very similar form of argument is taken up in the SPB, pp. 165-166. The basic distinction between karma and mala is that the former functions for enjoyment while the latter for obfuscation; Śivāgrayogin quotes vv.132-133 of the pasuprakaraṇa: "karma is of the nature of merit and demerit; and those two exist in the intellect; since they do not pervade above that (intellect), how can they serve as bonds through thought? Further, they function in respect of activity for enjoyment; how could they function in respect of obscuration?"

<sup>55</sup>This points out the unity of the mala-māyā complex, obfuscation and manifestation, the former addressing a more epistemological concern and the latter a more ontological one.

<sup>56</sup>Cf. a quote from the Svāyambhuvāgama in the Śataratnasamgraha, trans. p.37: "The beginningless 'mala' associated with souls is otherwise called 'paśutvam' (the essential nature of soul). It serves to help the sprouting (initial evolution) of māyā in the same way as the bran helps the sprouting of the grain."

<sup>57</sup>The author of the Śataratnolleka explains the Svāyambhuva's statement that "dīkṣā alone" is responsible for removing the soul's mala and states the distinction of the Saiva-darsana from the two major traditions of "jñāna" and "karma": "The words 'dīkṣā alone' is indicative of the fact that neither jñāna advocated by the Advaitin nor 'karma' expounded by the Mīmāṃsākas nor any other means expounded by the other schools of philosophy is of any avail." Cf. Śataratnollekha p.90.

## APPENDIX I

BHOGAKĀRIKĀ by Sadyojyoti (Kheṭakanandana) and VṚTTI by Aghoraśivāchārya

HAVING MADE OBEISANCE TO ŚIVA, WHO IS THE GIVER OF  
THE TRUE ENJOYMENT AND RELEASE, I AM GOING TO  
EXPLAIN THE BHOGAKĀRIKĀ VERY BRIEFLY AND CLEARLY FOR THE BENEFIT  
OF THE SLOW MINDED.

Before the venerable Sadyojyoti begins his verses that explicate the nature of enjoyment and release, he first makes obeisance to the supreme Śiva (paramaśiva) for the unhampered completion of this work:

(1) HAVING MADE OBEISANCE TO THE UNBORN AND UNCHANGING ŚIVA WHO KNOWS ALL THREE TIMES AND ALL THINGS<sup>1</sup> AND WHO IS THE GIVER OF "BHOGA", I.E., "ENJOYMENT" (WHICH OCCURS WHEN SOULS THAT HAVE THE THREE BONDS ARE IN CONTACT WITH KALĀ) AND "RELEASE" (WHICH TAKES PLACE THROUGH THE SEPARATION FROM ENJOYMENT).<sup>2</sup>

The three bonds are of the nature of mala, karma and māyā. Those who are possessed by these three bonds are the conscious souls who are called 'Sakalas', of whom there is this 'contact with kala'. This contact involves the connection (sambandha) to the constitutive parts of māyā, which are of the form of the bodies born with their respective worlds and which are of the nature of the 'Tattvas' constitutive of the subtle body, i.e., the Tattvas beginning with kalā and ending with earth. By means of this connection "He", i.e., Śiva, gives enjoyment and, by the separation from it, release. Śiva's beginningless state of release

(muktatva) indicates His ability to confer grace (anugrahakatva) and His omnipotence; for the same reason, Śiva "knows all three times and all things", i.e., He knows all the things which take place in their respective times and the lapses of times of all the living beings. Moreover, since Śiva is without mala (nirmalatva) and since He is omnipotent, His omniscience concerning all time is established. As well, since Śiva is without mala, He is "unborn", i.e., without the birth which is characterized by the connection to a body; "unchanging" (dhruva) means to be without change (avikāriṇa), i.e., not to be subject to change (pariṇāmitva), like bindu etc., as change entails materiality. Continuing the first verse, he says:

(2) FOR THE PURPOSE OF THE ADEPTS, I AM BRIEFLY DESCRIBING BOTH ENJOYMENT AND RELEASE \*ALONG WITH THEIR MEANS AS THEY ARE PROPOUNDED IN THE TEACHINGS OF RURU AND ACCOMPANIED BY LOGICAL PERFECTION.

"The Adepts" (sādhaka) are the 'Āchāryas' and so forth, who can establish both enjoyment and release. "I am briefly describing..." means just in conformity with the way both enjoyment and release along with their means are established in the Raurava Āgama. "Accompanied by logical perfection" means "established by inference" for the purpose of understanding the means (sādhana) etc. [of bhoga and mokṣa] for the Ācāryas for initiatory purposes and so forth.

Now to point out enjoyment and the means [whereby it is attained], the ones who are qualified for enjoyment are described:

(3) THE LUST FOR ENJOYMENT ARISES IN ACCORDANCE WITH THE KARMIC ACCUMULATIONS OF THOSE SENTIENT BEINGS WHO HAVE BEEN DRIVEN INTO

THE CYCLE OF WORDLY EXISTENCE BY GOD BECAUSE OF THEIR DEFILEMENT ETC.<sup>3</sup>

"The lust for enjoyment" refers to the "desire for enjoyment" that arises in accordance with the karmic predispositions (karmasamskara) during worldly existence. This condition of enjoyment is solely caused by the defilement -- i.e., by the Mala -- of those souls who have been driven into facing enjoyment through the superintendance of God (i.e., Śiva) through the instrumentality of Ananta etc.

The Sāṃkhyas raise the objection that the soul is without mala. But this is false because if the soul is without Mala, it becomes impossible for the soul to become attached to enjoyment.<sup>4</sup> Or, if it is possible for a soul without Mala to become attached to enjoyment, then this attachment also becomes possible for the released soul. The Sāṃkhyas object: the attachment [to enjoyment] is a result of the connection to passion (rāga). True! But even in the case of passion, the cause of the attachment is just due to those who possess Mala!<sup>5</sup> In this respect, it is said in the Śrīmatsvāyambhuva: "If the soul were not defiled, how could its attachment to Enjoyment ever be effected?"

He now addresses the question concerning the nature and means of enjoyment:

(4) AS THE DESIROUS ATTACHMENT TO THE MODIFICATIONS OF THE BUDDHI (BUDDHI-VRITTI-ANURĀÑJITA), ENJOYMENT IS BROUGHT ABOUT BY VARIOUS MEANS WHICH THEMSELVES ARE A PRODUCT OF THE PRIMAL MATERIAL CAUSE OF THE WORLD<sup>6</sup> INTO WHICH THE WILL OF GOD HAS ENTERED.

"God" is understood in this verse as Ananta, the only one who can agitate maya (māyākṣobhakatva). In the Śrīmatkirāṇa it is said that

"Śiva is declared to be the agent in the pure realm while Ananta is the Lord in the bound realm."<sup>7</sup> Through Ananta's desire (icchā) occurs the agitation of the primal material cause of the world (jagatbīja), which is called 'māyā'; 'enjoyment' arises through the 'means' (sādhana) which have been engendered on account of this agitation of māyā. The 'means' are [threefold]: of the nature of the subtle bodies that are of a restricted character [i.e., restricted to particular souls]; of the nature of worlds that are common [i.e., shared by different souls]; and of the nature of bodies born with worlds, which is both a restricted and common condition.<sup>8</sup> Enjoyment is here understood to be of the nature of the attachment (anurañjana) to the modifications of the Buddhi (buddhivṛtti); more specifically, enjoyment is that condition of the "attachment" of the the soul's consciousness to the modifications of the Buddhi, which is of the 'form' (rūpa) of the ascertainment (adhyavasāya) constituted by pleasure, suffering and delusion. Here the 'attachment', which is of a desirous nature (anurāga), relates to the condition of the modifications of the Buddhi whose cognitive structure (adhyavasāyākāra) is constituted by pleasure (sukha). This attachment is a 'cognition' (saṃvitti) that is just a 'direct experience' (anubhava). This experience is not of a "reflection" (pratibimba). This latter position allows the possibility of change to be attributed to the soul (ātmanah parinamitāprasāṅgāt). Thus it is said in the Śrīmatśvāyambhuva; "Enjoyment" (bhoga) is the [bound] soul's "experience", which is characterized by pleasure; suffering etc.

Now he is going to discuss the instrumentality (sādhanatā) of enjoyment with respect to the gross elements:



(5) AS THE LOCI OF THEIR QUALITIES, FUNCTIONAL-MODIFICATIONS AND SENSE ORGANS, THE EARTH, WATER, FIRE, AIR AND ETHER - WHICH ARE "FILLED OUT" BY MEANS OF THE INCREASE OF THEIR RESPECTIVE SUBTLE ELEMENTS - BRING ABOUT THE ANCILLIARY NATURE [OF BHOGA].

In this case, just the qualities etc. of the gross elements establish the ancillary nature as enjoyment (bhogāṅgatva) of these gross elements. Here the qualities are odour etc. The activities are 'bearing' etc. "Serving as the support of the sense organs" (aksabhūmitā) means "serving as that which bears the sense organs" (indriyādhāratva); the sense organs will be explained in the sequel.

The meaning of the verse, therefore, is: the earth etc., by means of their qualities and functions and by means of bearing the sense organs, become engaged in the means whereby enjoyment arises for the souls. Of what [source] are the earth and so forth? He says: 'of the filling out' by means of the 'increasing' of their respective subtle elements. The 'filling out' (puṣṭana) arises on account of the 'increasing' (pūraṇa) that is a condition of 'becoming full' (āpūra) that occurs by means of the subtle elements, which are themselves the material causes (kāraṇabhūta) [of earth etc.]. The activity of prakṛti is [likewise said to have two functions]: 'the increasing of that which has already been accomplished and the acting as the means of that which has not yet been accomplished'.<sup>9</sup> It is said in the Śrīmanmataṅga: "Through a gross and subtle condition (sthūlasukṣmatva), the gross elements with their causes, which are the subtle elements, act as the conditions (sthita) supporting (ādhāra) the organs."<sup>10</sup> As well, it is said in the Śrīmanmataṅga: "The subtle elements are like a pot and the gross elements like its covering."<sup>11</sup> It is said [in the

Tattvasaṃgraha]: "This tenfold effect [i.e. the bhūtāni and tanmātrāni], having entered into the condition of [supporting] the organs, causes the activity [of the organs]. On the other hand, the organs, on account of being without their own power to act, are only active after they come to depend on the support of the effect."

When the general function of the gross elements exists, their specific functions, bearing etc., exist as well. The general function of the gross elements, which have their locus in the subtle body, is twofold: (firstly, it consists in the property of increasing (upacayadharmitva) that takes place by means of the body as it is understood in its essential sense as a "covering over" [diha, etymological sense of deha, body], which means an "increasing" (upacaya); this property of increasing belongs to the gross elements as they take their locus (sthāna) in the external body. The second general function of the gross elements consists in their supporting of the sense organs. He says:

(6) WHEN THE EARTH, ETC. CONSTITUTE THE BODY AND SERVE AS THE LOCUS FOR THE SENSE ORGANS, THE ACTIVITIES<sup>12</sup> OF THE EARTH ETC. ARE: SUPPORTING, BRINGING TOGETHER, MATURING, STRUCTURING AND PROVIDING SPACE.

Here, the function of the earth is 'supporting' (dhṛti), which is a 'bearing' (dhāraṇa). The function of water is 'bringing together' (saṃgraha), which is a 'binding' (avaṣṭambha). The function of fire is 'maturing' (pakti), which is a 'ripening' (pāka). Air has the function of 'structuring' (vyūha), which is a 'joining of parts' (avayavaghaṭana). Ether (ākāśa) has the function of 'providing space' (avākāśadāna), which is the 'providing of a receptacle' (āspadadāna).

Now, he will describe the common function (sādhāraṇa) of these gross elements, i.e., 'the supporting of the sense organs (indriyādharaṭva)' that takes place through the locus of the subtle body:

(7-8Aa) BY HAVING ITS LOCUS IN THE 'TRANSFERENCE BODY' (ATIVĀHIKADEHASTHA); THE 'INSTRUMENT' (KARANA) TAKES ON ACTIVITIES (PRAVIJRMBHITA) AND AS WELL TRAVELS FROM ONE WOMB TO ANOTHER IN ORDER TO OBTAIN ENJOYMENT FOR SOULS ON ACCOUNT OF THE 'INVISIBLE FORCE' (ADRṢṬA) PROVIDES THE APPROPRIATE EXPERIENCES FOR [THE INDIVIDUAL] SOULS.

The 'transference body' is the 'subtle body' (sukṣmadeha):<sup>13</sup> "by means of enjoyment, the karma of souls "is caused to pass over" (ativāhayati), i.e., 'is caused to be driven away' (nāsayati)". Solely in the condition of having its locus in this subtle body is the 'instrument' -- the 'collection of organs (indriyavarga) -- active (ceṣṭate). It is said, "Due to the fact that a thing that lacks its own power (avibhutva) cannot be active (ceṣṭa) when it has no supporting-locus (nirāśraya), the collection of instruments is active solely through the support (ādhāra) of the gross elements and subtle elements,<sup>14</sup> which have their locus (stha) in the subtle body."<sup>15</sup> Moreover, on account of karma [qua 'adrṣṭa'], which yields the appropriate experiences for the individual souls, the instrument that has its locus in the subtle body travels from one womb to another in order to obtain enjoyment for those souls possessing this karma. In this respect, it is said in the Tattvasaṃgraha: "The group of Tattvas beginning with the earth and ending with kalā is bound to individual souls (pratipumniyata); on account of karma, such souls wander through all the different worlds in bodies born

of those worlds."<sup>16</sup>

The subtle body, on account of being subtle, like the spirits (piśāca) etc., is not perceivable by us; however, it is experienced through the perception of yogins:

(8Ab-8B) LIKE THE SPIRITS,<sup>17</sup> THE 'BODY OF TRANSFERENCE', WHICH IS THE LOCUS OF THE SENSES, CANNOT BE EXPERIENCED BY THE SENSES BY THOSE WHO LACK LORDLY POWERS (ANĪŚA).

Now, he describes the qualities of the gross elements:<sup>18</sup>

(9) ODOUR IS IN EARTH;<sup>19</sup> TASTE IS SIXFOLD IN EARTH, BUT SWEETNESS IS CONFINED TO EARTH AND WATER ALONE; COLOUR BELONGS TO EARTH, WATER, AND FIRE, BEING BRIGHT IN FIRE, SHINING IN WATER AND OF DIFFERENT HUES IN EARTH.

(10) THIS IS THE ARRANGEMENT WITH REGARD TO 'TOUCH'; IN BOTH EARTH AND AIR IT IS NEITHER HOT NOR COLD,<sup>20</sup> THE DIFFERENCE BEING THAT ONE IS BORN FROM MATURING, ONE NOT SO BORN: IN WATER IT IS COOL AND IN FIRE HOT.

(11) AS PRODUCED FROM SUBSTANCES DERIVED FROM SOUND, SOUND EXISTS IN THE LOWEST FOUR GROSS ELEMENTS; IN SPACE IT IS OF THE COLLOCATION OF ECHOES. THIS IS THE CORRECT OPINION SET FORTH BY THE WISE.

Here, odour is in earth just in the form of the fragrant and non-fragrant. Taste is in water and earth. Of the forms of taste that are in water, namely pungence, sourness, saltiness, sweetness, astringence, and bitterness, only sweetness is in earth. Colour is in earth, water and fire etc. In earth, colour is of manifold types: white, red, yellow,

black; in water, however, it is only of a shiny colour [śukla, white, bright]. In fire it is bright (bhāsvat).

The condition of touch (śparṣasthita) is in the air. In both the earth and air it is neither cold nor hot. What then is the difference between the two touches in earth and air? He says: "the difference is that one is born from maturing (pākaja), one not so born (apā kaja)."  
The touch in earth arises from maturing whereas the one in air does not arise from maturing -- just this is the difference. Because of this designation [between the two types of touch qualities], colour etc., which are qualities of earth, are just born from maturing. The natural touch of water is just cool and in fire just hot.

Sound arises in the four gross elements -- earth etc. -- by means of the mutual 'clashing together' of their respective substances, ground, etc.;<sup>21</sup> in space, however, sound is of the nature of an echo. Now, the Vaiśeṣikas<sup>22</sup> raise an objection; "Sound is established as the special quality of ether, on account of the cognition of it elsewhere than in its locus."<sup>23</sup> This is false because of the fallacy of 'the passage in time' (kālātyayāpadiṣṭatva)<sup>24</sup>, as the reason (hetu) contradicts both perception and the Āgamic tradition. Thus, "sound is just heard in the locus of sound, as in the drum etc." Moreover, "sound is perceived in the earth as the sound of 'rubbing together' (kaṭakaṭādika) etc.; in water as a swishing sound etc. (chalacchalādi); in fire as a blowing sound etc. (dhamadhamādi); in air as rustling etc. (śakaśakādi); and in space it is of the nature of an echo." The argument that sound is the special quality of ether is refuted in detail by us in the Mrgendravṛttidīpikā. It is further stated in the Śrīmanmrgendra: "Sound is in the five gross elements

and touch is in four. The neither cold nor hot [touch] is in the earth and air; hot and cold are in water and fire. Brightness is in fire, whiteness in water and a variety [of colours] such as whiteness etc. in earth. Colour is in the three. Taste in water is sweet and is sixfold in the earth. By the wise odour is considered to be both fragrant and non-fragrant in the earth."

Thus, summing up what has been said:

(12A-12Ba) THUS DESCRIBED, THE EARTH ETC. ARE GENERALLY ACCEPTED TO POSSESS THE COLLECTION OF ODOUR ETC.

This means: it is generally accepted that the earth etc. exist as the loci of odour. It is said: "the five subtle elements are established as the 'cause' (karanata) of the five gross elements, since the five gross elements are established as "effects", which are discerned by means of the external sense organs of beings like us. He says:

(12Bb) THE SUBTLE ELEMENTS ARE INFERRED BY MEANS OF THEM.

Thus, "the cognition' (grahana) of a quality (guna) entails the cognition of the thing that possesses the quality, since there can be no distinction (avyatirekitva) [between the quality and the thing possessing it]." He will prove that the qualities of the gross elements do not have a separate existence (aprthak bhāvah):

(13) EARTH ETC. ARE SAID TO BE INHERENTLY VARIEGATED (CITRASVABHĀVAKA) AND DISTINCT BY MEANS OF THEIR QUALITIES (GUNABHINNA); EARTH ETC. ARE REVEALED IN A SUCCESSIVE MANNER (KRAMAVYANGYA), JUST AS THE PAINTED PICTURE ON A CLOTH THAT IS COVERED OVER.

Here, the earth and so forth are being described. This is the sense: the mutual distinctions (parasparam bhinnāh) are seen by means of the qualities of odour etc. and the inherent variegations are seen by means of the differences (bheda) in the 'constitutions' (ākāra) of the ground, stones, mountains, rivers, oceans, etc. Thus, earth etc. are just revealed in a successive manner, as a painted cloth that is covered over [is revealed in a successive manner]. It is not possible to simultaneously (yugapad) grasp both the respective distinctions (bhinna) and differences in the constitutions which belong to the earth etc., as it is impossible to grasp everything at the same time which is both close at hand and far away. But this can only be revealed in a successive manner by means of inference and by the senses. What results from this? He says:

(14) DUE TO THE REASON (HETU) THAT THEY ARE REVEALED IN A SUCCESSIVE MANNER, THE EARTH ETC. COME WITHIN THE SCOPE OF THE COGNITIVE DISTINCTIONS BASED ON A DESIGNATION OF THE QUALIFIED AND THE QUALIFIER (VIŚEṢANAVIŚEṢYATVAVYAPADEŚA).

The earth etc., on account of being revealed in a successive manner, acquire the status of 'objects' of sense (viṣayatā) in terms of the designation of their relations (bhāvavyapadeśa), i.e., in terms of the cognitive distinctions based on the distinctions of the qualified thing and the qualifying thing (viśeṣanaviśeṣyarūpa), as in such cognitions as: "this earth is fragrant." In this respect:

(15-16A) NO COGNITION OF EARTH IS POSSIBLE WITHOUT A COGNITION OF ODOUR ETC., WHILE A COGNITION OF WATER ETC. TAKES PLACE

WITHOUT A COGNITION [OF ODOUR ETC.]; CONSEQUENTLY, EARTH IS SEPARATE FROM WATER ETC. BUT IS NOT SEPARATE FROM ODOUR ETC.

There can never be a cognition of the earth -- a 'qualified thing' (viśeṣya) in the form of a possessor of qualities (dharmirūpa) -- without a grasping of the qualities odour etc. -- qualifying things (viśeṣaṇa); however, even when odour etc. are not grasped in the other elements, water etc., a cognition [of the earth] still arises. Therefore, for this reason, earth is not separate (anya) from odour etc., although separate from water etc. Likewise, the same reasoning applies to the other gross elements:

(16B) BY THE WISE, THE SAME REASONING SHOULD BE APPLIED TO WATER ETC.

An objection is raised:<sup>25</sup> when beside a china rose, a quartz gem is apprehended as possessing redness (raktabhāva) -- without the apprehension of its quality as 'clear' (śaukla) [i.e. its natural colour]. Therefore, [the principle that] 'the apprehension of the thing possessed by qualities is preceded by the apprehension of the qualities (guṇigrahanasya guṇagrahanapūrvakatvam)' is unestablished; thus, he says:

(17) NOR IS THE INFERENTIAL MARK (HETU) WE ARE USING HERE INAPPLICABLE IN THE CASE OF THE JEWEL WHICH IS COGNIZED APART FROM ITS OWN COLOUR AND WHICH IS THE COLOUR OF A NEIGHBORING OBJECT, BECAUSE COLOUR IS NOT ONLY A MATTER OF HUE (VARṆA) BUT INCLUDES THE GENERAL CONFIGURATION (SAMSTHĀNA) AS WELL.

Herein the quality (guṇa) 'colour' -- which substances possess -- is held to be of the nature of a 'configuration' (samsthāna) possessing 'hue' (varṇa); therefore, even when there is the apprehension of the



quartz gem which is next to the china rose there is the remembrance of the past apprehension of the 'configuration' of circular, four-cornered, etc. along with the memory of the apprehension of its clear hue. Thus, [the principle] 'the apprehension of the thing possessed by qualities' is preceded by the apprehension of the qualities' is established; hence, the inferential mark (hetu) is not unestablished.

Now, having established the ancillary nature of the gross elements in the act of enjoyment (bhogāṅgatva), he will demonstrate that the gross elements are 'effects' (kāryatva) -- although without supplying a specific rule (anirdeśa) -- in order to further qualify the establishment of the subtle elements in the proposition that "the subtle elements are inferred by means of the gross elements [v. 12Bb]":

(18) THE INFERENTIAL MARK (HETU) ESTABLISHING THE FACT THAT THE QUALITIES (GUṆA) ARE PRODUCTS (KĀRYATĀ) IS ALSO FIT TO ESTABLISH THAT THE SPHERE OF THINGS BEGINNING WITH EARTH AND ENDING WITH KALĀ HAVE A CAUSE (KĀRĀNA).

It is said: "on account of the condition of manifoldness (anekatva) in the case of the qualities (guṇa), which are of a non-conscious nature, a condition of the priority of the cause (kāranapūrvakatva) exists, as in the case of a pot etc." Thus, just by means of this inferential mark the earth etc. are established as products (kāryatva). It is said that the subtle body, which is restricted to individual souls, is of the nature of the thirty Tattvas beginning with the earth and ending with kalā, on account of the failure to establish anything else to account for the variety (vaicitrya) of enjoyment as it is manifested.

that there is an increase of the qualities (gunādhikya), i.e., that there is a sequential increase by one (ekottara) of sound etc. which are possessed by ether etc.). "On account of being without characteristics" means 'on account of not being characterized by qualities', i.e. 'on account of the nature of the group of sound etc. which is of a non-manifest character'; on this account, the subtle elements sound etc., are the successively-operating 'generating causes' -- i.e.. material causes (upādānabhūta) -- of the ether etc. The subtle elements endeavor to establish the successive ordering of the creation (sr̥ṣṭīkrama) of the gross elements, ether etc., which, as the substrata of qualities (dharmin), possess the manifested qualities. The subtle elements engage in 'the condition of going lower and lower (adhodhobhāva)' by means of the successive increase of the qualities; this means that the subtle elements cause the condition of going lower and lower even of the 'effects' (kārya).

Again, how do the subtle elements contribute as ancillaries in the act of enjoyment (bhogāṅgatva)? He says:

(20) IN THE SUBTLE ELEMENTS ETC., WHICH ARE THE GENERATING CAUSES OF ALL THINGS (SARVAYONI), THE CAUSATIVE FACTOR (KARTRTA) INVOLVED IN THE ARISING OF ITS OWN EFFECT AND OF ITS INCREASING IS MOST CERTAINLY THE MEANS WHEREBY THE AIM OF THE SOUL IS ACCOMPLISHED (PŪMARTHA).

The ancillaries involved in the act of enjoyment '[both] act as the means of that which has not yet been accomplished and increase that which has already been accomplished', i.e., the ancillary nature of

In the Āgamas it is said: "the priority of the cause is established on account of the condition of manifoldness that exists when there is the condition of unconsciousness occurring by means of those Tattvas -- earth etc. -- that are restricted to individual souls."

Now it is said, "the successiveness (krama) of the earth etc. is established just on account of the distinctions between their respective qualities, i.e., on account of the establishment of the subtle elements as the causes of the gross elements; he says:

(19) THE SUBTLE ELEMENTS EXCEED EACH OTHER IN A HIERARCHY (EKOTTARĀDHIKYA) BY POSSESSING ONE MORE OF SOUND ETC.,<sup>26</sup> ON ACCOUNT OF BEING WITHOUT CHARACTERISTICS (AVIŚĒSATA), THE SUBTLE ELEMENTS ARE ESTABLISHED AS THE SUCCESSIVELY-OPERATING (KRAMA) GENERATING CAUSES (YONI) OF EARTH ETC., WHICH POSSESS QUALITIES.

This is the meaning: "the material cause (upādāna) of ether is the subtle element sound, whose natural condition (svarūpa) is just the sound that has the character of being unmanifest (anabhivyaktaviśeṣaśabda-mātrasvarūpa); going one step lower, the material cause of air is the subtle element touch, whose natural condition is just of the nature of sound and touch. The material cause of water is the subtle element taste, which is just of the nature of sound, touch and taste. The material cause of earth is the subtle element: odour, which is of the nature of the five qualities beginning with sound and ending with odour."

This is the meaning of the terms: "[the subtle elements] exceed each other in a hierarchy by possessing one more of sound etc." means

enjoyment is established both on account of the condition which generates the means whereby enjoyment is accomplished -- which involves the generating causes of the effects (karyayoni) (which are māya etc.) and the subtle elements -- and by means of the condition which increases this.

Now, in order to describe the condition of being an ancillary in the act of enjoyment in the case of the sense organs as well, he first establishes the motor organs (karmendriya).

(21) THE 'GENITALS, FEET, ANUS, MOUTH AND HANDS' ARE DISTINCT FROM THE ACTIVITIES 'DELIGHT, MOVEMENT, EVACUATION, SPEAKING, AND GRASPING'.

'Evacuation' is the release of bodily excretions. The meaning of the verse is that the organs of action, genitals etc., are established by the fact (hetutva) of the activities of delight etc.

An objection is raised: "the organs are just these [physical] loci, the genitals etc." This is not the case, as he says:

(22) EVEN IN THE PRESENCE OF A GIVEN BODY PART (STHĀNA) THERE MAY BE AN ABSENCE OF A GIVEN ACTIVITY: THE ENTITY UPON WHICH THE ABSENCE OR PRESENCE OF THE ACTUAL ACTIVITY DEPENDS IS THUS THE MOTOR ORGAN, AND NOT JUST THE BODY PART ALONE.

The activity of movement etc. is not seen to occur without the respective capacity of the [motor] organ, even though there is the presence of some physical condition, such as the feet etc. Therefore, even when the given body parts exist, their activities are dependent for

their absence or presence on the existence of the capacities, i.e., the five organs, which are separate [from the body parts]. Thus, just in this manner are the motor organs established and the position of the Naiyāyikas and others rejected. The objection is raised: just on account of the activity of raising the eyebrows etc., the infinity of the motor organs is established;<sup>27</sup> thus, he says:

(23) THE MOTOR ORGANS HAVE BEEN ESTABLISHED BY MEANS OF THE ACTIVITIES, DELIGHT ETC.; THEREFORE, THE CLAIM THAT THE MOTOR ORGANS ARE INFINITE (ANANTYA) CANNOT BE ACCEPTED ON ACCOUNT OF THE ACTIVITIES.

It would be false (doṣa) for us to hold that motor organs are functions of parts of the body (śarīraikadeśavṛttih). As in the case of the sense of touch wherein it is established that this sense pervades the body, so it is in the case of the [motor organ] 'hand' whose activity is inclusive of the 'raising of the eyebrows' etc.<sup>28</sup> As well, 'the activity of evacuation belongs [in all parts of the body] to [what is designated as] the anus. On account of the distinctions entailed by the inherent characteristics (antarbhāva) of delight etc. -- even in the case of the raising of the eyebrows etc. -- the infinity of the organs cannot be established. In sum [to explain the verse], there is no inconsistency in holding that "there are only five motor organs due to fact of the primary activities, described as delight etc." and "the respective designations of the motor organs are not infinite, since the special locus (viśeṣādhiṣṭhāna) of the motor organs is in various places."

Now, he will establish the sense organs:

(24) IN THE GRASPING OF SOUND ETC. THE ACTIVITY OF THE AGENT --

I.E. THE SOUL -- IS NOT WITHOUT AN INSTRUMENT; MOREOVER, THERE CANNOT BE JUST ONE INSTRUMENT, AS A NECESSARY REQUIREMENT (APEKṢĀ) WOULD NOT CEASE.

It is proper to hold that without an instrument the activity of grasping sound etc. would not arise, as the activity of 'chopping' would not arise without an axe. Moreover, nor do these five activities arise just on account of one instrument, as hearing etc; for, in this case, the requirement for another instrument would not cease. For example, when the sense of hearing, which is the instrument in the grasping of sound exists, we see that there is a necessary requirement for another instrument -- the sense of touch etc. -- when there is the grasping of touch etc. This is thus the meaning of the verse.

"Exactly what are the instruments?" In answer, he says:

(25A) THE INSTRUMENTS ARE: EAR, SKIN, EYE, TONGUE, AND NOSE;

The instruments are inferred by means of the failure (anupapatti) to bring forth anything else to explain the [the particular sense organ restrictiveness of the] grasping of sound etc.; accordingly, he says:

(25B) THE FUNCTION OF THESE INSTRUMENTS LIES IN THE PERCEIVING (ĀLOCANA) OF SOUND ETC. WHEN IN THE PROXIMITY (SAMNIDHI) OF SOUND ETC.<sup>29</sup>

If we were to take the reading of "like" (sam̐ibha) [in place of "proximity" (sam̐idhi)], the meaning of this half of the verse would be: the sense organs, which are superintended over (adhiṣṭhita) by Manas, together with the mind (buddhi), the ascertaining faculty (adhyavasāyin), supply the Vidyā Tattva with its objects (viṣayatva), i.e. the internal

'forms' (antarākāra) that resemble the external 'forms' (bāhyākārasadrśa) of sound etc. In the sequel we will describe how the soul apprehends things through the instrument designated 'Vidyā' that is related to (antarāṅga) the 'form' of the cognitive activity of the mind, which has been presented with things from the senses. It has been said elsewhere: "the soul is conscious of objects that have been cognitively ascertained by the mind."

It is not the case that the sense organs are just the physical loci (sthāna) as the auditory passage of the ear etc. Moreover, "the sense organs are just 'conditions' (stha) that are 'capacities' (śakti); the cognition of sound etc. does not arise when there is a defect in the capacity -- due to karmic influences -- of the physical loci;" he says:

(26) DO NOT THINK THAT THE BODY PARTS ALONE ARE THE SENSE ORGANS BECAUSE EVEN WHEN THERE IS THE PRESENCE OF THE BODY PARTS THERE CAN BE AN ABSENCE OF COGNITION DUE TO SOME DEFECT.

He now discusses the internal organ (antaḥkarana):

(27) COGNITION (BOODHA), EFFORT (SAMRAMBHA) AND WILL (ICCHĀ) CANNOT BE BROUGHT ABOUT BY THE VARIOUS MEANS OF ENJOYMENT THAT HAVE ALREADY BEEN DISCUSSED; RATHER, THEY ARE BROUGHT ABOUT BY MEANS OF THE INTERNAL ORGANS: MIND (BUDDHI), EGO (AHAMKĀRA), AND MANAS.

The means whereby 'will' etc. are accomplished are the internal instruments, mind, ego and Manas; one is led to this conclusion for three reasons: 1) the Tattvas beginning with earth are solely established by

means of their effects; 2) there is no way to prove that there is another reason to explain the effects (kāryāntarahetutve pramāṇābhāvāt); 3) it is not possible to postulate a manifold number of Tattvas [to account for the effects] (anekatatvaparikalpanābhāvaprasaṅgāt).<sup>30</sup>

The term 'will' refers to 'volition' (saṃkalpa), which is of the nature of the sequential attentiveness (ekagrataṭaparaparyāyo 'vadhānātmaḥ) and which is the function of manas. "Effort" is the 'exertion' (prayatna) of the ego; 'cognition' is the 'mental activity' (adhyavasāya) of the mind. All this will be explained in the sequel.

The means whereby the purpose of the soul (puruṣārtha) is accomplished takes place through the mutual assistance (parasparopakāra) of the internal and external instruments; he says:

(28-29) AS, IN THE CASE OF THE PALANQUIN AND THE PALANQUIN BEARERS, THE INTERNAL AND THE EXTERNAL INSTRUMENTS COMBINE TOGETHER TO ACCOMPLISH THE ACTIVITY OF WILLING ETC.; IF THERE IS AN ABSENCE OF EITHER THE ACCOMPLISHMENT OF 'INWARD ACTIVITIES' (ANTARMUKHĀGATA) OR THE COGNITIONS DIRECTED TOWARD EXTERNAL OBJECTS, THE ACTIVITY OF WILLING ETC., WHICH IS FOR THE PURPOSE OF CONSCIOUSNESS, DOES NOT ARISE.

The internal and the external instruments, like the palanquin and the planguin bearers, together become the means whereby the activities of willing etc. are accomplished. This is so for two reasons. First, ascertainment etc. (adhyavasāyādi) is seen to occur only when there is prior perception of external objects (bāhyārthālocanapūrvā). Secondly, it is impossible to apprehend an external object without



attentiveness etc. (avadhānādi). Consequently, when there is the loss of either collection of the external instruments of sound etc. or of the internal instruments (i.e., of 'the accomplishment of the inward activities') neither the activities of willing etc. nor the cognitions of external objects such as sound etc. would arise as providing the means of accomplishing the purpose of the soul (the phrase 'for the purpose of consciousness' means 'for the purpose of the soul' and is employed to refer to enjoyment). Analogously, when there is the absence either of the palanquin or the palanquin bearers, the activity of 'bearing' is not observed.

Now he addresses the position of an opponent:

(30A) OTHERS ESTABLISH THE INTERNAL INSTRUMENT AS LIFE-FORCE (PRĀṆA), WHICH MANIFESTS CONSCIOUSNESS (VYAKTACETANA).

'Others' refers to one school of the materialists (lokāyata) who claim that the internal instrument is just the 'air' (vāyu), which is characterized by the term 'life-force'. This life-force manifests consciousness (abhivyaktacetana) as a property which is a result of the transformation of the elements (bhūtapariṇāmaviśeṣa); the life-force is the cause (hetubhuta) of sentient existence etc. (jīvanādi) through the functions of 'taking up' etc. (praṇayana). He points out the falsity of this view:

(30B) WITHOUT VOLITIONAL ACTIVITIES (PRAYATNA) THERE IS NO LIFE-FORCE. BUT THEN WHAT IS THE INSTRUMENT OF THE VOLITIONAL ACTIVITIES?

Behavioral activity (pravṛtti) is indeed seen to be preceded by volitional activity (prayatna) on account of the intermittence (kāḍācitkatva)

of the air that is of the nature of the life-force. It is said:  
 "How can there be the drawing out of activity (prerānākaraṣa) without the volitional activity of air?" The internal instrument is consequently established in response to the question: "In the establishment of volitional activity, which is of the nature of 'active effort' (saṃrambha), how then should the instrument be conceived?" It will be said in the sequel, "the function of the ego is 'active effort'." Moreover, if it is claimed that 'the production of consciousness as well arises from this air', another instrument ought to be brought forward to account for this production;

(31) THE TASK OF EMITTING CONSCIOUSNESS (CAITANYODGĀRABHĀRA), WHICH IS ATTRIBUTED TO THIS LIFE-FORCE--DESCRIBE ITS INTERNAL INSTRUMENT! AS WELL, BELONGING TO THE LIFE-FORCE, CONSCIOUSNESS CAN NEVER BECOME MANIFEST, BECAUSE AIR (VĀYUTVA) IS LIKE THE EXTERNAL WIND.

"It is not correct to argue that the manifestation of consciousness can belong to something unconscious (jāda), as this would result in the claim that the manifestation of consciousness can belong to everything." Consciousness does not belong to this [air qua life-force], because air is like the air that is external [to the body]."

Thus having refuted the claim that the life-force is the internal instrument (prānātaḥkaraṇa), he now discusses the role of Manas (manasādhana) as one of the three forms of the internal instrument already mentioned.

(32) MANAS IS THE CAUSE OF THE WILL (ICCHĀHETU): IT CHANGES QUICKLY (ASU SAMĀRIH) AND PROMPTS THE EXTERNAL INSTRUMENTS (DEVA) INTO

ACTION. BECAUSE IT FUNCTIONS SO RAPIDLY, THE COGNITIONS OF THE AGENT CANNOT TAKE PLACE SIMULTANEOUSLY (YUGAPAD).

By the term 'deva' the sense organs are indicated, because they 'shine' (devana), i.e., they illuminate things (dyotana).<sup>31</sup> The word 'cognitions' in the verse refers to those cognitions that are characterized by having this or that object (tattadarthavisayaṃ jñānam). Even when there is the soul's connection between the senses and their objects, the sense organs do not function simultaneously; in no way can this ever happen.<sup>32</sup> Manas should be conceived as that which prompts the external sense organs and as the cause of attention (avadhāna), which is of the nature of volition (samkalpa), i.e., 'will' (icchā) and is the 'instrument' in activity (pravṛtti). It is said, "the controlling factor (adhikārin) is twofold: it superintends (adhishthāna) over the external organs and it internally superintends over the internal organ, i.e., the volitional activity of pleasure etc. (sukhādisamlalpa)."<sup>33</sup> It is said in the Mataṅga: "The twofold controlling factor (adhikarāna) is the consciousness (citta [i.e. Manas]) that causes the enjoyment of the enjoyer: one part always exists by [the control over] the external organs under its control and the other part exists by its own activity, i.e., by volition (samkalpa). Manas provides the capacity (sāmarthya) of the sense organs with an internal locus (antahsthita); for this reason, it is considered to be an internal organ."<sup>34</sup> It is as well said in the Śrīmanmrgendra: "Manas is possessed of the rapid activity that prompts the sense organs into action and is characterized by volition."<sup>34</sup>

An objection is raised: five cognitions are seen to arise simultaneously when one is eating (āsvadana) a cake (śaṣkuli) that is

very large (dTrghatara), pleasing to look at (abhirūpa), and pleasant to smell (svādusurabhi)--and there is a nice murmuring sound (abhijātamarmaraśabdavat).<sup>35</sup> No, this is not the case! The five cognitions arise solely in an indistinguishable (alakṣya) and imperceptible (sūkṣma) sequentiality (krama), like the perforation that is made in the hundred lotus leaves [by a needle].<sup>36</sup> Thus, it is said that Manas 'changes rapidly'.

(Now he establishes the ego:

(33A-33Bb) THE EFFORT (SAMBRAMBHA) THAT PROMPTS INTO ACTIVITY AIR (VĀYU) WITH ITS FIVE FUNCTIONS TO SUSTAIN LIFE (JĪVANA) IS A FUNCTION (VRITI) OF THE EGO;

"To sustain life" means 'for the purpose of sustaining the body.' The 'five functions' are "bringing forward (prāṇayana), discharging (apāṇayana), etc."; by means of their respective functions (vr̥tti), they acquire the designations of life-force (prāṇa), respiration (apāṇa), etc. That which prompts into activity (pravartika) the air is of the nature of 'effort' (saṃrambha), i.e., 'exertion' (prayatna), which is the function of the ego. Thus is the ego established.

In the Śrīmanmrgendra it is said: "thus, an instrument of consciousness, 'pride' (garva) [i.e. ego] has arisen from the mind, which is from something other than the manifest [i.e. the guṇas]; by its effort (saṃrambha) etc., the five airs of the body become active."<sup>37</sup> The activity (vyāpāra) of the vital-force (prāṇa) is 'bringing forward' (prāṇayana), which directs the subtle body either below or upwards. The activity of respiration (apāṇa) is the lower reaching 'discharging' (apāṇayana) of excrement etc. The activity of generality (samāna)

is the 'distributing' (nayana) of the nutrients (rasarūpa) of food etc. throughout the body. The activity of the diffused air (vyāna) is the 'bending' (vinamana) of the limbs of the body. The activity of 'breathing upwards' (udāna) is the 'raising' (unnayana) of interior sound into articulate sound (varnatā). Thus, the essentials of the five activities have been discussed. Since it is said that the agency of udgāra (expelling) etc. belongs to air (vāyu), the Śrīmatkālottara says:<sup>38</sup> "In eructation, nāga is emitted; in the activity of opening the eyes, it is kūrma which is present; in sneezing it is krkara; in yawning it is Devadatta; in nourishment (posa), it is the acquisition of wealth, which is not abandoned even at death."

Furthermore, the activity (vṛtti) that specifically belongs to the ego concerns the conception (pratyaya) that is of the form (rūpa) of an ascertainment (adhyavasāya) of the cognizer (grāhaka), as in "I am", which appears the same (ekarūpa) throughout the cognitions of all objects; there is a complete difference between this kind of conception and the one that is a result of the mind (buddhi-kārya) in the form of an ascertainment of an object that is grasped (grāhya) and which is of a separate form (bhinnarūpa) for each object. He says:

(33Bb) THE OTHER IS THAT WHICH IS DIFFERENT FROM THE CONCEPTION  
OF THE OBJECT.

This means: the conception that is of the nature of the activity of the ego is different from the conception of the object. An objection is raised: "the specific activities of hearing etc. are the grasping of sound etc.; since the common activity of these sense organs is 'effort',

why postulate something else, i.e. the ego." Hence he says:

(34) EFFORT. (SAMRAMBHA) CANNOT BE ESTABLISHED AS THE COMMON ACTIVITY OF THE SENSE ORGANS BECAUSE EVEN WHEN THERE IS A DEFECT IN ONE OF THE SENSE ORGANS, THE EGO CONTINUES TO FUNCTION.

This means: the effect (kārya) that specifically belongs to the ego is either the conception, 'I am' or this effort that exists even when there is a defect in one of the sense organs, since it is said: "when one of the agents responsible for a common effect is not functioning, no activity arises." It follows that "the collection of the subtle elements, organs of action, and sense organs, together with Manas, arise solely from the ego." He points this out:

(35) THE THREE DIVISIONS (SKANDHA) OF THE EGO GENERATE, IN A SEQUENTIAL MANNER, THE THREE GROUPS, CALLED TAIJASA ETC., WHICH ARE DERIVED FROM SATTVA ETC.

The abundance (bāhula) of sattva, rajas, and tamas becomes in a sequential manner, the threefold grouping of sāttvika, rājasa and tāmāsa, which have the names taijasa, vaikārika and bhūtādi. The ego's triadic condition of being sāttvika etc. is due to the abundance of the sattva quality (guṇa) etc. The mixture of the different qualities of the ego's triadic condition arises in accordance with the maxim that "there is no change without mixture."

"What arises and from whence does it arise?" In response to this he says:

(36) SINCE THE QUALITY (GUṆA) OF THE SENSE ORGANS AND MANAS IS

OF AN ILLUMINATING NATURE, THE SENSE ORGANS THEREFORE DERIVE FROM THE EGO, WHICH IS SATTVIKA AND IS THUS SIMILAR TO THEM.

Now, after he states the Naiyāyika doctrine, he will then refute it:

(37) OTHERS CLAIM THAT THE SENSE ORGANS ARE DERIVED FROM THE GROSS ELEMENTS SINCE THE REASON (HETU) IS UNESTABLISHED CONCERNING THE RESTRICTION (NIYAMA) OF THE SCOPE (VIŚAYA) [OF THE SENSE ORGANS].

This is just what they think: "the ear is the sole apprehender of sound, skin the sole apprehender of touch etc." Thus, on account of the restrictedness of the scope of the sense organs with their respective objects, the sense organs arise from the gross elements, which are the loci of sound etc.<sup>39</sup> However, if the ego is construed as the cause of the sense organs, the sense organs would be of one nature (ekarūpa), since they would be derived from one cause. There would, therefore, be no restrictiveness of the scope of each sense organ. Thus, the Naiyāyikas think that the reason (hetu) is unestablished on account of the unestablishment of the accomplishment (sādhaka) of the restrictiveness concerning the material cause (prakṛtiniyama) of the sense organs, i.e., of the restrictiveness concerning their scope.<sup>40</sup>

In response: in the case where the sense organs are restricted to a certain [material] scope, the sense organs should just grasp those gross elements (along with their qualities) which are the material causes of the respective sense organs. However, the eye etc. grasps different substances and their qualities:

(38) JUST IN A NON-RESTRICTIVE MANNER DOES THE SKIN, WHICH IS RELATED TO THE WIND, GRASP THE SUBSTANCES ALONG WITH WIND AND THE FOUR 'TOUCHES' RELATING TO THE FOUR SUBSTANCES.

The sense of touch, which is held to be related to the wind (vayavyatva), grasps the earth, water and fire together with the wind (and the four touches which are related to them). He adds:

(39) MOREOVER, THE SENSE OF SIGHT GRASPS THREE SUBSTANCES AND THE COLOURS IN THEM; CONSEQUENTLY, ONE CANNOT POSTULATE A [MATERIAL] RESTRICTION CONCERNING THE SCOPE OF THE SENSE ORGANS.

He now puts forth another criticism:

(40) IF ONE HOLDS THAT THE RESTRICTION OF THE SCOPE OF THE SENSE ORGANS IS DUE TO THEIR ORIGIN IN THE MATERIAL ELEMENTS, IT WILL BE IMPOSSIBLE FOR PEOPLE TO HAVE COGNITIONS -- DERIVED FROM THE SENSES -- OF 'MOVEMENT', 'GENERAL TRAIT' AND 'INTIMATE UNION'.

When there is the acceptance of a restriction of the scope of the sense organs, which serves a material purpose (bhautikatvasādhana), the cognitions arising from the sense organs concerning the categories (padārtha) of 'movement', 'general trait' and 'inherence' -- which you accept as distinct from the elements and their qualities -- ought not arise.

But how can there be a difference in the senses qua effects when these senses are of the same nature as the ego?

The differences in the senses is thought to be 'like the arising of differences in the changes of sugar cane in molasses, candy, etc.



"When there is a requirement for a restricting factor (niyamaka) in the grasping of sound etc. by the sense of hearing etc., we hold that the restricting factor is just karma, which is the bestower of human destiny (purusārtha). He says:

(41) I DO NOT HOLD THAT THE CAUSE OF THE RESTRICTION ARISES FROM THE EGO: RATHER, THE CAUSE IS KARMA, WHICH IS THE BESTOWER OF HUMAN DESTINY (PURUṢĀRTHA) ACCORDING TO THE WILL OF ŚIVA (BHAVERITA).

We do not hold that the cause in the restriction of the scope is just the ego (ahamkārajatva); rather, the cause is karma, which is superintended over by Śiva (śivādhiṣṭhita) -- this is the meaning.

When it is held that a portion of space, which is characterized by an opening in the body, makes sound manifest (śabdāvadyotaka), then it follows that the sense of hearing should even belong to the nasal cavities! Thus, in the case of the restriction of the grasping of sound, which solely belongs to the space of the ear, even those who hold that the sense organs are material maintain that the restricting factor is just 'karma', designated as 'the invisible factor' (adrṣṭa). He says:

(42) DUE TO THE FEAR OF POSTULATING MANY LOCI OF HEARING, OTHERS AS WELL CLAIM THAT KARMA, WHICH IS THE BESTOWER OF THAT [HUMAN DESTINY], IS THE CAUSE OF THE RESTRICTING OF THE ENJOYMENT OF SOUND TO AN INHERENCE [IN THE ETHER CIRCUMSCRIBED BY THE BODY].

This is the sense of the verse. On account of the fear of the possibility of there being many sources of hearing when it is postulated that the apprehender of sound is innate to the ether of the body, then by you as well it is established that in the restricting of the apprehend-

ing of sound, which is solely the ether of the ear, the cause is just karma, the bestower of human destiny.

He is now going to discuss the motor organs as arising from the ego:

(43) SINCE AN EFFECT ACTS IN CONFORMITY WITH ITS CAUSE, THE COLLECTION OF MOTOR ORGANS, WHICH ACT AS THE AGENTS OF ACTION, ARISE FROM THE VAIKĀRIKA [ASPECT OF THE EGO] WHICH IS RĀJASA.

Since an effect is seen to act in conformity with its cause, the collection of motor organs, which cause activity (kriyāhetu), arise from the division of the ego called 'vaikārika', which is rājasa and is the cause of activity (pravṛttihetutva); it is derived from the quality (guṇa) of rajas. The same principle [i.e., the cause-effect conformity] applies in this case: because they are of an illuminating nature, the sense organs are said to be derived from sattva, as illumination is a property of sattva.

If one otherwise holds that the arising [of the effects of the ego] is due to the oneness (ekasmāt) of these two groups [sense and motor organs], which are by nature distinct, then one commits oneself to the fallacy of infinite regress concerning the non-restrictiveness of the cause (kāraṇāniyama); he says:

(44) IF IT IS THOUGHT THAT THE ARISING OF BOTH THE SĀTTVIKA GROUP AND THE RĀJASA GROUP ARE SOLELY DERIVED FROM SATTVA, THEN IT WILL BE IMPOSSIBLE TO WARD OFF THE LOGICAL FAULT OF 'INFINITE REGRESS'.

(ANAVASTHĀ)

Thus:

(45) MOREOVER, AS SEPARATE FROM THE OTHER TWO GROUPS AND AS MANIFESTED FROM TAMAS, THE GROUP OF SUBTLE ELEMENTS THEREFORE ARISES FROM THE EGO [ASPECT] CALLED 'ELEMENTAL' (BHŪTĀDI).

Now, he described the cause (hetutva) of the ascertainment etc. (adhyavasāyādi) which belongs to the Buddhi:

(46) THE ACTIVITY (VRITTI) OF THE MIND (BUDDHI) SHOULD BE RECOGNIZED AS 'COGNITION' (BODHA) ON ACCOUNT OF BEING THE LOCUS WHEREBY THE COGNITION OF THE SOUL IS MANIFESTED AND NEVER ON ACCOUNT OF THE INSTRUMENTALITY OF THE SENSE ORGANS WHEREBY THERE IS THE MANIFESTATION IS OF THE FORM OF THE OBJECT.

The manifestation (prakāśa) that is of the nature (rūpa) of the ascertainment (adhyavasāya) of external objects, as in 'this is a pot', arises on account of the instrumentality of the sense organs. Aside from this, there is the activity of the mind, which should be designated by the term 'cognition' (bodha) on account of being the condition whereby there is the manifestation (vyaktisthānatva) of the cognition belonging to the soul; this cognition is described as the manifestation that is characterized by Dispositions (bhāva) and Conceptions (Pratyaya) -- which will be discussed in the sequel -- or else as the "internal" manifestation of memory, imagination, etc. Thus, "the mind is established as having the characteristic (liṅga) of conceptions, memory and etc." It is said in the

Śrīmanmrgendra: "This manifestation of the mind is characterized by Dispositions and Conceptions. It is called 'cognition' on account of being the locus (bhūmitā) of the manifestation of cognition for the bound soul." This mental cognition (buddhibodha) occurs in three ways; he says:

(47Aa) IMAGINATION (KLRPTI), DISCERNMENT (MATI) AND REMEMBRANCE (SMRTI):

"Imagination" refers to the imaginative envisioning (pratibhā), i.e., the activity of imagining (kalpana). 'Discernment' is the ascertaining activity (adhyavasāya), i.e., understanding (jñāna) -- cognitive activity (manana).

Now, he concludes that the differences of the internal organ are established on account of the differences in the 'effects' (kārya), such as will, etc.

(47Ab-47B) SINCE THE EFFECTS (JĀTA)--WHICH ARE CALLED WILL, EFFORT AND COGNITION -- DESIGNATE SEPARATE FUNCTIONS (ARTHA), THE INTERNAL ORGAN IS TRIPARTITE.

This is the meaning: even when there is the subordinate distinctions of memory etc., the activity of the mind (buddhivṛttitva) is 'cognition', since this is the single function (ekārthatva) of the mind; the activities of will etc. are separate causes, because they have separate functions (bhinnārthatva).

An objection is raised. Just let the means whereby Enjoyment is accomplished be attributed to the cause whereby things are apprehended, which [function] belongs to the senses, since the condition of being an object of enjoyment is due to the earth etc. becoming objects [of the

senses]. The means whereby enjoyment is accomplished cannot be attributed to the mind, which is of the form of the cognition (samvedana) that arises in the soul on account of the contact between the senses and object. Rather, according to the Naiyāyikas and others, the mind is only a quality of the soul; he says:

(48) [OBJECTION]: BUT, THE OBJECT OF COGNITION (SAMVEDYA) IS ESTABLISHED AS SOMETHING WHICH IS A QUALITY OF SOMETHING OF LIKE NATURE; AS WELL, THE MIND (BUDDHI) IS NOT AN OBJECT OF COGNITION (ASAMVEDYA) -- SUCH IS YOUR EXCELLENT LOGIC!

This is the meaning. In this case, cognition is twofold: of the nature of ascertainment (adhyavasāya) and not of the nature of ascertainment. The latter exists, and exists eternally, simply as an apprehending factor (grahaka), which is an innate quality of the soul. The former, however, exists in a condition characterized by "arising and perishing", and is not an innate condition of the soul, as it is improper for a non-eternal property (anityasvabhāva) to belong to something eternal as this would attribute non-eternality to something innately eternal. An eternal thing cannot be [empirically] experienced. Therefore, the cognition that is of the nature of ascertainment is not an innate property of the soul; rather, it is an innate property of something else -- the mind. The mind is the cause of the ascertaining of the Dispositions and is itself qualified by dharma, jnana etc. As well, the condition of being an object of experience (samvedyatā) just belongs to the mind, since a) the mind is an object of enjoyment through its nature as being connected to the three qualities (sattva etc.)

in the form of the Dispositions and Conceptions, and since b) the mind (buddhi) [itself] is of the nature of the ascertainment of the object. It is not, however, a quality of the soul. Thus it is said in the Tattvasamgraha: "In short, the mind, which is of the form (rūpa) of pleasure etc. and the constitution (ākāra) of the object, is an object of enjoyment." There is also the use of the term 'mind' in this manner; "the mind is an object [of cognition] on account of its association with the qualities sattva etc., like the earth etc." As well, it is said: "Like the sense organs, the instrumentality of the mind is established on account of being the cause in the ascertainment of the object."

An objection is raised: we hold that the Dispositions, Dharma etc., are as well qualities of the soul! This is false, as it is improper to attribute the refining (samskāra) of the soul to these! The refinement (samskāra) of karmic activities such as the vyotistoma rite etc., does not arise in the soul, since there is no change seen to occur in the refinement of the soul by such activities as farming etc.; rather, in whatever locus actions create such refinements, that locus is unconscious (jada)-- which is, in the case at hand, the mind. The same thing applies to the refinement (samskāra) of knowledge etc; for, just due to the force of the refinements (samskāra) of knowledge etc., the distinct appearance of things is seen even when the object does not exist, as in dreaming, remembering and imagining. As a result of the preceding:

(49) THE INTERNAL AND EXTERNAL ORGANS ARE THE IMMEDIATE MEANS

WHEREBY ENJOYMENT IS ACCOMPLISHED. A MEANS FOR THE ACCOMPLISHMENT OF ENJOYMENT IS NECESSARY SINCE "WITHOUT AN OBJECT-OF-ENJOYMENT THERE IS NO ENJOYMENT".<sup>45</sup>

The collection of internal and external organs is the immediate instrument of enjoyment, which is of the nature of the experience (vedana) of joy, suffering, etc. The Srīmatsvāyambhuva states: "Enjoyment is the [bound] soul's experience, which is characterized by joy, suffering, etc."<sup>46</sup> However, this enjoyment would not arise without the objects-of-enjoyment, eg., incense, sandalwood, etc.; thus, there needs to be a means (sādhana) for the bringing about of the prior apprehension of the ascertainment of pleasure, etc. He illustrates this with examples:<sup>47</sup>

(50) JUST AS A RULER EMPLOYS SOLDIERS FOR CONQUERING, SO THE SOUL EMPLOYS THE MIND ETC. FOR COGNIZING ETC.

(51) JUST AS AGENCY BELONGS TO THE RULER WHEN CONQUERING RESTS IN THE ARMY, SO AGENCY BELONGS TO THE SOUL WHEN COGNITION ETC. REST IN THE MIND ETC.

(52) THE CONQUEST OF THE ARMY IS NOT FOR ITS OWN SAKE, BUT FOR THE SAKE OF THE ACCOMPLISHING OF THE THINGS THAT ARE DESIRED OF THE CONQUEST [BY THE KING]; IN LIKE MANNER, THIS APPLIES TO THE MIND ETC. (BUDDHĀDI).

(53) AS MOST CERTAINLY, COGNITION ETC., WHICH BELONG TO THE MIND ETC., DO NOT FUNCTION FOR THEIR OWN SAKE.

Since the organs (karana) are insentient, their activities cannot be for their own sake; rather, they serve a purpose for the

conscious soul -- this is the meaning.

(53B) THUS, THE MIND ETC. ACT AS THE MEANS WHEREBY THE ACTIVITIES OF COGNITION ETC. ARE ACCOMPLISHED.

Now he distinguishes the object of enjoyment:

(54) THE "MANIFESTED CONDITION (ĀKĀRA)" OF DELUSION, SUFFERING, AND PLEASURE IS DESIGNATED BY THE TERM 'FORM' (RŪPA); WHAT ARISES FROM THIS IS BIPARTITE: MENTAL COGNITION (BODHA) AND THAT WHICH IS SEPARATE [FROM THIS], THE OBJECT-OF-ENJOYMENT, MĀYĀ ETC., WHICH IS FOR PURPOSE OF THAT [I.E. ENJOYMENT].

Due to the reason that delusion (moha) etc. are qualities (guna) that have become manifest, the 'constitution' of delusion etc. is designated by the term 'form' and is the collection of Dispositions, Merit etc. and the collection of Conceptions, Accomplishment etc. (of which the Dispositions are causes). This form is twofold. On the one hand, it is the mental cognition as it belongs to the soul. On the other hand, it is the object-of-enjoyment as it is exceedingly separated [from the soul] and is constituted by māyā etc., the stuff of the worlds etc; it is called "the object of enjoyment" because it is the locus of enjoyment (bhogādhikaranatva), i.e., because it is for the purpose of enjoyment (in the sense of being connected to enjoyment).

What is this thing called 'form'? He says:

(55) THERE IS THE THREEFOLD DEMERIT ETC., ATTACHMENT AND THE FOURFOLD MERIT ETC.; AS TAMAS, RAJAS AND SATTVA, THEY ARISE IN THE MIND AS THIS 'FORM' (RŪPA) ON ACCOUNT OF KARMA;



The 'Forms' designated as Demerit, Ignorance and Powerlessness are derived from Tamas. The Form designated as Attachment is derived from Rajas. The Forms designated as Merit, Understanding, Non-attachment and Powerfulness and derived from Sattva. This eight-fold Form arises as a condition in the mind (buddhi) on account of Karma and because of the Gunas, the material causes (upādāna). It is said in the Śrīmatsvāyambhuva and elsewhere: "the Tattvas, worlds, bodies etc. arise, however, both immediately and mediately on account of the material cause, which is designated as Māyā, together with an auxiliary cause which is Karma."

Furthermore:

(56) SINCE [OTHERS CLAIM THAT] IN THE STATE OF RELEASE THERE IS THE COMPLETE SEPARATION [FROM SUCH QUALITIES AS DHARMA ETC.], AND SINCE THERE IS AN OMNIPRESENT CONDITION [OF THE SOUL IN THE STATE OF RELEASE], AND SINCE THERE IS A LIMITED CONDITION ENTAILED IN THE COGNITION OF A CLOTH, NEITHER QUALITIES [LIMITING THE SOUL] NOR THE LACK OF SUCH QUALITIES CAN BE ATTRIBUTED TO THE SOUL.

Since 1) by others as well [as by us] it is established that there is the complete separation from Merit and so forth in the state of release--since it is said in [our] śāstra that there is the all-pervasive manifestation of the innate condition of the eternal and all-pervasive soul, which is of the nature of consciousness and activity--and since 2) the non-pervasiveness (i.e., limitedness) of the cognitive dispositions such as the cognition of a cloth and so forth is seen, it follows that the [cognitive] qualities such as Demerit etc., which are non-eternal

and unlimited, cannot belong to the soul, which is eternal and unlimited.<sup>48</sup>  
 If this were not the case, and if one were to accept that such qualities were in a relation of 'inherence' (samavāya) with the soul, there would result the fault of attributing transitoriness (pariṇāmitva) to the soul. Demerit etc. give rise to three distinctions of the [sakala] soul: the sāmsiddhika (natural), vainayika (cultivated) and prākṛta (worldly). The Mrgendra Āgama says: "The Sāmsiddhikas, Vainayikas and Prākṛtyas [are the designations of the different configurations of dispositional qualities which] belong to the soul. The Sāmsiddhika is the quality belonging to the souls that are illuminated by the Samskāras of special virtue; The Sāmsiddhika quality is manifested even after the loss of the physical body, as it has been manifested before [the loss of the body]. The Vainayika is the quality that is manifested by means of worldly experience, reflection, a religious preceptor and Śāstras; the Vainayika quality is purified by the activities of the body, mind and speech. The Prākṛta is the quality that is manifested [only] in the association with a physical body, like the cognition during the dream state."<sup>49</sup>

Thus, just being of these three varieties, Merit etc. are now described in terms of the differences in their results:

(57) IN ORDER,<sup>50</sup> THE RESULTS OF THESE ARE: LIFE IN HELL (ADHOGATI), BONDAGE (BANDHA), IMPEDIMENTS (VIGHĀTA), AND WORLDLY LIFE (SAMSRTI); HEAVEN (SVARGA), RELEASE (MUKTI), ABSORPTION IN PRAKṚTI (PRAKṚTIBHĀVA), AND NON-IMPEDIMENTS (AVIGHĀTA).

(58-59) SAMSĀRIC EXISTENCE (BHĀVA), DISGRACE, OBSTACLES, INABILITY TO OVERCOME BHOGA, THE ATTENDANCE OVER THOSE OF A LOWER STATION, POSSESSION OF A CORRECT INSIGHT, ABSENCE OF THE DESIRE FOR BHOGA, AND THE OBSTACLE TO WHAT ONE PROPOSES TO ACCOMPLISH -- THESE ARE THE RESULTS OF THE SĀMSIDDHIKA DISPOSITIONS; THE VAINAYIKA AND PRĀKRĪTA DISPOSITIONS BELONG TO THOSE MENTIONED [IN V.57].

"Life in Hell" etc. are results that come to be, in order, from Demerit etc., i.e., from the Vainayikas and Prākṛtas. "Worldly life" etc. is a result of the Sāmsiddhika. Here, "life in hell" means the attainment of hell. "Bondage" is not in the soul but in the ego's self-conceit. "Worldly life" is the birth in the womb of animals etc.<sup>52</sup>

"Release" here is the release according to other systems, since according to the Moksakārikā the highest form of release can only arise on account of dīkṣā. "Absorption into Prakṛti" is a union (laya) with prakṛti.

"Worldliness" refers to Samsāra. "Disgrace" means the degradation of one's condition. The 'non-overcoming of enjoyment' is the passion (icchā) for enjoyment. The "attendance over beings of a lower station" is the superintendance over those who are of a lower station than oneself; "possession of a correct insight [concerning one's higher station]" is the correct understanding of the respective objects [of one's station]. The rest is clear.

Having discussed the Dispositions, he now treats the Conceptions (pratyaya).

(60) BEING THE AWAKENED COGNITION (SAMBUDHI) OF THE MANIFEST,

UNMANIFEST, AND THE SOUL, ATTAINMENT (SIDDHI) THUS ARISES ON ACCOUNT OF THE COLLECTION OF DHARMA, ETC., WHICH COLLECTION IS SLIGHTLY CONNECTED TO RĀGA [I.E. VAIRĀGYA].

In our system, the eight Dispositions, Merit etc., subsist in the mind (buddhi) in a latent form (vāsanātva). Thus, it is said: "The dispositions (bhāva) are so called because they cause the subtle body (liṅga) to arise (bhāvayanti).<sup>53</sup> Furthermore, when the Dispositions have reached a pre-eminent [i.e., developed] state (prakarsa) and have entered into the condition of being objects of experience in a gross form (sthularupa),<sup>54</sup> (sthularupa), they are called "Conceptions" on account of causing the mental activity (pratyayana) of the bound souls.<sup>54</sup> Thus it is said: "The conceptions are so called because they cause the soul's mental activity (pratyāyanti).

Accomplishment arises from the group of four Dispositions, Merit etc., which are derived from sattva and which are slightly associated with rajas in the form of non-attachment (vairāgyā). It is said that Siddhi is the attainment of a superior state (prakarṣāvasthā), which is just a cognition of its respective object (tadviṣayam jñānam); this cognition is a 'complete understanding' (sambuddhi) of the manifested condition of the Guṇas, the unmanifested condition of Pradhāna and the conscious souls. It is said, "accomplishment is the cognition (buddhi) whose object (viṣaya) is the soul, Prakṛti etc."<sup>55</sup> In this case, the soul, which is exceeding separated, shines forth independently as the illuminating agent (prakāśakatva) in the cognition of the mind (buddhi-bodha), whose object is the manifest and unmanifest. Thus, they say

"When the seer abides in his own natural condition."<sup>56</sup> This does not take place on account of the illuminating agency of the mind; such a view would entail the fault of describing the soul as an object-of-enjoyment; in the Moksakārikā this is discussed: "If the soul is considered to come within the scope of an object-of-enjoyment, the soul becomes subject to transformation [or "mutability"]."<sup>57</sup>

(61) MIXED WITH THE DISPOSITIONS OF DEMERIT ETC., CONTENTMENT (TUṢṬI) ARISES FROM THE THREEFOLD COLLECTION SUCH AS MERIT ETC.; BY MEANS OF THIS CONTENTMENT THE SATISFYING DISCERNMENT ARISES WHEN ONE POORLY GRASPS THE SOUL.

Contentment arises from the threefold tamas-based collection of Demerit etc.. This collection is slightly blended with Merit etc., which are of a sattvic origin. This contentment arises through the instrumentality of the attainment that is of the nature of the cognition of the gross and subtle elements (which have already been discussed), which occurs when one grasps the nature of the soul according to the various [other] systems.

Contentment is described as a cognition (buddhi) that arises when one, even though unaccomplished, says: "I am [satisfactorily] accomplished." This is due to a non-attachment (vairāgya) that is of a lower order. Thus, it is said: "Contentment is the cognition of that [soteriologically] unaccomplished soul that "I am accomplished."<sup>58</sup>

(62) INCAPACITY ARISES ON ACCOUNT OF THE THREEFOLD COLLECTION OF DEMERIT ETC., WHICH IS COLOURED BY A LITTLE RĀGA: INCAPACITY IS

THE LACK OF EFFECTIVENESS (ASĀMARTHYAM) IN [ATTAINING]  
PROSPERITY ETC.

'Prosperity' (śubha) here means 'the activity of the organs of generation' that is described as 'joy' (āhlāda). The 'lack of effect-iveness' in 'prosperity etc.' stems from a defect in the organs or, by implication, in the body. This 'incapacity' originates out of the tāmasic group, which is slightly connected to rajas. It is said, "Incapacity arises on account of inactivity (apravṛttatva) and is of a tāmasic origin (on account of being of the nature of suffering; as well, incapacity is of a rājasic origin, as the [rājasic] quality, which is in association with the cause (kāranasamśraya), is seen in the effect.<sup>59</sup>

(63) ERROR IS THE DISCERNMENT OF AN OBJECT OTHERWISE THAN IT IS.  
ERROR ARISES DEVOID OF A CONNECTION TO RĀGA, ALTHOUGH ERROR  
IS SLIGHTLY CONNECTED TO MERIT ETC. †

'Error' arises on account of the tāmasic group, which is devoid of rajas and which is slightly connected to sattva. Error is of the nature of the grasping of an object as otherwise than it is (ayathārtha). Error is characterized by delusion (moha), extreme delusion (mahāmoha), mental darkness (tāmisra) and extreme mental darkness (andhatāmisra). It is said: "Error consists of perceiving one thing as another, for the reason that the two [confused] things share a particular common element."

Now, having briefly discussed the Dispositions and Conceptions, he concludes [the topic of] mental cognition (buddhibodha):

(64Aa) BRIEFLY STATED, THIS [COLLECTION OF DISPOSITIONS AND  
CONCEPTIONS] IS A QUALITY OF THE MIND (BUDDHI).

In the Śrīmaṇmataṅga and elsewhere there is a detailed account of the Dispositions and Conceptions. In the Mrgendravr̥ttidīpikā these have also been elucidated and accurately determined by us. From a fear of dealing with too many minute details [which have already been dealt with], I am not delineating any further details here.

(64Ab) THIS [BUDDHI-DHARMA] IS ENJOYED BY CONSCIOUSNESS [I. E., THE SOUL]

'Due to the condition of being an object of enjoyment (bhogyatva)' should be supplied [in v. 64Ab].

He now establishes 'the condition of being an object of enjoyment':

(64B-65A) WHEN AN OBJECT OF ENJOYMENT IS ACCOMPLISHED, WHATEVER ARISES IS APPREHENDED; THIS APPREHENSION (ANUBHĀVA) IS ENJOYMENT (BHOGA) AND IS SUFFICIENT FOR EXPLAINING THE ENJOYER (BHOKTR).

Just the object-of-enjoyment is possessed by the arising and perishing of the cognitive activity (jñāna) that originates in the mind (buddhi); the enjoyer is not so possessed [of this transitory mental activity] on account of the establishment of the self-consciousness (svasamvedana) that belongs to the experiencer who is in a permanent condition (sthira) by means of always being of the form of the apprehending agent (grāhaka). Furthermore:

(65B) WITHOUT THE ONE WHO ACCOMPLISHES (SĀDHAYITR), [THE POSTULATION OF] "DESIRE" CANNOT BE LOGICALLY EXPLAINED (SIDDHI).

This verse is directed against the Buddhists who hold that "the mind (buddhi) is itself consciousness" (buddhicaitanyavāda). By

appealing to a conception of an impermanent Enjoyer of the buddhi-based cognition, the Buddhists hold the view that the "mind is itself consciousness" for three reasons: 1) on account of the insentiency (like a pot etc.) [of the impermanent Enjoyer]; 2) on account of the impossibility of the experiencer being the result of karmic action from another time, and 3) on account of the condition of being an object of enjoyment, like what is spoken.

The meaning of the verse is that the logical establishment (siddhi) of the activity-of-Enjoyment (bhoga-kriyā) is impossible without [the postulation of] an Enjoyer who is active (cestamāna); as well, on account of the activity of Enjoyment the soul is established as the condition of agency (kartrva) involved in that activity. In the verse, "[an accomplishment] desired (samīhita) means [any accomplishment which is an object of ] wanting (abhiṣṭa).

An objection is now raised:

(66A) WITHOUT THE CONCURRENCE (SAMVĀDA) WITH SOMETHING PERCEPTIBLE (DRṢṬA) THERE CAN BE NO PROOF OF AN INFERENCE.

According to the above position an inference must be seen to have a concurrence with another means of proof (pramāna) [i.e. pratyakṣa]; for example, fire is inferred from smoke once one has actually been present and directly perceived [the concomitance of smoke and fire]." The validity of an inference can only be established in this manner.



The Buddhists claim that one cannot establish a "self" that is the experiencer and that is separated from cognition, due to the absence of any means of proof [applicable in this case], as there is indeed the doubt raised by the fallacy of the unsupportable conclusion (vyabhicāra) concerning the inference regarding the enjoyer: "experience" itself allows of no apprehension of a constitutive distinction (ākārabheda) between a 'cognizer' and 'cognition', as we only discern (darśana) cognition in its nature as 'apprehension' (anubhava)." |

We see no such fallacy of the unsupportable conclusion (vyabhicāra) concerning the thing inferred (sādhya) in such examples as the smoke on the mountain top. They say: "This nature of consciousness (saṃvidrūpa) is just of one form; we see a modification (vivarta) of manifold forms (anekākāra) such as joy, depression, etc. In this case you can use any 'name' you so desire [to describe one of the manifold 'modifications'].

This is false! He says:

(66B) FOR WHATEVER REASON THAT THERE IS THIS CONCURRENCE WITH SOMETHING PERCEPTIBLE, FOR THAT REASON THERE IS THE VALIDATION OF THIS CONCURRENCE.

This is the meaning. It is not proper to hold that, on account of there being a 'conflict with activity (kriyāvirodha)' when one attributes impermanent cognition to the soul, there is a false attribution of permanency [in one's soul]. It is said: "The soul, which is of the nature of that which apprehends (grāhakarūpa), is established (siddha) by means of a perceptual self-consciousness (saṃvedanapratyakṣa) that is due to a condition of permanency established on account of the

'manifestation' (bhāsamānatva) [which appears] just by means of a condition of permanency in the form of an 'object' (viśayatva) that is only sensed within the body as in sleep etc. [i.e., dreaming, imagining, etc.] wherein there is no proximity to external objects of this apprehension (anubhava), which is of the nature of the awareness (saṃvedana) of an object and which is [classified as] experience.<sup>60</sup>

This is also said [by the Buddhists]: "All things are momentary on account of the 'conflict with activity' (arthakriyāvirodha) which results when one holds that there is both sequence (krama) and simultaneity (yaugapadya) of that which is non-momentary." This is false because of the case of the gem, something which is certainly permanent (aksanika): at one and the same time (yugapad) various objects such as pots etc. can appear sequentially reflected in the one gem. Furthermore, since whatever is momentary is destroyed the moment it arises, it is impossible for there to be a 'conformity with activity' with manifold instants that no longer exist.

In the Śrīmanmatāṅgavṛtti and elsewhere such arguments are carried out in detail by the Ācārya [Rāmakaṅṭha II].

Thus, holding that the soul can be inferred by means of the establishment of self-consciousness (svasaṃvedana), he says:

(67A) HEREIN THERE IS NO CONCURRENCE WITH A MEANS OF VALID KNOWLEDGE (PRAMĀṆA) SINCE THE MEANS OF VALID KNOWLEDGE IS PERCEPTION.

In this case there is no need for there to be a concurrence with another pramāṇa of this pramāṇa [i.e., pratyakṣa].

Even though there is an absence of a concurrence with another pramāna for perception, due to the criterion of validity (prāmānya) [defined] as the condition that generates the cognition of an unapprehended object (anadhigataviṣaya), the Buddhists say: "A pramāna is the comportment towards an unapprehended object (anadhigatārthagantṛ-pramāṇam)."

Again, in what manner does the fallacy of the unsupportable conclusion apply in the case of the mountain top etc. He says:

(67B) [THE FALLACY OF] THE UNSUPPORTABLE CONCLUSION IS REFUTED BY THE POSITIVE AND NEGATIVE INSTANCES [OF THE INFERENCE].

The fallacy of the unsupportable conclusion is not seen in the example of smoke etc. In this case there is the connection (sambandha) that is characterized as an inseparable concomitance (avinābhāva) is discerned with positive and negative instances. Such is the case with the smoke that has been well discerned to have its locus in fire; but, an error (bhrānti) occurs when one does not discern the proper nature of "smokiness" and attributes its genesis to the mountain-top itself. Therefore, here as well, on account of discerning the antecedence of the agent (kartrpūrvakatvadarśana) of actions in all cases, the Enjoyer is inferred from the activity of Enjoyment. By you as well, the mind (buddhi) in another's body is inferred by an inference without the concurrence with another pramāna, because of the activity of the effect [i.e., the body], which is established by the prior-existence of the mind in one's own body. Thus he says:

(68A) THE MIND IS ESTABLISHED AS THE CAUSE IN THE EXPLANATION

REGARDING THE ONTOLOGICAL STATUS (DHARMA) OF THE BODY;

This is the meaning. When there is the explanation regarding the ontological status of the body that is of the nature of activity etc., then in another's body the cause is established as the mind. Concerning this the Buddhists say: "Having seen, in one's own body, the activity that is preceded by the mind, on account of seeing it elsewhere, [i.e., in another's body] the mind is recognized [as preceding the activity]. Therefore, the Enjoyer is established by the presumption of experience (bhogānyathānupapatti),<sup>61</sup> like the sense of sight etc. [which is inferred] by means of the presumption from the discernment of colour etc. He says:

(68B-69Aa) THE PRAMĀNA OF THAT WHICH IS OTHER THAN THAT WHICH IS GENERALLY ACCEPTED AS PERCEPTIBLE IS ESTABLISHED BY MEANS OF INFERENCE.

The Cārvāka says: "Let there be an Enjoyer, but that too is just the body which is of the nature of a manifestation of a modified aggregate of the elements such as earth etc. As the manifestation of the ability to intoxify arises as a [result of a] fermenting agent (kiṇva) etc., so the appearance of consciousness arises as a modified characteristic of the body. Furthermore, on account of seeing the activity of enjoyment etc. [existing] by means of the power of the vital forces such as prāṇa, no other thing can be appealed to [in order to account for the manifesting cause of consciousness], as it is not observed through perception. Thus, they say: "It is impossible to postulate something imperceptible when something perceptible [already] exists."

He rejects this view:

(69A.b-70A) "BUT, JUST ON ACCOUNT OF BEING THE CAUSE [OF CONSCIOUS-

NESS], LET THE AGGREGATE OF EARTH AND SO FORTH BE THAT WHICH DEMONSTRABLY ESTABLISHES CONSCIOUSNESS, THE ENJOYER OF THE MENTAL ACTIVITY OF THE MIND." THIS IS WRONG!

This is the meaning: It is wrong to hold that consciousness is like a pot and so forth, because of the observation concerning the sphere of the objects of enjoyment: the hard, soft etc. touch on the outside of the body is [felt as] pain, pleasure, etc. within the body. Therefore, it follows that, "the soul is established by means of being the Enjoyer even in the case of the body;" furthermore, "there is no means of proof to establish that consciousness belongs to this [body]." He says:

(70B) FOR, HOW CAN YOU COME UP WITH A DECISIVE PROOF TO ESTABLISH THAT CONSCIOUSNESS BELONGS TO THIS?

There is the objection [by Cārvāka]: Consciousness is just of the nature of the body, as it is only observed when there is the existence of the elements that give rise to the body (which is of the nature of sperm and blood) and it is not observed when the body is non-existent.

(71A.a) EVEN WHEN THERE IS THE EXISTENCE [OF THE BODY], THE FALLACY OF BEING TOO GENERAL (ANAIKĀNTIKA) APPLIES HERE;

Even in the case of the existence of the elements of the nature of the body in the womb etc., or in a corpse, since consciousness is not observed, consciousness is not of the nature of the body; consequently, "there is no proof to substantiate the claim that the soul is the body." He says:

(71A.b) CONSEQUENTLY, "THE CAWING OF CROWS" [I.E. SUCH IS THE SENSE OF YOUR ARGUMENT].

"On account of being an object of experience, the body is not of the nature of consciousness;" he says:

(71B-72A) SUCH THINGS AS MOLASSES AND SO FORTH ARE OBJECTS OF ENJOYMENT, ARE PERCEPTIBLE AND ARE INCAPABLE OF MANIFESTING CONSCIOUSNESS; ON ACCOUNT OF THE CONDITION OF BEING AN OBJECT OF EXPERIENCE, WHICH IS AN "IMAGE" (CHĀYĀ) OF THE SOUL (JĪVA), LET THE BODY BE EQUAL TO MOLASSES AND SO FORTH.

Molasses and such things are made objects of experience (visayī-kriyamāna) by means of being the objects that are 'grasped', i.e., 'enjoyed' by means of cognition that is of nature of experience and is a 'reflection' (chāyā) belonging to the soul, i.e., 'jīva'; such objects are never observed to be manifested forms of consciousness (abhivyaktacetana). Therefore, with reference to the position already stated that, "the soul is the body, which is an aggregate of elements," it is maintained [by us] that there is the non-consciousness (acetana) [of the body] due to the process whereby something is made an object (visayīkarana) 'by means of being an object of enjoyment, i.e., by being something which is 'grasped'; the condition of being the enjoyer cannot be established to belong to the body. Moreover, when consciousness is just said to belong to the body, on account of the repeated changes in the body resulting in a condition of destruction [of previous states], it becomes impossible for an older person to remember something from childhood. Such criticisms [as raised above] are taken up by us in

detail in the Śrīmanmrgendravrttidīpikā.

A new objection is raised by those who claim that the senses are consciousness: "let the condition of being the Enjoyer just belong to the senses, which are separate from the body." That this is false, he says:

(72B-73A) MOST CERTAINLY, THERE IS THE NON-CONSCIOUSNESS OF THE SENSES THAT ARE THE INSTRUMENTS (KARANA) FOR [THE PRESENTATION OF] THE OBJECTS OF ENJOYMENT (BHOGYATVA); THEREFORE, THE SOUL, WHICH HAS CONSCIOUSNESS INTRINSIC TO IT (CITSVABHĀVA), IS THE ENJOYER.

As it has already been described, even the senses are for the purpose of enjoyment (bhogārthatā); on account of being objects of enjoyment (bhogyatva) and on account of being instruments (karanatva), like a sword etc., the senses most certainly cannot be [identified with] consciousness. Therefore, agency (kartrtva) cannot belong to the sense organs; rather, agency just belongs to the soul, which has consciousness as constitutive of its nature, as the agency of the soul accounts for "engagements in" and "cessations of" all other agentive activities that are caused by an agent (sarvānyakāra kapravrttinivrtti hetutvena). They say: "the Lord is the one responsible for the engagements in and cessations of agentive activities; the Lord is the "Unengaged One", the one who is responsible for the causative process (kāraka) is the agent (kartr)."

(73B) THE ENJOYMENT OF THE ENJOYER IS THE MANIFESTATION OF CONSCIOUSNESS THAT IS "COLOURED (ANURĀÑJITA) BY THE REFLECTION (CHĀYĀ) OF THE OBJECTS OF ENJOYMENT.

The enjoyment of the enjoyer is just the manifestation of consciousness that is "coloured" (anurañjita) through the 'form'-(ākāra) which is the reflection (chāyā) of the nature of pleasure etc. that belong to the mind (buddhi), which is an object-of-enjoyment. As it is said in the Śrīmat svāyambhūva: "Enjoyment is the consciousness (vedana) characterized by the [bound] soul's enjoyment etc."

Now a new topic:

(74A) CONSCIOUSNESS APPEARS AS AN OBJECT OF ENJOYMENT ON ACCOUNT OF THE CONNECTION OF THAT WHICH IS NOT CONSCIOUS WITH THAT WHICH IS CONSCIOUS.

The object-of-enjoyment, which is of the nature of the mind (buddhi), even though it is not of the nature of consciousness, appears as if it were of the nature of consciousness on account of its connection to the consciousness (caitanyasaṁślesa) [constitutive] of the soul.<sup>62</sup> It is said by the Sāṁkhyas: "that which is not conscious appears (liṅga) as if it were conscious." Moreover:

(74B-75A) MUTUALLY CONSTITUTED BY THE CONNECTION OF THE REFLECTION OF THE NON-CONSCIOUS AND THE CONSCIOUS, SOULS AND BONDS APPEAR VERY STRONGLY [AS OF ONE NATURE] THROUGH THE INSTRUMENTALITY OF ENJOYMENT.

The 'object-of-enjoyment' is indeed a 'thing' (vastu) that is



superintended over by consciousness (cittādhiṣṭhita) and is the collection of the instruments of the mind (buddhīndriyavṛnda); it presents the 'object' to the soul (ātmano viśayatvenopasthāpayati). The soul [in turn] grasps the mental activity of the mind (buddhyādhyavasita). They say: "The soul (puruṣa) is cognizant on account of the mental activity of the mind"<sup>63</sup>. The 'phenomenal connection' (ākāranuṣaṅga) is just a 'contact' (saṁślesa) of the two 'images' (chāyā) or 'reflections' (pratibimba) that are of the nature of the conscious and the unconscious; due to this connection, the souls, enjoyers and bonds are transformed into (parinata) objects of enjoyment through the form of the 'object' (viśaya) that arises through the instrumentality of the mental activity of the mind, which itself functions in a mirroring manner and is called enjoyment. It is just for this reason that the Samsārins make the mistake of seeing the soul and so forth in what is not the soul etc. However, through discernment (vivekajñāna) there is the dissolution of prakṛti for the Samsārins. Sāṁkhya defines this dissolution as moksa. Thus:

(75B) ENJOYMENT [WHICH APPEARS] IN THE OBJECT OF ENJOYMENT [I.E. IN THE BODHI] IS A REFLECTION OF THE SOUL (PRABHU), LIKE THE MOON IN WATER.

Enjoyment that is characterized as an object of enjoyment just belongs to the soul that is pervasive (vyāpaka) and lordly (prabhu).

In the cognitive activity of the mind, which is of the nature of ascertainment (adhyavasāya), there is a reflection, like the reflection of the moon in water; this reflection is characterized (viśiṣṭa) by the

manifestation or consciousness. However, the example (dr̥ṣṭānta) [supporting the metaphor] is only applicable to a 'naturally occurring manifestation' (viśiṣṭasvarūpābhivyaktimātra), as the moon reflection is of a purely insentient (jaḍa) and material (sthūla) nature. Therefore, on account of the condition of the Enjoyer (bhokṛtva), the agent (karṛtva) just belongs to the soul that is conscious, and cannot be said to belong to the mind (buddhi) and its products, which are non-conscious and objects-of-enjoyment.<sup>64</sup>

But [objects Sāṃkhya] agency (karṛtva) entails engagement in activity (kriyāveśa),<sup>65</sup> if agency is attributed to the soul, the soul becomes subject to transformation (pariṇāmita). Since the soul is not subject to transformation (nirvikāra), agency cannot be attributed to the soul. Rather, agency just belongs to [the sphere of] prakṛti; prior to the arising of discriminative knowledge, prakṛti shows itself to the puruṣa through the instrumentality of the mind and its products, which are objects of enjoyment; in this manner Samsāra is described. According to Sāṃkhya, liberation means 'the ceasing of the activity that arises with this prakṛti'. Thus, they say: "having shown herself to the audience the dancer draws away from the audience; likewise, having manifested itself to the puruṣa, prakṛti ceases from its activity."<sup>66</sup> As a result, he says:

(76A-76B) WHEN ENJOYMENT IS NOT ATTRIBUTED TO THE SOUL OUT OF A FEAR OF ATTRIBUTING TRANSFORMATION [TO THE SOUL], THEN THE DIFFICULTY ARISES CONCERNING THE IDENTITY (AVIŚEṢA) OF THE RELEASED ONE AND THE BOUND ONE.<sup>67</sup>

This is the meaning. In this case agency is not the [direct]

engagement in activity; rather, just the 'capacity for activity' (śaktitva) is engaged in activity. For instance, like the iron filings that have come within the proximity of a magnet, the locus of activity (kriyāveśa), which is of the nature of movement (spanda), is just seen to belong to the body, which is in proximity to the soul. Therefore, there is no possibility of the transformation of the soul during the [activity of] enjoyment, which is of the nature of the 'representational activity' (visayīkaraṇa) of the mind and its products.

However [objects the Śaivite], this 'representational activity' just takes place as something separate (paratva) [from the puruṣa].<sup>68</sup> But, when you do not postulate this separate condition in the case where there is the purity (nirmalatva) of the soul, the difficulty arises as to the identity (aviśeṣa) of the one who enjoys and the one who is liberated, since both are similarly unconnected [i.e., even the bound soul is not connected to the impurity enjoyment entails].

No! It is said: "Prakṛti purposely functions for the sake of another (parārthapravṛtti)."<sup>69</sup> They say: "As the non-conscious milk functions for the sake (nimitta) of the growth of the calf, so prakṛti functions for the sake of the release of the puruṣa."<sup>70</sup> Thus he says:

(77A) MOREOVER, THERE IS THE OPPOSITION TO: "THE ACTIVITY OF THE BONDS IS FOR THE PURPOSE OF THE SOUL."

This is the meaning. It is false to hold that the activity of prakṛti is for the sake of the puruṣa, as prakṛti is just non-conscious, as even in the case of [non-conscious] milk ect., one observes the

activity just as it is superintended over by the conscious cow etc. Moreover, on account of the [useful] appropriation (pakṣīkṛtatva) even of air, water, ect. [i.e. of purely unconscious things not directly superintended over by a conscious being], even if we accept this type of activity [of purely unconscious things], it does not make sense that this activity can be for the sake of something unconnected [to anything]; or, if the activity be said to be for the purpose of that which is unconnected (nirapekṣa), then even in the case of the liberated one this activity will occur. Furthermore, on account of the engagement (samudyoga) of the bound soul (baddhātma) who has a desire (sābhilāṣatva) for enjoyment, since no change (vikāra) is said to occur in the soul, it is false to attribute enjoyment to the bound soul; he says:

(77B) IN AN UNCHANGEABLE ENJOYER, AS IN THE CASE OF A LIBERATED SOUL, ENJOYMENT DOES NOT ARISE.

But (objects the Sāṃkhya] just non-discrimination (aviveka) is the cause of the activity of prakṛti. When there is the discrimination between the puruṣa and prakṛti, on account of the qualification (adhikāratva) of the cessation with respect to the activity, it is no longer activity. Therefore, there is no identity (aviśeṣa) of the bound one and the released one. They say: "It is my belief that there is nothing more beautifully youthful than prakṛti, who, with the thought, 'I have been seen', does not come within the sight of the puruṣa again."

This is false! Given your position, it is not possible for there to be the non-discrimination, since the soul is pure (nirmalatva). And since non-discrimination is at all times without a cause, the

possibility of the non-existence of discrimination becomes a possibility. Therefore, we claim that, by the unestablishment of anything other than non-discrimination, there ought to be the acceptance of the passion (sarāgata), impurity (samalatva) etc. attributable to the soul itself.

If one holds that the innate condition of being unconscious is roused to consciousness on account of the association with that which is defiled, i.e., the connection to a body etc., then it follows that there will arise the eternal connection to things which are other than what is innate -- thus the opponents view is put in doubt.

IF IT IS CLAIMED THAT, ON ACCOUNT OF BEING SUBJECT TO TRANSFORMATION (VIKĀRITVA), IT IS NON-ETERNAL (ANITYA),

Here, the "enjoyer" (bhoktṛ) should be supplied in the verse [i.e., accept transformation, and the enjoyer becomes non-eternal]. He refutes this:

(78Ab) THEN THE EFFECTED CONDITION OF MĀYĀ (MĀYĀSĀDHYA) IS NOT RECOGNIZED.

The "peculiar characteristic" (viśeṣa) that is brought about (kriyamāna) by means of māyā and its effects (svakaryāni) through the instrumentality of the subtle and gross bodies is not recognized ("by you" should be supplied here). Therefore, the fault (dosa) of non-eternality and so forth does not apply -- this is the meaning [of the verse]. How is this possible? He says:

(78B) AND, ON ACCOUNT OF THE INTRINSICALLY MANIFESTED CONSCIOUSNESS

(SVARŪPAVYAKTILĀBHA), NEITHER TRANSFORMATION (VIKĀRA) NOR  
DESTRUCTION [CAN APPLY TO THE SOUL].

Unlike the Naiyāyikas and others we do not hold that the soul (ātman) is solely of a material nature (jaḍarūpa). Rather, the soul has consciousness innate to its nature.

[The Naiyāyikas raise the question:] But, concerning the innateness (svabhavata) of this consciousness, on account of there being no manifestation of consciousness without a connection to a body etc. [the Naiyāyikas definition of jñāna], what is the beginningless (anadi) thing by which the bound condition (pratibaddha) [of the soul] is discerned [by the Śaivites]?

[The Answer follows:] He is going to say that this [beginningless thing] is just mala. And thus, when there is the removal of mala (mala-vyudāsa) by means of māyā -- i.e., by kalā etc., which are its effects (svakārya) -- the total manifestation of the innate nature (naikadeśasvarūpavyakti) of the soul (ātman) takes place. When there is the ripening of mala by means of śivaśakti -- which is designated as dīkṣā -- all objects become manifested (sarvaviṣayo 'bhivyajyate). Thus, he says in the verse, "neither transformation nor change" belong to this [soul]. And of this [soul]:

(79A) RAGA SERVES THE ROLE OF "OBJECTIFYING" [IN THE PRESENTATION OF] THE OBJECT OF ENJOYMENT. SINCE RAGA IS LIKE A CRYSTAL [I.E., SINCE IT SIMPLY MANIFESTS THINGS], IT CANNOT BE THE CAUSE AS DISCUSSED ABOVE.

Raga gives rise to the presentation of the object-of-enjoyment, which is manifested in the form of sukha, duhkha and moha.

Raga is said to be "like a crystal" because it manifests things by means of its own luminosity. Raga is not a cause of that "transformation" [of the innate consciousness of the soul] as discussed above. It is said that "the affliction to the attachment to objects" (visayoparāga) is just "the making something an object" (viṣayikarana) through the intentional-activity towards it.

There is no transformation of the Enjoyer, even though there is the repeated transformation of the body, which is an object-of-enjoyment:

(79B-80A) BY MEANS OF TRANSFORMATION OF THE BODY THE SOUL IS NOT THE THING TRANSFORMED, BECAUSE THIS SOUL WOULD BE UNCONSCIOUS AND AN OBJECT OF ENJOYMENT, LIKE BUDDHI, ON ACCOUNT OF TRANSFORMATION [BEING ATTRIBUTED TO IT].

This is the meaning: if the transformation of the soul is accepted, then unconsciousness and the fact of being an object of enjoyment [apply to it], like the Buddhi etc.

Herein, after having proposed another's viewpoint, he will criticize it:

(80B-81A) CONSCIOUSNESS IS RATHER THE "QUALITY" THAT IS DESCRIBED AS A "COGNITION" (JĪĀNA) THAT IS IN A RELATION OF INHERENCE [WITH THE SOUL]. THEREFORE, CONSCIOUSNESS CANNOT BE SHOWN TO BE INTRINSIC TO THE SOUL.

THIS IS FALSE!

This is what the Naiyāyikas and others think: the soul is by

R  
 nature unconscious; on account of the connection of manas [manahsamyoga] with the soul, cognition arises as a quality [i.e., as a quality of the soul]. And just this cognition is the consciousness of the soul; in no other way can the soul be considered to be of a conscious nature.

This is false because, as in the case of a pot etc., there can be no connection of inherence of cognition (jñānasamavāyāyogāt) to the soul if the soul is considered to be unconscious (jadatva).

An objection: herein, the restricting factor [in the relation of inherence between cognition and the unconscious soul] is Karma, which is designated as "the unseen" (adr̥ṣṭā) [the pūrvapakṣin says that the invisible activity of Karma is the restraining force in this matter]. Cognition, which is in a relation of inherence when the soul (puruṣa), is a common substratum/generic locus of Karma (karmasamānādhikaraṇa) [the soul, according to the pūrvapakṣin, is the adhikaraṇa of jñāna]. This cognition does not arise in other places, i.e., in different substrata (vyadhikaraṇa), such as in pots etc. Thus, he says:

(81B-82A) "CONSCIOUSNESS (VIJÑĀNA) IS JUST IN THE UNCONSCIOUS SOUL (AJÑĒ NARI) AND NOWHERE ELSE"; BUT EVEN KARMA IS NOT SUITABLE AS THE RESTRICTING FACTOR, AS KARMA IS FOUND IN A DIFFERENT LOCUS [THAN THE SOUL].

It is said, "on account of the possibility of transformation, there is no [soteriological-] development (samskāratva) but just the [soteriological-] development of Prakṛti, on account of being like the activity of agriculture etc." Therefore, even karma cannot be the restricting-factor here. Thus, "the soul (ātman) is established solely



as innately conscious, on account of its intrinsic connection to consciousness (caitanyasāmavāyāt);" He says:

82B-83A) IN THE SAME WAY THAT DELUSION (MOHA) -- ACCORDING TO THE WISE -- IS [GENERATED] ON ACCOUNT OF THOSE WHO HAVE DELUSION INTRINSIC TO THEM (MOHASVABHĀVA), AND NOT OTHERWISE, SO CONSCIOUSNESS (CITI) IS [GENERATED] ON ACCOUNT OF CONSCIOUS THINGS (CAITANYEBHYAH PADĀRTHEBHYAH) AND NOT OTHERWISE.

On account of the "cognition", which is of the nature of consciousness, being a "quality" (dharmatva) of the soul, when there is the destruction of the quality, the destruction of the substratum (dharmin) is also entailed, due to the inseparability of the substratum and quality. Thus, the soul (ātman) ought to be accepted as always having consciousness intrinsic to it. It is said, "due to the veiled condition of mala (malāvṛtatva) of the innately conscious soul, there is the establishment of Manas, Buddhi etc. as the manifesting agents (abhivyāñjakatā)."

He is now going to describe Kalā, Vidyā and Rāga, which are collectively described as "the triadic sheath" (kañcukatraya). In terms of the "means whereby enjoyment is accomplished", these tattvas lie above Prakṛti and collectively act as an instigating-agent by means of being an "auxilliary cause" (upakāra-katā) in the activity of the enjoyment of the soul. He says:

(83B-84A) THE TRIAD, WHICH IS DESIGNATED TO BE ABOVE PRAKṚTI, IS AN INSTRUMENT FOR INSTIGATION AND A CAUSE OF EXCITATION IN-THE-OBJECT-OF-ENJOYMENT; AS WELL, IT IS AN AGENT IN THE SOUL'S ACTIVITY OF ENJOYMENT.

Having dealt with Enjoyment in this manner, he is now going to speak about the arising of the ego from the prakṛti-based Buddhi.

(84B-85A) THE GROUPING IN THE BUDDHI WHICH IS A POSTERIOR DIVISION (APARO BHINNA) GIVES BIRTH TO THE EGO. THE GUNAS ARE CONSIDERED TO BE THE PROGENITORS. THE GUNAS ARE ALSO MANIFESTED (DRṢṬA) IN THE IMAGINATION ETC.

The Guṇas are manifested (drṣṭa) as the material-causes (utpādayitāra) of the effect (kārya) according to the maxim, "by means of mutual subjection, on account of the interdependence and on account of being coupled together (parasparābhibhavana, aśrayāt, mithunībhāvāt)."  
Hence, this cause (kāraṇa) is in the imagination etc., i.e., in the modifications of the Buddhi. Sāṃkhya claims: "the Guṇas function inter-relatedly on account of mutual suppression and cooperation (anyonyābhibhavāśrayānmithunapravṛttayaśca guṇāḥ). Therefore, according to this account [of the way the Guṇas generate the lower tattvas], on the one hand, the Buddhi generates "ascertainment" [and gives rise to the imagination etc.] and on the other hand, the Buddhi generates the ego, which consists of its own particular "blending of the Guṇas". Thus, according to the maxim that "more than one progenitor is required" (na hyekam janakam), the Guṇas are considered to be the progenitors (janaka) that are mutually blended together (anyonyasamprakṛta) [in the generated effect]. In like manner [i.e., as mutually blended together], the Guṇas exist in all objects (padārtha). This means that when we say that such and such a thing is sattvika etc., we mean that it contains an abundance (bāhulya) of Sattva etc. of the three Guṇas. On the analogy of the association of the forms of mud in pots etc., the Guṇas are in a direct association with the effect [eg., Buddhi, ego, etc.] as a result of direct participation.

He says:

(85B-86A)"THE FIRST TRANSFORMATION OF THE GUNAS TAKES PLACE BY MEANS OF THE ARISING AND DOMINATING [OF ONE OVER THE OTHER]"-- BUT THIS SETTLED CONDITION SHOULD REMAIN INVARIABLE !

It is said that, if the Guṇas are in an invariable relation whereby they mutually suppress one another, then it becomes impossible for the Guṇas to be the progenitors of "Accomplishment" [Siddhi qua Buddhi-pratyaya] etc. If this is so, just let the ego arise from the Guṇas in a direct association with the Guṇas. He says:

(86B-87A) O PUNDITS, DO NOT PRATTER THAT THIS [SAME] MAXIM APPLIES TO THE CASE OF THE EGO AS WELL. BECAUSE OF THE GENERATIVE TRANSFORMATION [OF THE GUNAS], EVEN THE SUBTLE ELEMENTS ARE IN ASSOCIATION WITH THE GUNAS.

On account of the serial transformation of the Guṇas--as it is said, on account of the generative transformation (anyonyavikṛtitva) of everything beginning with the ego and ending with the gross elements--this association with the Guṇas not only applies to the ego but to the subtle elements as well (which means the collection of the organs and the collection of the gross elements). It is, therefore, correct to hold that, as in the case of the association of the shapes of earth (mṛdākārānvayavat) in pots, skulls, etc., not all things arise directly from the Guṇas.

He now addresses the question, "What are the Guṇas and by means of what activities (vyāpāra) are they accomplished ? He says:

(8ZB-88B) SATTVA, RAJAS AND TAMAS -- THESE ARE THE GUNAS THAT ARE THE CAUSES (KĀRANĀNI) IN THE BUDDHI. THEY ARE MANIFESTED WITH RESPECT TO EACH SOUL BY MEANS OF THE RESTRICTIONS [I.E., THROUGH THE RESTRICTIONS] OF THE MANIFESTED ACTIVITIES.

As has already been described, there is this "thing" (vaṣṭu) that is "an object of enjoyment for the soul" (puruṣabhogyā) -- it occurs through the instrumentality of the Buddhi (buddhidvārena) in the form of Bhāvas, Pratyayas, etc. The Guṇas were the cause at the beginning of creation [i.e., buddhyadisarga] and continue to maintain this creation to the present time (adhunapi); as well, the Guṇas are the cause of the Buddhi.

Since these Guṇas are mutually-interconnected (parasparāviyoga), they are considered to be just one Tattva. Thus, it is said: "Even though the Guṇas are three in number, they are still considered to constitute one Tattva, on account of their inseparability (aviyoga)." Therefore, the accomplishment of Sattva etc. occurs by means of the activities (vyāpāra) referred to as the "restriction of the manifested activities" (prakaśavrttiniyama). The activities occur by means of the casuality of the Buddhi (buddhikāranatā) and are manifested (pradarśita) because of the dominance (prādhānyāt) [of one particular quality over the other two].

In the Āgamas it is said that there are other effects of the Guṇas (gunakaryāni) as well: steadiness (sthairya), patience (dhairya), etc.; valour (śaurva), cruelty (krauya) etc.; and discontent (arati) and slowness (māndya) [i.e., each has its more dominant guṇic trait].

An objection is raised by Samkhya: "the Guṇas are just "conditions" (sthita) through the eternality that is designated as Prakṛti. He says:

(88B-89A) THE PRIOR EXISTENCE OF THE CAUSE OF THE GUṆAS IS ESTABLISHED, AS IN THE CASE OF THE BUDDHI, POT, ETC., DUE TO THE CONNECTION TO A MANIFOLD NUMBER WHEN UNCONSCIOUS.

Thus, because of unconsciousness and manifoldness, there is the establishment of the condition of being an effect, like a pot etc.

What is the [material] cause of the Guṇas ? He says:

(89B-90A) THE [MATERIAL] CAUSE OF THE GUṆAS IS DESIGNATED AS PRAKṚTI; BEING UNDIVIDED (AVIBHĀGASTHITA) IN PRAKṚTI, THE GUṆAS BEGIN THEIR ACTIVITY WHEN ŚIVA INDUCES PRAKṚTI.

The Guṇas exist as undivided and subtle conditions in Prakṛti; through the inducement of Śiva they develop into gross form through the distinctions of their respective activities. In the verse it is stated that Śiva induces Prakṛti. Because Prakṛti is of an unconscious nature, the Prakṛti-activity is not self-willed [and therefore depends on the inducement of Śiva]. Furthermore, as each soul is separately linked to Prakṛti through the engagement in a subtle body, Prakṛti is manifold. Being manifold, Prakṛti is an effect--I will discuss this further.

Now, on account of being yoked to Mala, there is a "pumstva", [state of being a pums, i. e., bound soul ], which occurs through the condition of being an Enjoyer for that soul which is yoked to the five sheaths, Kalā etc. [Kalā, Kāla, Niyati, Vidyā, Rāga]. Dīkṣā is for the purification (śuddha) of this condition and according to the Āgam as is above the Prakṛti-tattva. The accomplishment of Enjoyment and the attainment of a particular station of existence cannot come to be on account of the condition of Enjoyership, the soul [qua Enjoyer] is qualified by both consciousness and pervasiveness. Having considered this, he is going to establish the Rāga-tattva, which was earlier said to be the cause of the craving for Bhoga.

(90B-91A) UPON THE ACCOMPLISHMENT (ĀSĀDYA) OF THE EXPERIENCE (ANUBHAVA) OF ENJOYMENT THE ATTACHMENT TO THE OBJECT OF ENJOYMENT COMES TO PASS; IN ORDER FOR THERE TO BE THE ACCOMPLISHMENT (SIDDHYARTHA) OF THIS [SAKTI OF THE BOUND SOUL], RĀGA SHOULD BE UNDERSTOOD AS THAT WHICH CAUSES THE CRAVING FOR BHOGA (BHOGANURĀÑJAKA).

In this worldly condition (samsāravāsthā), when the soul has seen an object of enjoyment (Bhogyā), an attachment (sakti) arises in the soul. This attachment does not arise without a cause (hetu), for this would all for the possibility of this attachment to occur in the state of release as well (muktyavāsthā). Thus, for this reason, Rāga ought to be accepted as "the

generating factor in the craving for Bhoga"(bhogābhilāśajanaka) which is for the purpose of the accomplishment [i.e., release] of this [bound] soul's attachment.

He now expresses an opposite opinion:

(91B-92A) QUITE RIGHTLY SATTVA, RAJAS, AND TAMAS ACT AS THE CAUSE-OF-THE-CRAVING FOR THE OBJECTS (VIŚAYA); WHEN THIS CRAVING HAS ARISEN IN THE BUDDHI OF THE SOUL, THIS OTHER THING [I.E., RĀGA] IS OF NO USE !<sup>72</sup>

The manifested condition of the object-of-enjoyment is solely a result of the three Gunās (sattva etc.), which arise in the Buddhi in a transformed state as pleasure, suffering and delusion. The "transformed" Gunās thus appear in the Buddhi in terms of the ascertained appearance of the object; in turn, this ascertainment serves to bring about enjoyment, which itself is influenced by the predominance of one of the three Gunās. It is, therefore, clear that some cause [extrinsic to the object-of enjoyment] must be postulated in order to account for the soul's desire for this "object-of-enjoyment". Hence, Rāga ought to be considered to be this cause and should be considered to have its locus in [i.e., gata, lit. to be connected to] the grasper, the one who apprehends the object-of-enjoyment. The grasper is not of the same nature as the "object-of-enjoyment", which is constituted by the three Gunās (sattva etc.) and is produced in the Buddhi in the form of the Gunās, objects, etc.

The verse addresses the opponent: "if you hold that the cause of the attachment just belongs to the object-of-enjoyment, then it follows that it will be impossible to ever be free from Rāga (vītarāgābhavaprasaṅga)!" Thus it is said in the Tattvasaṃgraha: [Rāga is the desirous-attachment (abhiṣvanga) that causes the soul's engagement in the object-of-enjoyment]; however, if Rāga is considered to be of the character of the object-of-enjoyment, then it could not provide any freedom from Rāga.<sup>73</sup>

But [replies the Sāṃkhya] just let Rāga be the Buddhi-based Disposition characterized as "bondage" (avairāgya); thus, he says, "even if Rāga is considered to be a 'Disposition' the same fault holds." This is what he means: there can be no production of effects (kāryakaratva) on account of the vāsanā-condition characterized by the [Disposition] "Avairāgya." If something in a vāsanā state is capable of producing effects, then since the vāsanās are infinite in the [dormant conditions in the] Buddhi, the soul will be confronted with the simultaneous formation of an infinite number of opposing activities--an unacceptable situation.<sup>74</sup>

Even if Rāga is held to be that which has "entered into" (āpanna) the condition of the object-of-enjoyment (bhogyadaśā) through the gross form (sthūlarūpena) of the nature of a "Conception" [i.e. Pratyaya], then the same difficulty already mentioned arises, i.e., that the freedom from Rāga becomes impossible (vītarāgābhāva). Now [you might claim that] Rāga



ought to be construed as something other than either Rāga or a buddhi-based Disposition. However, if you claim that Karma should be the cause of the craving, we disagree, for two reasons.<sup>75</sup> First, there is no way of proving that Karma is the cause responsible for bringing about effects other than those one is responsible for bringing about, as in the case of farming etc. Second, if Karma is postulated as the cause of this craving, a manifold number of activities are therefore postulated (anekatattvaparikalpanābhāvaprasaṅgāt).<sup>76</sup>

Now, the Vidyā-tattva is established:

(93B-94A) WITHOUT AN INSTRUMENT, THE ACTION (KRTI) OF AN AGENT IS NOT SEEN IN THE ACTIVITY (KARMA); THUS, VIDYĀ IS THE INSTRUMENT THAT SERVES IN THE DISCRIMINATION OF THE COGNITION OF THE BUDDHI (BUDDHIBODHAVIVECIN).

As it has been said, [this is] "on account of the proximity of the objects that have been presented by the senses." When there is the grasped-object (grahya), which is the activity (karma) described as the cognition of the Buddhi, what then ought to be the instrument whereby the soul's grasping activity [of this cognition of the Buddhi] takes place? That instrument is Vidyā.<sup>77</sup>

Here a) opponent says:

(94B-95A) LIKE A LIGHT (PRADĪPAVAT), BUDDHI IS THE MANIFESTING-AGENT (PRAKĀSIKA) OF BOTH ITSELF AND OTHER THINGS. A "VIDYĀ" CONSTRUED AS THE INSTRUMENT WHEREBY THE SOUL COGNIZES -- OF WHAT USE IS IT?

"Because of the nature of its manifesting property (prakāśarūpatva), which is like a lamp, the Buddhi causes to be manifested (prakasayati) an appearance of the object (viṣaya-ākāra) as well as itself-- no other instrument can be established!" He refutes this:

(95B-96A) IN THE APPREHENSION (UPALABDHI) OF OBJECTS SUCH AS PILLARS ETC., A LIGHT (PRADĪPA) IS THE INSTRUMENT FOR THE SOUL AND IN THE APPREHENSION OF A LIGHT, THE EYE [IS THE INSTRUMENT] -- THE SAME ANALOGY HOLDS IN THE CASE OF THE BUDDHI

The verse points out that an instrument must be postulated in order to account for the activity whereby the Buddhi becomes an apprehended object (grāhyatva). The Tattva Samgraha states: "like the sun, the Buddhi has a manifesting nature; however, since the Buddhi is an object-of-activity [whereby it is apprehended], the Buddhi requires some other instrument in order for it to be grasped.<sup>78</sup> He points this out:

(96B-97A) ON ACCOUNT OF BEING OF THE NATURE OF THE THREE GUNAS, THE BUDDHI, IN ITS PRESENTATIVE-FORM AS THE OBJECT, IS NOT CAPABLE OF ILLUMINATING ITSELF THROUGH DISCRIMINATION -- AND THUS IT REMAINS UNDISCRIMINATED.

(97B-98A) VIDYĀ OUGHT TO BE UNDERSTOOD AS BEING HIGHER THAN THE GUNAS ON ACCOUNT OF (ITS) SEPARATION (VIVIKTATA), WHICH IS DERIVED FROM DISCRIMINATION (VIVEKATA), VIDYĀ IS CAPABLE OF MANIFESTING FOR THE SOUL -- AND THUS IT REQUIRES NO FURTHER INSTRUMENT.

Being of the nature of the three Gunas, the Buddhi is an object

of that activity whereby it is discerned in the form of an object-of-enjoyment (bhogyā-ākāra); therefore, the Buddhi is not self-illuminating, like a lamp etc. But, being beyond the sphere of the Buddhi, Vidyā is separate from the form of the object of enjoyment; in causing the illumination of that which is to be known by the soul, Vidyā does not require a further instrument.

Now he describes the function of Kalā:

(98B-99A) FOR THE PURPOSE OF THE ACCOMPLISHMENT (SIDDHI) OF ENJOYMENT, THERE IS AN INSTIGATOR (PRAYOKTR) OF THE MULTITUDE OF AGENTIVE-FACTORS OF ACTIONS ETC. (KARMĀDI); THE SOUL (PURUṢA), WHICH IS SELF-WILLED, IS THE AGENT; KALĀ IS A CONCOMITANT-AGENT.

It is said, "the soul (puruṣa) is the agent on account of [being] the prayoktrtva (instigating-agent) of the collection of concomitant-factors (kāraka) such as the Buddhi etc., which are for the purpose of Enjoyment (which takes place on account of the Enjoyer)."<sup>79</sup> The one who is the Lord of the concomitant-factors involved in activity and the cessation of activities, and yet who is neither active nor inactive, is the one who is designated as an agent as well as a concomitant-factor. In the authoritative texts Kalā is called the "instigating-agent" in the activity of Enjoyment, as Kalā's causative activity is similar to the Lord's.

An objection is raised by Sāṃkhya: the soul is not an agent! That this is false, he says:

(99B-100A) IF ONE HOLDS THAT [THE SOUL IS] NOT AN AGENT, THE VERY TERM "ENJOYER" BECOMES MEANINGLESS [AS THE ENJOYMENT OF THE

ENJOYER IS AN ACTIVITY, ENJOYERSHIP ENTAILS AGENCY]; AS WELL, THE FRUITLESSNESS (NIṢPHALATVA) OF THE COMMENCEMENT OF PRAKṚTI - ACTIVITY (UPĀDĀNAPRAVṚTTI) WOULD RESULT [AS THE EFFECTS OF PRAKṚTI, SUCH AS BUDDHI ETC., ARE INSTRUMENTS (KARANĀNI), THEY REQUIRE AN AGENT].

The agency of the soul (pums) is established just by means of Enjoyership, on account of the activity of Enjoyment (Enjoyment qua activity entails agency]. If one claims that the soul is not an agent, the rise of Prakṛti -- which is for the purpose of Enjoyment [of this non-agent] -- becomes fruitless, because of the uselessness of there being a connection to instruments etc. in something which is not an agent! Moreover:

(100B-101A) ON ACCOUNT OF BEING THE MEANS OF ACTIVITY (KRIYĀSĀDHANANBHĀVATAH) THE MOTOR ORGANS ETC. ARE POSSESSED BY AN AGENT (KARTṚMAT); THE AGENT, SPOKEN OF BEING "COVERED ETC." [BY MALA ETC.] (VĀŚYĀDI) OUGHT TO BE UNDERSTOOD AS THE SOUL (PUMS), WHICH IS PERVASIVE (VIBHU).

If it is postulated that the soul (ātman) is non-pervasive on account of being formless, like the sky etc., then [you're left with the absurdity that] it becomes impossible (aṅupapanna) to observe the Enjoyment which is the result of one place to be observed in some other place as, for example, a resident of the south to experience things in Kashmir.; thus, it ought to be accepted that the soul (ātman) is pervasive (vyāpaka) by means of the failure of holding any other position [i.e., pervasiveness].<sup>80</sup> It is said in the Śrīmatparākyā and elsewhere: "The agentive-cause of

this [soul] is Kalā, which manifests the agentive-capacity [of the soul]." "Thus, the soul bound to Kalā is the agent-concomitant in Enjoyment.

The agentive-capacity (kartr-śakti) of this soul that is an agent does not come to affect [all] objects, because this agentive-capacity is veiled by Mala. (In the sequel we will discuss both the "capacities" of agency and "consciousness", given that "capacity" is a unity of the two.) Kalā has the power to illuminate things, like a lamp. However, because of the veiling power of Mala, Kalā only partially manifests the soul's agentive-capacity. Kalā is thus described as the "agentive-cause", "cause" and "agent".

This "limited" soul appears to be indistinguishably linked to Kalā and is, therefore, described as the "agent-concomitant" (kartr-kāraka) in the activity of Enjoyment. The limited soul is the agent on account of [having] Enjoyership, while Kalā is the concomitant-cause (kāraka) on account of [having] the agentive-causation (prajojikatva). The Mrgendra Āgama states: "O Brahmins, so these two, standing together as if indistinguishable (sambhūya-ananyavat-sthitam) in the activity of enjoyment (bhogakriyā), are called the agentive-concomitant (kartr-kāraka)."<sup>81</sup>

(101B-102A) WHEN ONE HOLDS THAT THE EXISTENCE OF AN AGENT DOES NOT REQUIRE ANOTHER AGENT IN THE MANIFESTED SPHERE, THEN THERE WILL BE [POSTULATED] THE CONTINUAL OMNIPOTENCY OF THE SOUL, AS A RESULT OF BEING PRIOR TO KALĀ.

(102B-103A) ON ACCOUNT OF BEING OMNIPOTENT, THE SOUL WILL BE OMNISCIENT, LIKE THE LORD ! BUT, IT IS IMPROPER TO HOLD THAT, ON ACCOUNT OF BEING OMNISCIENT, THE SOUL IS AN AGENT FOR THE PURPOSE OF ITS OWN SUFFERING.

If one holds that there can be agency that does not require Kalā (kalānapekṣa) due to the innate purity (nirmalatva) of the soul, then it follows that there will be, as in the case of Śiva, both a) omnipotence, which is without a connection (sambandha) to a body of the nature of Pāśa, i.e., Kalā etc., and b) omniscience, which is unconnected to any instruments of ignorance.<sup>82</sup> This independent soul is not presided over by Śiva. However, it is improper to hold that this independent soul that is undefiled can be an agent engaged in the bodily activities etc., which are for the purpose of suffering. Thus, "the grace of Kalā" is necessarily established in order to account for the limited consciousness and activity of those souls that are possessed of enjoyment, on account of being veiled by Mala." He says:

(103B-104A) ON ACCOUNT OF BEING IN A STATE OF BONDAGE, THIS SOUL IS NOT OMNIPOTENT, LIKE ŚIVA ETC. WHEN IT IS ENGAGED IN ENJOYMENT, THE SOUL QUA AGENT REQUIRES THE GRACE OF KALĀ.

Having established Kalā, he will now describe the generation of Vidyā, Rāga, and Prakṛti from Kalā:

(104B-105A) THERE IS ANOTHER GROUPING (SKANDHA) THAT DERIVES FROM KALĀ; THIS OTHER GROUPING IS KNOWN AS VIDYĀ, RĀGA AND PRAKṚTI, WHICH ARISE IN SUCCESSION IN A PAIR [RĀGA AND VIDYĀ] SINGLY [PRAKṚTI].

Rāga and Vidyā sequentially arise as a pair. Prakṛti arises separately as a separate entity. Thus it is said in the Śrīmatraurava: "From Kalā, the two Tattvas--Rāga and Vidyā--have arisen, and Prakṛti as well.

The Āchārya [i.e., Sadyojyoti] has not taken up the Tattvas designated as Kāla and Niyati, which are mentioned in the Āgamas, because these two Tattvas are self-evident in light of the context [of what has so far been discussed], as nothing would transpire (anutpatti) without both the temporal-sequentiality and experiential-restrictedness of enjoyment, which is a result of karmic activities. In the case of farming etc., thieves are seen to steal the fruits of [others'] activities (karmaphala) when there are no restrictions established by a ruler. "Restriction" (Niyati) is established (siddhi) by means of being the restricting-principle when the question is asked concerning exactly what it is which is the restraining-principle (niyamaka) restricting the fruits of karmic-activities (karmaphala) such as the jyotiṣṭoma sacrifice etc. to individual enjoyers (bhoktrpratiniyamaka).

However, it is false to claim that Karma is itself the restricting principle, for, as it is said, Karma only generates the fruits of activities. In over-seeing the sphere of enjoyment, even the Lord's capacity (śakti) requires an auxiliary causal factor (kāryakaratva), which occurs through the intervention of other Tattvas. Otherwise, none of the Tattvas would exist [they would be useless if the Lord did everything].

Time (kāla) is established as the factor that separates off various states of the object-of-enjoyment etc. For example, in statements such as, "He has been enjoying it for a long time," the conceptions of "long", "quickly", etc. are indicative of the "separating" function of time.

It is impossible for time to be eternal, as the Naiyāyikas and others think, because time is of an unconscious and manifold nature, due to [its] having the form (rūpatva) of living beings (bhūta) etc. The Śrīmatmrgendra states: "Time, which arises from Māyā, is based on the conception of an "instant" (truṭi) etc."<sup>84</sup>

He will now discuss the collection of tattvas that are constitutive of the subtle body and the fact that the subtle body is restricted to each soul separately:

(105B-106A) [THE TATTVAS] BEGINNING WITH EARTH AND ENDING WITH KALĀ ARE THE COLLECTION WHEREBY THERE IS THE ACCOMPLISHMENT OF ENJOYMENT (BHOGASĀDHANASAMHATI); ACCORDING TO THE LEARNED, THIS COLLECTION IS RESTRICTED (NIYATA) TO EACH ENJOYER [INDIVIDUALLY].<sup>85</sup>

Thus, it is said in the Tattvasamgraha: This group of characteristics, beginning with earth and ending with Kalā, are bound (niyata) to each soul.<sup>86</sup> Thus, it is said: "so this [bound soul], under the control of Karma (karmavaśata), is caused to wander



in all the bodies born in their respective worlds.

In the event of a single, universal subtle body, there would be no diversity in enjoyment. However, the diversity of enjoyment is seen by all to be diverse ! He says:

(106B) OTHERWISE, -IT IS NOT PROPER, DUE TO THE DIVERSITY (BHEDA) THAT IS [PHENOMENALLY] SEEN IS PLEASURE ETC.

An objection is now raised: in the case of a universal subtle body, the diversity among the fruits of enjoyment will arise solely on account of the karmic diversities applying to the subtle body.

This objection is false ! He says:

(107A) ON ACCOUNT OF THE KARMIC-DIVERSITY, THE DIVERSITY [OF ENJOYMENT WITH RESPECT TO EACH ENJOYER] IS ESTABLISHED.

The diversity of enjoyment is established solely on account of karmic-diversity. "When there is the establishment of the diversity of enjoyment, the karmic-diversity is inferred" -- such logic entails "the fault of the mutual locus" (itaretarāśrayadoṣa).

This is the sense of the verse.

Another objection is raised: "The karmic-diversity is established solely on account of the agentive-diversity, and the diversity of enjoyment on account of the karmic-diversity. There is no fault of the mutual locus here." He states:

(107B-108A) GIVEN THAT THE AGENTS OF ACTIONS (KARMAKARTṚ) ARE ACTIVE BECAUSE OF THE SIMULTANEOUS CONNECTION (SAMBANDHĀDYUGAPAD) TO THAT [I.E., THE SINGLE COLLECTION OF TATTVAS CONSTITUTING THE SUBTLE BODY], HOW CAN THERE BE SEPARATE ACTIONS (KARMA) POSTULATED ON ACCOUNT OF THE DISTINCTION OF THE AGENTS (KARTṚBHEDĀT).

There is no possibility of there being a "karma-kartṛtva", (i.e., a relationship between the agent and the action) without a connection between the subtle body etc. (which are constituted by Kalā etc.), and the souls that are covered by Mala. By means of the simultaneous connection to all the agents, the action is an activity that is in the form of the subtle body, which is a single tattvic collection. In this case, how can there be the distinctions between the various activities, come about? This cannot be the case! This is the meaning [of the verse].

An objection is raised. The Diversity of the subtle bodies can only be based on the diversity of each soul's "desire".

We oppose this objection, since the "desire" only arises on account of each soul's connection to a subtle body! And it is false to hold that the diversity of desire arises on account of a single subtle body. On account of the failure to account for the phenomenon of the diversity of enjoyment in any other manner, one is forced to accept the diversity of subtle bodies with respect to each soul.

An opponent may raise the objection that the diversity of subtle bodies is only applicable in the case of the diversity of souls. The Vedantins uphold that the soul is single. He says:

(108B) THUS, IT FOLLOWS THAT THE MANIFOLDNESS APPLIES AS WELL TO SOULS.

If you accept the unity of the soul, then it is improper to accept the diversity of pleasure, suffering, etc. and the differences of birth, death, etc. -- thus, the manifoldness of souls is established because of the diversity of enjoyment. The refutation of Advaita is taken up by us in the Mrgendravrttidīpikā in detail.

A question is raised: this tattvic-collection that is of the nature of the subtle body, is it pervasive, like the soul, or is it non-pervasive ?

Thus, he says:

(109A) THE NON-PERVASIVENESS OF THIS [TATTVIC-COLLECTION] IS ESTABLISHED ON ACCOUNT OF THE IMPOSSIBILITY OF SIMULTANEOUS FUNCTIONS.

The subtle body is established as being non-pervasive due to the impossibility of its activity--which is characterized as manifesting consciousness and activity--to occur at all places, at all times.

A further objection is raised: If you postulate that the "effects" of activities come about on account of Karma, which is an auxiliary cause, then a pervasive subtle body can still account for the [limited] manifestation of the soul's consciousness (by inciting it). Hence, as this argument proves, the pervasiveness of the subtle body does not entail the simultaneous arising of effects everywhere !

The reply: even this reasoning is false, on account of the non-eternality of the subtle body, since it is in the condition of being an effect--due to its non-pervasiveness, like a pot, etc. This is the sense of the following verse:

(109B-110A) IT IS NOT PROPER TO ANSWER THAT THE INSTRUMENTALITY OF THE SUBLTLE BODY'S INSTRUMENT IS RESTRICTED BY KARMA; ON ACCOUNT OF THE IMPOSSIBILITY OF LIMITLESS ACTIVITIES, THERE IS NO UNIVERSAL PERVASIVENESS [OF THE SUBLTLE BODY].

A further question is raised. Is the partial manifestation of consciousness due to the non-pervasive nature of the subtle body or soul ? He says:

(110B-111A) ACCORDING TO ŚRUTI THERE IS A PROBLEM IN HOLDING THAT THE SOUL IS A SUBSTRATUM CHARACTERIZED BY TRANSFORMATION ETC..<sup>87</sup> DURING THE TIME THAT THERE IS THE MANIFESTATION OF CONSCIOUSNESS, WHICH IS SIMULTANEOUS WITH THE NON-PERVASIVE [SUBTLE BODY], THE SOUL (ANU) REMAINS PERVASIVE.

It is said, "If the soul is [considered] non-pervasive, then it will be impossible (ananupanna) for there to be the experience (upabhoga) that is the result (phala) of another place (deśāntara)." Moreover, in the state of release of this (soul), the necessity of pervasiveness ought to be acknowledged, on account of the Agamic claim that the soul has omnipotence and omniscience, like Śiva. If one holds that in the state of release there is pervasiveness and in the state of bondage there is non-pervasiveness, then there is the possibility of the fault of unconsciousness and mutability etc. [attributed to the soul]; such a position would contradict Śruti concerning the soul's eternality, pervasiveness, etc. Thus it is said in the Śrīmanmrgendra: "Consciousness, which is of the nature of cognition and activity, is in souls at all times and in all ways; therefore, in release there is pervasiveness. "There is no non-pervasiveness, instantaneousness, singleness, unconsciousness etc. [of the soul]."

Now, having discussed the creation (Sṛṣṭi) of the unique [or "individual,"] Tattvās that are of the nature of the subtle body, he is going to speak about the common (Sādhāraṇa) Tattvas that are of the

nature of the "worlds".

(111B) IN A DIFFERENT GROUPING OF TATTVAS [THAN THOSE WHICH CONSTITUTE THE SUBTLE BODY] THERE ARE THE GROUPS THAT CONSTITUTE THE SPHERES OF ENJOYMENT (RATIBHUMI) FOR THE ENJOYERS (BHOGIN).

This is the meaning: the levels of Enjoyment (Bhōgasthāna) of the bound ones are the enjoyments (Bhoga) of the Tattvas that are of the form (ākāra) of the various worlds etc., which are other than the Enjoyment (Bhoga) that is of nature (Rūpa) of the subtle body. He says:

(112A) THIS TATTVIC-COLLECTION HAVING ENTERED INTO A BODY BORN WITH THAT [I.E., A WORLD], IT BRINGS ABOUT THE [RESPECTIVE KARMIC] RESULTS [PHALA] IN THESE [RESPECTIVE SPHERES OF ENJOYMENT] OF THOSE [SOULS].

When the tattvic-collection has entered into the bodies born of their respective worlds (Tattadbhuvanajadehesu) on account of the force of Karma (Karmavaśāt), i.e., when it has entered into the loci-of-enjoyment (Bhoga bhūmi), which is for the purpose of the behavior (ācārāpekṣa), this [tattvic-collection] becomes the manifesting-factor of the force [or capacity, i.e. sāmarthya] of the consciousness and activity of a part of the soul. It is said in the Tattvasamgraha: "On account of the force of Karma, one wanders in all the bodies born with their [respective] worlds." As well, it is said in the Śrīmanmrgendra, "This subtle body, which belongs to this creature (Jantu), is [described] briefly as "conscious" (Cit), because it is in [i.e., born from] the contact with

consciousness (citsaṅga) and is an evolute in the mysterious womb (gahanagarbhavivartin), i.e., an evolute in māyā]; judging that this is not sufficient I am going to describe a series of cosmic principles (Bhauvanatattvapāṅkti) that are for the purpose of the production of the supports (Ādhāra), bodies and objects [of these worlds].<sup>90</sup>

Now he is going to briefly describe the creation of the worlds (bhuvanarṣṭi):

(112B-113A THE "COURSE" OF THE GROSS WORLDS BEGINNING WITH HELL AND ENDING WITH TRUTH ARE SUPERINTENDED OVER [I. E., IMPEDED] DURING THEIR GENERATION, SUBSISTENCE AND DESTRUCTION BY DEŚIKA, HAṬAKA, AND KĀLA.

Here Kāla is Kalāgni. Hāṭaka is the Pātālādhipati. Deśika is the Lokācārya on account of imparting teaching in all the Śāstras; he resides in a place that is above the Satya loka, and is even above the Viṣṇuloka. The Ananta Śrīkaṅṭha is present in the Rudraloka on account of being the one who has superintendance in Brahmāṇḍa in these gross regions. Thus:

(113B-114Ba) THE LEADER OF THE 100 RUDRAS, TOGETHER WITH THE 8 ALONG WITH THE 5, IS IN THE CAUSES OF THE EARLIER MENTIONED ELEMENTS (BHŪTĀNI) -- NOT THE [GROSS] ELEMENTS [BORN] OF THE SUBTLE ELEMENTS, BUT AS THE SUBTLE ELEMENTS [THEMSELVES] WHICH ARE CATEGORIES OF THE INTERNAL ORGAN (CITTAVARGA).

Vīrabhadra is Governor of the Śatarudras, who are the Bearers of the Brahmāṇḍa; Vīrabhadra is located in the subtle prthivitattva (not to be confused with the gross Prthivi. (prthīvitattve prāguktastūlaprthivikāranabhūte tanmātrajanye). Likewise [for the Pañcabhūtāni starting from Prthivi,

there are two classes, a gross and subtle, and a particular divinity in charge of these] in the group of four elements, the subtle water etc., which are not the subtle elements but the causative elements that are the gross water etc; as in the [collection] beginning with the subtle elements and ending with the ego [which is on account of being the material cause of the internal organ as is indicated by the word "cittavarga" (in the verse)], so in this sphere with those called Sthānu, Guhya, Atiguhya, Guhyatara and Pavitrā, there are the five and eight that are in these worlds. Thus it is said in the Śrīmannandikeśvarakārikā: "Brahmā is located in the gross things for the purpose of the objects of enjoyment of the bodies that are the support of the subtle etc. The Rudrasata is of the Kṣetrabhūva and the forty subtle elements. The subtle elements, Manas, the ego, Buddhi, organs, the best of the Yogins, Vāma, etc. are at the summit of the Guṇas and rule in the Prakṛti-tattva; the Maṇḍalins have their sphere in Kalā; he says:

(114Bb-116B) THE EIGHT WISE ONES, PAISACA, ETC., THAT TAKE OFFICE IN THE GUṆA-TATTVA OUGHT TO BE WORSHIPPED IN THE BUDDHI; IN DUE ORDER THE SERIES OF STATIONS OF VĀMA ETC. ARE COMPLETELY ABSORBED IN THE PRAKṚTI THAT IS A MODIFICATION WHEN [DWELLING] AT THE HEAD OF THE GUṆA-TATTVA, WHICH STATION OF EXISTENCE IS PURE AND OF THE CHARACTER OF THE GUṆAS YET UNACCOMPLISHED. THE SERIES OF REGIONS OF THE KRODHEŚVARARUDRAS BELONGS TO THE PRAKṚTI REGION.

The thirty Rūdra, Vāma etc., together with the eight Krodeśvara, by means of being the Lords of the Prakṛti sphere, are located at the

head of the worlds of the Guṇa-level (guṇamastakabhuvaneṣu). On account of the subtle nature of Prakṛti, it is improper for [them to be] the support of the worlds -- so say the ones who know the Āgamas.

(117A) THE MANDALAS, THE EIGHT DESIRABLE ONES, ARE IN THE KALĀ-TATTVA.

The Mandalas are in the eight worlds in an eight-fold sequentiality of the Kalā-tattva in association with Rāga and Vidyā. Thus, it is said in the Śrīmatmrgendra, "the Maṇḍalādhīpas are in the 64 groups (Maṇḍala) of the Great Cities (Mahāpura) that occupy Kalā, which is the womb (garbha) of Rāga and Vidyā."

Therein it is said that "Kāla and Niyati have two worlds (bhuvanadvaya); restraint (niyata) is in niyati while the capacity to cause things (kalanaśakti) is in Kāla."<sup>91</sup> Since the worldly states (bhuvanādhvan) are well treated in the manuals dealing with ritual and elsewhere; they are not going to be treated here in great detail. In these ritual manuals and elsewhere there may be some differences concerning the enumeration of subordinate worlds; however, some of the enumerations get included somewhere or other -- so there is no inconsistency.

Now, having discussed the creation of the Tattvas that is of the nature of the worlds, he is going to establish Māyā as the higher-material cause of the worlds, which is of the nature of Kalā etc. (which have already been discussed):

(117B-118A) MAHĀMĀYĀ, WHICH IS UNCONSCIOUS, IS THE "SEED OF THE WORLD", THE CAPACITY TO CREATE; IN ORDER FOR THERE TO BE THE ENJOYMENT OF THE ENJOYERS, THERE IS THE BIRTH OF KALĀ ETC. ON



ACCOUNT OF THIS MAHĀMĀYĀ.

"Māyā" is "the extensive one" (mahati) on account of its self-effected pervasiveness in the form of a manifold "flowing"; Māyā is the "mati" (conception/idea) in the "Cosmic Rest (pralaya) of the whole impure world. [Māyā qua Mati outlives the Pralaya and serves as the source of the succeeding creation].

This Māyā is the seed of that world which is in the form of Kalā etc.; Maya is thus the material cause, both directly and indirectly (sākṣātparamaryā), of everything that is of the form of an effect, since Maya is bearer of the worlds and the principle of the manifoldness regarding the difference with respect to each soul.

Māyā is "the capacity to create", which means that it is of the nature of a collection of its own effected capacities that are of a subtle form. By the acceptance of Satkāryavāda, Māyā is of the form of the capacity (śakti) of all effects; being such a condition as the material cause, Māyā is unconscious, like earth and so forth. Therefore, Māyā is the origin of the means whereby Bhoga is accomplished in the sphere of Kalā etc.

He is now going to describe the nature of Maya as a collection of capacities:

(118B-119A) THIS MAHĀMĀYĀ POSSESSES CAPACITIES; THE PLURALITY AND MANIFOLDNESS OF THE CAPACITIES ARE ESTABLISHED ON THE BASIS OF THE MANIFOLD AND ENDLESS EFFECTS.

On account of observing the arising of the manifold and endless effects, this Māyā is known to be of the nature of the collection of capacities that are of the manifold and endless effects.

② An objection is raised. If one holds that Māyā's manifold capacities cause manifold effects, and yet, if one also holds that all the forms of capacity actually are capacities of Māyā itself, then it is unnecessary to postulate further capacities [in the form of the manifold effects] stemming from this capacity [of Māyā]. As a result, Māyā should be considered to be eternal on account of being the ultimate [single] cause; otherwise, an infinite regress [of causes] will follow. This is the sense of the following verse; he says:

(119B-120A) [AN OBJECTION:] ON ACCOUNT OF THE MANIFOLDNESS OF THE NON-CONSCIOUS THINGS, THERE IS MOST CERTAINLY THE NON-ETERNALITY [OF MAHĀMĀYĀ]; [THE REPLY:] NOT BEING ITSELF MANIFOLD ON ACCOUNT OF ITS CONTINUED EXISTENCE, MĀYĀ IS ETERNAL, EVEN THOUGH IT IS OF AN UNCONSCIOUS NATURE.

Moreover,

(120B-121A) ON ACCOUNT OF THE INFINITE NUMBER OF SOULS, MAYA MUST BE PERVASIVE; FOR THE PURPOSE OF PROVIDING ENJOYMENT, MAYA CAUSES ALL EFFECTS THROUGH ALL THE COURSES [OF THINGS] AND THROUGH ALL THE ABODES.

— Brhaspati says: "[if Māyā is not eternal,] all the Siddha's words, which have been vocalized over a long period of time, will perish."

Although Māyā is eternal [i.e., beginningless, anantya], the various courses [of things caused by Māyā] are not innumerable. The maxim that "curd comes from milk" supports the idea that transformation

is not a total transformation; the maxim that "insects [taking sustenance] from the ghee" supports the idea that transformation is only partial.

(121B-122A) CREATION, MAINTENANCE, AND DESTRUCTION ARE SAID TO BE THE CONDITIONS INHERENT TO MĀYĀ; THE INHERENT CONDITION BELONGS TO THE TRANSFORMATION WITH THE TATTVAS AND ENDS WITH THE WORLDS.

So, on account of being the ultimate material cause, Māyā is responsible for the creation, maintenance and destruction of the universe. The transformation of the worlds, etc. remains as an inherent condition of Maya in the form of tattvas, etc. Indeed, the universe, as a transformation of Maya, consists of the tattvas, material things, sentient beings and worlds.

An objection: the Agamas claim that Bindu is the material cause of the pure Tattvas etc.

True! That holds good in the case of the higher condition of release, such as is obtained by the Vidyeśvaras etc., but not here, however, as the material cause (qua Māyā) provides the means whereby enjoyment is accomplished (Bhogasādhana) -- thus, there is no contradiction [in holding both Bindu and Mayāmāyā as material causes]. And here:

(122B) WHEN CREATION AND MAINTENANCE HAVE BEEN DESCRIBED, DESTRUCTION IS [DESCRIBED AS] THE REVERSE PROCESS OF CREATION.

This is the meaning [of the verse]: creation and maintenance are described by explaining their activities and by describing the sequence of their genesis with respect to each Tattva; destruction, on the other

hand, is described as the "drawing in/contracting" (upasamhāra) into its own causes by an inversion of creation.<sup>93</sup> Moreover:

(123A) ON ACCOUNT OF THE BEGINNINGLESSNESS OF WORLDLY EXISTENCE,  
THERE IS NO PERMANENCE IN THE PROCESS OF CREATION ETC.

The Beginninglessness refers to saṃsāric existence. An objection: as they provide the means whereby enjoyment can be accomplished, creation and destruction affect souls; however, why should the Lord want to carry out destruction?<sup>94</sup>

We reply: since Māyā has the incessant capacity (śakti) of increasing the production of the infinite enjoyments of the soul, the re-absorption (samhāra) is for the purpose of the maturation of the (souls') Karman (karmapākārtha) and also for the purpose of providing some rest for the souls (ātmanāṃ viśramāṛtham) for the rejuvenation of their powers (sāmarthyopdbalanāṛtham), as is sleep for a beautiful woman. Thus, it is said in the Śrīmatmrgendra,<sup>95</sup> " Having been seized, the soul remains for the purpose of rest." This is done for the benefit of all created beings who are the "worldlings" fatigued by the bound condition; even in this state of rest, there is instruction for those who are fit for instruction, the obstruction for those who are fit for obstruction, and the maturation of Karma for those who are fit for this maturation. Making the capacities of Māyā fit for manifestation, the Lord watches over the whole genesis of things.

Now summing-up that Enjoyment (with its means) belongs to the soul, he is going to introduce [the view] that the Paśa, which is of the nature of Mala, just belongs to this [soul].

(123B-124A) THE SOULS' "OBJECT-OF-ENJOYMENT" CONSISTS OF MĀYĀ (MĀYĀ-MAYA) BY THE MEANS (SĀDHANA) THAT HAVE BEEN PRODUCED FROM MĀYĀ; THEREFORE, THE ENJOYER IS A DEFILED-SOUL THAT IS CONSCIOUS -- THE OBJECT-OF-ENJOYMENT IS NOT CONSCIOUS.

As it has been said, the object-of-enjoyment is of the nature of the cognition of the Buddhi, which is of the nature of pleasure etc.; this object of enjoyment is just an effect of māyā and is not inherent in the soul as its "quality", since the soul is of the nature consciousness. As well, to postulate such an inherence (samavāya) would entail the fault of attributing mutability etc. to the soul. Thus, just the conscious soul is the Enjoyer of the object of enjoyment.

On account of the soul's obfuscated condition of consciousness and agency (which is an impure condition that will be discussed in the sequel), it is possible for the soul to enjoy that which is accompanied by the Tattvas such as Kalā etc., which are produced from Māyā.

But, without some cause to account for the effect, limited consciousness is not possible. Hence, how does this impure soul come to be? He says:

(124B) THUS OMNISCIENCE AND OMNIPOTENCE ARE OBFUSCATED BY THE MALA OF THE EXPERIENCER (VIṢAYITVA).

Although possessed by omniscience and omnipotence, like Śiva, the soul requires Kalā etc. in the cognition that has a limited scope (kimcidviṣaya). Thus, it is said that the released soul - who is not an enjoyer -- is possessed by omniscience etc.

Therefore, given [the sense of] Enjoyership there is the designation of "experiencer" (viṣayitva), which means that the obfuscation

by Mala is designated by "experiencer". It is said that "Enjoyment is a result of Mala". Thus, the soul [with Enjoyership] is impure.

The Srimatsvayambhuva states: "If the soul is not impure, how come it has this attachment to enjoyments? Thus:

(125A) BY MEANS OF THAT PASSION (RAGA) THAT FUNCTIONS ON ACCOUNT OF KARMA IN A LATENT CONDITION, THE SOUL [OBFUSCATED BY MALA] CHASES AFTER MAYA .

It is improper to attribute [karmic] development to the soul, as in the case of agricultural activities etc. The soul follows after Māyā (which is transformed into the form of the means whereby Enjoyment is accomplished) through the means of Rāga, which is of the nature of Karma .

During the period of the Cosmic Destruction (pralaya) when there is the disappearance of the Buddhi in the samsaric sphere due to the Reabsorption of the destroyed Buddhi into the "seed of the world" (which is of the nature of Maya),<sup>95</sup> enjoyment arises due to the fructification of [the latent] Karma. Now an objection is raised.

(125B-126A) KARMA, WHICH IS AN EFFECT OF A PREVIOUS EXISTENCE PROVIDES THE SOULS' FRUITS AT BIRTH ETC. -- WHY THEN IMAGINE THAT THE SOUL IS DEFILED WHEN KARMA IS PREVAILING?

Karmic-activities are the givers of birth, life and Enjoyment through the condition of the bondage to the body that is an effect -- [this can be understood] in terms of the maxim that "the seed and sprout relationship is beginningless."<sup>96</sup> Just let these karmic-activities provide the soul's connection to the body, which is for the purpose of the enjoyment of the respective fruits. of what use is Mala? After you have

construed Mala as useful [i.e. as capable of providing the souls' bondage], you go on and postulate Karma, [claiming that it must be postulated] since there is nothing other to explain the variety [of the differences] of enjoyment. Thus, just Karma should be postulated as the cause of bondage; your explanation is too cumbersome ! The postulation of Mala is unnecessary. ! Thus they say, "What is conceived again obstructs the conception (kalpyam punar nirunaddhi kalpanāmiti).". In this [verse] he refutes this:

(126B-127A) ON ACCOUNT OF KARMA THERE IS THE CAPACITY (ŚAKTI) THAT GENERATES BIRTH ETC. -- BUT THIS DOES NOT TAKE PLACE WITHOUT MALA, AS A SOUL THAT IS FREE FROM IMPURITY IS NOWHERE TO BE SEEN.

Since it is impossible to observe either the engagement in karmic comportment or the actual birth of a released soul. that is not possessed of Mala (the cause of ignorance) it follows that the acquisition of Karma solely belongs to a soul possessed of Mala. Once the accumulation of Karma has been effected, the soul thenceforth engages in its enjoyment. If the cause of birth etc. is Mala, then why even posit Karma?

(127B-128A) IF LET THE WORLDLING/EXPERIENCER (VIŚAYITVA) BE EXPLAINED BY ONE THING [I.E. MALA] -- THEN OF WHAT USE IS KARMA? ON ACCOUNT OF HAVING ACQUIRED [MALA], THE CONNECTION TO BIRTH ETC. CERTAINLY ARISES.

Now he refutes this:

(128B-129A) IN RESPECT TO THE "KEVALINS" (RELEASED SOULS) WHO ARE POSSESSED OF CONSCIOUSNESS AND WHO ARE ACCOMPLISHED WITHOUT KARMA, THERE IS NO CONNECTION TO BIRTH ETC.: THEREFORE, THE CAUSE BEHIND THE EXISTENCE IN THIS WORLD IS TWOFOLD.

Since we do not see the birth etc. of the Vijñānakevalins who are free of karma but are still impeded by Mala, the cause of the connection to Māyā is twofold -- this is the meaning of the verse.

Now an objection: it is not proper to hold that the soul can be obfuscated [by Mala], since prior to creation the soul is possessed by consciousness and partlessness, like Śiva. He disposes of this doubt in the following verse:

(129B-130A) IT IS FALSE TO SAY THAT "SINCE THE SOUL IS POSSESSED OF THE QUALITIES OF CONSCIOUSNESS AND ACTIVITY AND IS PARTLESS PRIOR TO CREATION, THERE CAN BE NO CONNECTION TO IGNORANCE."

If this accepted, it then becomes improper for the soul to have a connection to Kalā, as in the case of Śiva. Therefore, there is failure of anything else to account for the connection to Kalā; hence, Mala ought to be accepted as belonging to the soul.<sup>98</sup> Furthermore:

(130B-131A) WHEN IT IS POSTULATED THAT THE CONSCIOUSNESS AND ACTIVITY [INHERENT IN THE SOUL] APPLY TO EVERY OBJECT ON ACCOUNT OF THE SOUL'S PERVASIVENESS, THE SOUL BECOMES OMNISCIENT AND OMNIPOTENT AND IS THEREFORE SELF-SATISFIED WITHOUT A CAUSE.

This is not the case on account of the requirement of Kalā etc., as in the case of limited knowledge.



(131B) ON ACCOUNT OF THERE NOT BEING A MANIFESTING-AGENT OF KALĀ ETC., THERE IS NO MANIFESTATION OF THE BOUND SOUL'S CONSCIOUSNESS AND ACTIVITY.

And it is not proper for this to apply to a soul that is not veiled.

(132A) THE LIGHT OF THE SUN, NOT BEING VEILED, DOES NOT REQUIRE A MANIFESTING-AGENT.

And therefore:

(132B) MALA IS A BEGINNINGLESS CONNECTION TO [SOMETHING] BEGINNINGLESS; IT IS UNIVERSAL [SĀDHARAṆA, I.E. APPLICABLE TO ALL] AND INDESTRUCTABLE.

In this verse the "beginningless connection" means the "beginningless covering [by Mala]" and "to [something] beginningless" refers to the beginningless of the souls; "universal" means that it applies to all bound souls--thus one has to accept that Mala is eternal. [The opponent raises an objection:]. If Mala is eternal, there will never be a "cessation [of samsara]" for the soul! Or, on the other hand, if "cessation" is accommodated, on account of the unity of Mala, at the time of the release of one soul, all souls will attain release. He says:

(133A) WITH RESPECT TO THE LIMITATIONS PERTINENT TO EACH SOUL, MALA HAS THE CAPACITY (ŚAKTI) TO SEPARATE THE RESPECTIVE TIME [GOVERNING THE RESPECTIVE LIMITATIONS].

Mala's innumerable capacities (śakti) are restricted to individual souls. Thus, individual souls are released when their bonds qua

"capacities" (śakti) [of Mala] reach their proper maturation. In this respect, it is said that the capacities are simply superimpositions (upādhi) over individual souls and that that these capacities reach their own end.

The opponant argues: the obfuscated condition of the soul arises as a result of the "mundane delusion" (mahāmoha) that comes about only after the creation of the world and due to the soul's "connection-to-Kalā, etc." We reply:

(133B-134A) ACCORDING TO THIS VIEW, THE SOUL IS CONSIDERED TO BE UNCONNECTED TO MALA AND IS THEREFORE CONSIDERED TO BE UNOBFUSCATED, AS IS THE CASE WITH ŚIVA.

However, according to this view, it becomes impossible for the soul [which is only obfuscated by mundane defilement] to abandon the mundane defilement (prakṛtamala). Thus, one ought to accept the beginningless connection between the soul and the beginningless Mala.

Furthermore:

(134B-135A) ACCORDING TO THE WISE, IF THE CONNECTION BETWEEN MALA AND THE SOUL HAS A BEGINNING, THEN ONE MUST ALSO SPEAK ABOUT A CAUSE (KĀRANA) [OF THIS BEGINNING] -- AND THUS, AN INFINITE REGRESS WILL FOLLOW.

(135B-136A) IF, ONE THE OTHER HAND, THE CONNECTION IS CONSIDERED TO BE WITHOUT A CAUSE, THEN EVEN THE CONNECTION TO KALĀ ETC. IS CONSIDERED TO BE WITHOUT A CAUSE, AND THEREFORE, THERE WILL BE NO RELEASE FOR SOULS AND THERE WILL BE NO LORD!

When one holds that the association with Pāśa [the category of the bound condition] is without a cause, on account of the uncaused connection to a body etc., then even the released soul will have some connection with this Pāśa, and it will actually be impossible for the the soul to be released from samsāra. Since this association to Pāśa would even apply to Śiva, Śiva would no longer be considered the Godhead. For these reasons, the soul's connection to Mala ought to be accepted as beginningless and as the cause of samsāric existence.

An opponent may claim that Mala is manifold due to its specificity. According to this view, Mala is therefore considered to be non-eternal, due to its manifoldness and materiality, as in the case of pots etc. However, since this view postulates a type of Mala that would have have a beginning, the same faults already mentioned would apply here as well, i.e., the charge of "infinite regress", the impossibility of release", etc. He says:

(135B-137A) IF MALA IS HELD TO BE SPECIFIC [TO EACH SOUL], THEN IT IS UNCONSCIOUS ON ACCOUNT OF BEING MANIFOLD; HOWEVER, ON ACCOUNT OF HAVING AN ORIGIN AND BEING SUBJECT TO DESTRUCTION, THE EARLIER MENTIONED FAULTS APPLY [TO THIS ACCOUNT OF MALA].

Since Mala is beginningless it cannot "have an end" [i.e., be open to destruction]; otherwise [if one holds that something beginningless can have an end], everything becomes open to destruction [i.e., everything becomes non-eternal].

(137B-138A) IF THE CONNECTION OF "SOMETHING BEGINNINGLESS TO SOME-

THING BEGINNINGLESS" IS ESTABLISHED AS BEING OPEN TO DESTRUCTION, THEN EVEN SUCH BEGINNINGLESS THINGS AS MĀYĀ AND SĪVA WOULD BE SUBJECT TO DESTRUCTION !

Having established the indestructableness, eternality and beginninglessness of Mala, he will now establish that Mala is possessed of endless capacities (śakti):

(138B) THESE CAPACITIES OF MALA, WHICH ARE RESTRICTED TO EACH SOUL INDIVIDUALLY, ARE THE OBSTRUCTORS OF THE [SOUL'S ] QUALITIES.

"The obstructors of the quality" means the obstructors of the soul's qualities, which are of the nature of consciousness and activity (as has been pointed out already).

Due to the failure to otherwise account for the variety of enjoyment, which is [empirically] observed, the variety [of enjoyment] is established to be based on the temporal transformations of Mala's "capacities". He says:

(139A-140A) IF MALA'S CAPACITIES WERE NOT TEMPORALLY RESTRAINED WITH RESPECT TO THE TERMINATION OF THE OBSTRUCTION [OF JÑĀNA AND KRIYĀ], THE SIMULTANEOUS RELEASE OF ALL THOSE WHO POSSESS CONSCIOUSNESS WOULD OCCUR. SINCE THE SOUL EXISTS IN A CONDITION OF BEGINNINGLESS OBFUSCATION, MALA IS THE ONLY PĀŚA THAT INNATELY COEXISTS ALONG WITH THE SOUL.

Mala is the only Pāśa that innately coexists along with the soul. However, the Śrīmatṣvayāmbhuva and other works entertain the opponents claim that Māyā etc. are just "independent" phenomena [lacking any innate connection to the soul and Mala]. The opponent claims that all the entities that belong to the sphere of Māyā to which the bound soul has

a connection, are just of the nature of Māyā itself.

In the Śrīmaṅmrgendra and elsewhere this opponent is refuted on the grounds that the Mala that innately coexists along with the soul is in fact the cause (hetutva) of the Mala constitutive of [the Māyā-based] delusion, etc. (i.e., delusion, madness, passion, depression and emaciation). Thus, he says:

(140B-141A) IT IS NOT PROPER TO HOLD THAT THE FIVE [DELUSIONS] SUCH AS MADNESS, ETC. ARE THE [OBSCURING-] ACTIVITIES OF THE EXPERIENCER (VIṢAYITVA), AS THESE FIVE DELUSIONS ARE NEVER SEEN IN THE SOULS WITHOUT KALĀ.

The five delusions (which are going to be described in the sequel) are not seen when Mala is without the connection to Kalā etc. as in the case of the Vijñānakala and Pralayakala [souls]. The five delusions only apply to the Sakala souls. Thus, it is established that the five delusions, which belong to Mala, do not have the function of obfuscating consciousness and activity.

The Śrīmatmataṅga and other texts state that Mala exists as the generating cause of the five delusions. In this case, the five delusions, which are of the nature of such mental conceptions as seeing the soul in what is not the soul, are said to have Māyā as their material cause, because those souls that are involved in the sphere of Māyā and that are linked to Kalā, are not free of Mala. Consequently, the five delusions arise on account of Mala acting as an associate cause (sahakārin). Only as an "associate cause" is Mala, therefore, the cause (hetutva) of the five delusions. Hence, there is no contradiction in speaking of Mala as the cause.

Now, an objection is raised: "The five delusions, whose material cause is considered to be Mala, are not manifested during the period of Cosmic Rest. They are only manifested after their connection to Kalā. What is wrong with this position? He says:

(141B-142B) "THE FIVE DELUSIONS ARE MANIFESTED ON ACCOUNT OF THE CONNECTION TO THE MEANS WHEREBY ENJOYMENT IS ACCOMPLISHED."

THIS IS FALSE ! ACCORDING TO YOU THE FIVE DELUSIONS HAVE THE SAME CHARACTERISTICS AS FUNCTIONS OF THE GUNAS. THUS, ACCORDING TO YOU, THE FIVE DELUSIONS ARE SIMPLY SPECIES OF THE GUNAS.

He states that the manifestation of the five delusions does not arise after the connection to the means whereby enjoyment is accomplished.

An objection is raised. Mala is described as the cause of the five delusions. However, since Mala is also described as eternally being of the same nature, it is impossible for there to be a distinction between a manifested and an unmanifested condition of Mala. As a result, it must be accepted that the five delusions are in an effect condition obfuscating the soul's consciousness and activity.

No, this does not follow ! Rather, the five delusions attributed to the soul are simply conditions of the internal organ (antahkarana) and temporally arise after the connection to the means whereby enjoyment is accomplished. Thus, the five delusions should be construed as arising from the Gunās, which have arisen from Māyā together with the auxiliary cause Mala.

Now he is going to point out the nature of the five delusions as of the nature of the Gunās:

(143A-143B) MADNESS AND DELUSION; ATTACHMENT; DESPAIR AND ERROR -- THESE ARE RESPECTIVELY DERIVED FROM TAMAS, SATTVA AND RAJAS.

An objection: if the five delusions are not modifications of the Guṇas in the condition of the internal organ, then the five delusions must be separate modifications of Mala and are seen to occur in the soul with limited consciousness. That this is not the case, he says:

(144A) THE MODIFICATIONS OF THE CAUSE [I.E., MALA] ARE NOT SEPARATE FROM THE FIVE GUṆA-BASED DELUSIONS--THIS IS NOT THE CASE !

Thus:

(144B-145A) IF ONE DISMISSES THE CAPACITIES AS THE OBSCURATIONAL FACTORS, NO OTHER QUALITY THAN THIS SHOULD BE ACKNOWLEDGED. THE CAUSE OF THE "SAMSKĀRAS" IS ONE THAT IS ASSOCIATED WITH THE RECEPTACLE OF KARMA.

The ubiquitous Mala is the obscurational agency of consciousness and activity while the connection to the samskāra-based karmic activity is the cause of samsaric existence. There is no other reason to explain the effect except Mala. This is the meaning of the verse.

Now, having pointed out the innate nature of Mala, he concludes [this verse]:

(145B) IN A WORD, ON ACCOUNT OF ITS CONNECTION TO MALA, THE SOUL IS TERMED "THE LIMITED ONE" (ANU).

In the Śrīmatraurava etc. the word "soul" (paśu) is used to indicate "mala"; Mala is not a separate Tattva from "soul" but rather Mala is inclusive in the "Paśu-tattva" -- without this inclusiveness of mala in the "Paśu-tattva", it is impossible for there to be the bound condition (paśutva) the soul. Moreover, in this section, the activity [of Mala] has been treated as (a) the form of "Enjoyment" and "the object of Enjoyment" belonging to the bound souls and (b) of the nature of a "diminishing (poṣana) qua the generating of Kalā etc. which forms the means whereby Enjoyment is accomplished and which is derived from māyā, and (c) which is of the nature of the soul's enjoyment of Enjoyment (bhogabhojana) prior to the act of creation etc. of Śiva and at the time of creation, on account of the beginningless-veiling (anādyavṛtatva) by Mala. All of these activities of these [limited souls] arise solely on account of the soul's obfuscation by Mala. All obfuscatational activities occur because of the existence of Mala. Moreover, the five delusions ~~are herein shown~~ to be Kleśas of the soul; he is now going to sum up, pointing out that the differences of the activities [of these kleśic souls] are due to the differences in the competence (adhikārabheda) [of these kleśic souls];

He says:

(146A-146B) FOR THOSE WHO ARE ABSORBED IN THE TATTVAS, THE KLEŚAS ARE INACTIVE (PRASUPTA); FOR THOSE WHO ARE YOGINS, THE KLEŚAS ARE THE OBSTRUCTIONS ON THE SHORE (TATAṚUDDHA); FOR THOSE WHO ARE ADDICTED TO WORLDLY OBJECTS (VIŚAYASANGIN), THE KLEŚAS ARE OF A MANIFOLD AND DEVELOPED FORM (VICITRODARARUPA).

Belonging to those in the Māyā-tattva, the Kleśas belong to the



Pralayākala souls who are limited to the Guna-tattva etc. being so limited, the Klesas of the Pralayakala souls are "inactive", because they do not contribute towards any significant change. The Kleśas of the Yogins are manifested on account of the power of yoga; being in the middle sphere, Yogins' activities are obstructed. The ones who are attached to sense objects are the Sakala-souls whose activities are diverse (vicitra) and developed (udbhūta). If we take the reading "vicchinodāra" instead of "vicitrodāra [vicchinnaudara, separate and illustrious, vicitra-udara, manifold and illustrious] the meaning [of the verse] becomes: For those who are addicted to worldly objects (viśayasāṅgin) the Kleśas are sometimes of a developed form and sometimes of a split up form, because of the mutual ascendancy and subjugation of the two types.

Now, having earlier mentioned that Bhoga and Mokṣa along with the means whereby they are accomplished would be treated, Bhoga along with its means has been dealt with and the manual dealing with Bhoga is concluded. Mokṣa along with its means will be dealt with in another manual.

## APPENDIX I

### NOTES

<sup>1</sup>As the "Paramātman", Sādaśiva is described as the "sarvakālopravartaka" in RA, 1.18, p. 2.

<sup>2</sup>Sadāśiva is described as the "bandhamokṣapranetr" in RA, 1.2, p. 1.

<sup>3</sup>Compare Sāṃkhya Sūtra, 3.72: "[Bondage and Liberation belong] to matter directly, because it is subject to association, like a beast (prakrterāñjasyātmasaṅgāt)."

<sup>4</sup>Cf. Pandey, Bhāskarī, p. LXII for a discussion of the distinction between Agamic Saivism and Sāṃkhya.

<sup>5</sup>A soul becomes capable of enjoying objects-of-enjoyment because of being attached (saktatva) to enjoyment (bhoga) by the Rāga-tattva which is technically that which causes attachment (anurañjaka) to things (viṣaya); however, Rāga is dependent on Mala.

According to Sāṃkhya, Rāga is the cause (hetu) or manifestor (abhivyañjaka) of attachment (abhiṣaṅga) which is an attribute (dharma) of the Buddhi.

<sup>6</sup>BK, 117B-118A; the jagadbīja is described as the "mahāmāyā", which is the "janyaśakti" and is acetanā.

<sup>7</sup>This verse is also quoted by Mādhava in the Sarvadarśanasamgraha in the section dealing with the Saivadarśana; cf. ed. p. 80 and trans. p.118.

<sup>8</sup>Cf. K. Sivaraman, Śaivism in Philosophical Perspective, p. 247.

<sup>9</sup>Also quoted by Aghora Śiva, TSV, p. 5

<sup>10</sup>A similar quotation is found in MĀ, p. 317:  
"sthūlasukṣmarūpatvena tanīndriyayādharāni sthitāni ityartham."

<sup>11</sup>Also quoted in MĀD, p. 317 and MPĀ, 19.21, p. 467; the source is TS, v. 4, p.

<sup>12</sup>"Activities" or "modifications" are variously referred to as vṛtti, kriyā, or vyāpāra.

<sup>13</sup>The subtle body (sukṣmadeha) or "transference body (atīyahika)" is also known as the "puryaṣṭaka" as it consists of the five tanmātra and three antaḥkaraṇa. Elsewhere the puryaṣṭaka is identified with

the prāṇāṣṭaka, i.e. that which consists of the five prāṇa, the karmendriya, jñānendriya and antahkarana; cf. Yuktidīpikā comm. on vv. 23-24 and Brahmasūtrasaṅkaraḥṣya on 2.4.6. Sāṃkhya Sūtra 3. 7-16, claims that the subtle body (līṅga) is "seventeen and one" (saptadaśaika), which includes the three internal organs, ten organs and five subtle elements. The Śivajñānasiddhiyār (trans. p.206) claims that there are actually "five" bodies, the sukṣma-, sthūla-, guṇa-, kañcuka- and karāṇa bodies, which the author respectively identifies with the five kośas of the Vedānta, i. e. the prāṇamaya-, annamaya-, manomaya-, vijñānamaya- and anandamaya-kośa.

<sup>14</sup>In this context, the commentator supplies both the "gross" and "subtle" elements whereas in the previous verse just the gross elements are discussed.

<sup>15</sup>The commentator is attempting to explain the compound "ativāhikadehastha" in terms of the fact that the gross body is the receptacle; therefore, the "stha" cannot directly be the receptacle. Moreover, the introduction of the subtle body and karma at this point, especially the claim in 8Ab-8B that the subtle body is only perceptible by those who have lordly powers, may be an argument against the Cārvākas who argue that the "ceṣṭa" is solely a product of the physical body; of the two causes the Saivite brings forth in his explanation, i.e. karma and the subtle body, karma is adrṣṭa and the subtle body is only open to the perception of those who have lordly powers.

<sup>16</sup>TS, vv. 24B-25A, p. 25.

<sup>17</sup>"Spirits", i.e. "piśacāḥ"; for a description of these spirits, cf. SPB, p. 239. The Piśacas are the deities who rule over the Tattvas from Buddhi to earth, possess lordly powers and are of eight types.

<sup>18</sup>A very similar description of the kramic ordering of the elements and their qualities is found in the Mrgendra Agama, 12.26-30; pp. 337-338.

<sup>19</sup>Cf. MĀ, 12. 28A; p. 338.

<sup>20</sup>Ibid. 12.26A, p. 337

<sup>21</sup>Ibid. p. 331: "ete ca śabda etaṣām parasparāhativaśat utpannaḥ".

<sup>22</sup>Cf. ibid. 11.17-19. p.

<sup>23</sup>The Saivites want to argue for a "krama theory" of evolutes. Śabda is actually a specific guṇa of, ākāśa but a shared guṇa of the other gross elements as well; the Saivites are arguing against the more static view of Vaiśeṣika that śabda is an ekaguṇa of ākāśa.

Vaiśeṣika explains the presence of śabda elsewhere by arguing that ākāśa is present everywhere; cf. SPB, p. 283: "svaviśeṣaḥ śabdah aśrayādanyataḥ sthitah heturvaiśeṣika (ato 'yam hetvabhaso 'vagamyate)."  
Sridhara (comm. on 41, trans. p. 132) argues that sound can never be a quality of any other substance, one of the reasons being that "it is perceived elsewhere than its substratum". Sound is perceived in the ear, not in the objects which are thought to be its substratum.

<sup>24</sup>"kālatīta": the hetu is proven to be bādhitā by some other pramāṇa which is stronger; it is fivefold according to the five pramāṇas. A typical example with respect to the pratyakṣapramāṇa is the statement that "fire is not hot because it is a thing".

<sup>25</sup>According to Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika, the conception of rūpa is only "colour" although it signifies form as well, which Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika calls anvaya-samsthānaviśeṣa (a particular arrangement of parts).

<sup>26</sup>A similar citation is found in MĀ, 12.19B, p. 330 :  
"śabdādyekottara..."

<sup>27</sup>According to the Vaiśeṣika, the five karmendriya fall under the category of "movement" (karmā); cf. Padārthadharmasamgraha, trans. p. 5. According to Nyāya, the definition of the "śarīra" is "atmano bhogāyatanam" or more specifically, antyāvayavitve sati cestāśrayam, a final product which possesses voluntary action; cf. Tarkasamgraha, p. 106 and K. Kuppuswami Sastri, A Primer of Indian Logic (Madras: P. Varadachary, 1932), p. 83. As well, cf. Sridhara, trans. p. 629, for a description of the function of "conscious movement": "if one wishes to perform an action then there arises an effort in the soul, occupying the region of the body, aided by that effort and gravity, produces an action (motion) in the hand (explained in terms of the soul being in "contact" with a circumscribed part of the body).

<sup>28</sup>Quoted in MĀD, p. 321: also quoted by Aghora Śiva in his commentary on v. 51 of the Tattvapraśāsa, p. 105.

<sup>29</sup>Cf. TS, v. 6A, p. : "pratyekam śabdādiśvesamālocam vṛttib."

<sup>30</sup>Compare TSV, p. 9: "na cāyam tattvāntarānām kāryaḥ tesām svakaryaireva siddhīḥ. kāryāntarāhetutve pramāṇabhavat. anekatattvaparikalpanabhāvaprasaṅgācca."

<sup>31</sup>MĀ, p. 319: "devanāddyotanādvā devā indriyāṇi..."

<sup>32</sup>A similar idea is expressed in the MĀ, p. 321: "when the soul, the senses, and the objects are in contact all the senses do not enter into action. Therefore, by the same reasoning, some may infer that there is an agent which sets the senses into [their restricted] activity."

<sup>33</sup>MĀ, 18.81-82; also quoted in MĀD, p. 320 (wherein "citta"

is glossed as "manas" by Rāmakāṇṭha).

<sup>34</sup>MA, p. 323.

<sup>35</sup>Hulin translates "abhijātamarmaraśabdavat" as "...craquant agréablement (sous la dent?)" ; cf. Hulin, Mrgendragama, trans. p.271.

<sup>36</sup>The needle piercing the collection of lotus leaves is a commonly used analogy. Śridhara, for example, uses it to explain the quickness with which we perceive two separate objects at the same time in different places; cf. PDS, p. 57.

<sup>37</sup>BK, 117B-118A. The jagadbīja is "mahāmāyā" (which is the janyaśakti and acetanatva).

<sup>38</sup>In the MĀD (p. 312) which deals with the vāyu "udāna" Aghora Śiva mentions the different kinds of udāna (naga etc.) which are mentioned elsewhere as "pradhāna", i.e. as essential forms of vāyu, but in fact they are, he says, secondary (aprādhānya). He cites the Kālottara Āgama which lists five kinds of udāna, which are the same that are cited here.

<sup>39</sup>Quoted in MĀV, p. 324 as well.

<sup>40</sup>Ibid., p. 325.

<sup>41</sup>Quoted also in MĀV, p. 327.

<sup>42</sup>A similar idea is expressed in MĀD, p. 327.

<sup>43</sup>Cf. MĀV, p. 32.

<sup>44</sup>The same quote appears in MĀD, p. 308 and in the TS, p. 9, although with the more logical "tatra yo anadhyavasāyatmakah..."

<sup>45</sup>Sāmkhya Sūtra 3.58 and 6.40: "prakṛti", which is pumārtham, represents the sphere of the bhoga.

<sup>46</sup>The whole verse appears in the Śataratnasamgraha, trans. p.69 : "Bhoga is called vedana and is of the nature of joy, suffering, etc.: the soul fit for this has the consciousness as due to Karma (bhoga 'sya vedanā pumsaḥ sukhaduhkhādīlakṣaṇaḥ tam samarthitacaitanyaḥ pumaṇ abhyeti karmataḥ)."

<sup>47</sup>The MĀ (p.342) even attributes cit to the sukṣmadeha, thus indicating that the subtle body acts as a kind of "intermediary" factor although it does not come within a substained analysis in the text.

<sup>48</sup>Cf. MA, pp. 64-65. According to the SPB (pp. 337-339), Samkhya

construes mokṣa as "kaivalya", the ātman without adjuncts; for Nyāya it is "uccheda", the complete destruction of all ātma-guṇa; and for the Bhāṭṭas, the manifestation (abhivyakti) of eternal bliss (nityasukha).

<sup>49</sup>MĀ, pp. 284-285.

<sup>50</sup>I.e., with respect to v.55.

<sup>51</sup>BK, v. 59 is quoted in MĀD, p. 289 as "svacintiteṣu cāvighnorūpe..."

<sup>52</sup>"vighāta" is not explained.

<sup>53</sup>A similar etymology is found in the Pauṣkara Āgama (pumspaṭala, v. 47; SPB, p.232): "ete dharmādayasca cāṣṭau bhāvayanti".

<sup>54</sup>Cf. SPB, p. 243, quoted from the Pauṣkara (pumspaṭala, vv. 104-128): "pratyāyanti kṣetrajñānam tena te pratyayāḥ smṛtaḥ:"

<sup>55</sup>MĀ, 11.12, p. 298.

<sup>56</sup>Yoga Sūtras, v. 1.3.

<sup>57</sup>Mokṣa Kārikā, v. 105, p. 38.

<sup>58</sup>MĀ, 11.12; p. 298.

<sup>59</sup>MĀ, 11.6; p. 293. The Pauṣkara Āgama (pumspaṭala, v. 120: SPB, p. 243) describes "anaśvarya" as that which "results from incapacity (aśakti); and this incapacity is of 176 kinds. Since it is often of the form of ajñāna and atuṣṭi; it is of 164 varieties; these are all incapacities of the intellect...."

<sup>60</sup>Cf. Vedānta Sūtras, trans. II, 272: "Nor is it true that the body is absolutely required as an auxiliary of perception -- for in the state of dream the body is motionless."

<sup>61</sup>anythanupapatti=arthapatti: presumption of some "adrṣṭa-ārtha" to account for some "drṣṭa-ārtha" according to Nyāya, it is an anumāna which can only be proven by vyatirekavyāpti.

<sup>62</sup>Cf. SK, v.20.

<sup>63</sup>Not a quote from either the Sāṃkhya Sūtra or Sāṃkhya Kārikā.

<sup>64</sup>Sāṃkhya Sūtra, 6.54: "ahamāraḥ kartā na puruṣaḥ". Aniruddha justifies this view on the basis of the position that the puruṣa is aparīnamitva: cf. also 6.55.

<sup>65</sup>Similar quote in MĀD, p. 85-86.

<sup>66</sup>Sāṃkhya Kārikā, v. 59.

<sup>67</sup>Cf., for instance, Śridhara on Padārthadharmasamgraha, trans. p. 597 concerning dharmā; he argues that the ātman is neither a bhoktr or kartr -- it is wholly indifferent. Its connection to the body and the senses and the resulting egoistic conceptions of "I" and "Mine" cause the sense of "bhoktr" and "kartr".

<sup>68</sup>Sāṃkhya Kārikā, v. 37

<sup>69</sup>Cf. Sāṃkhya Kārikā, vv. 55-60

<sup>70</sup>Sāṃkhya Kārikā, v. 57.

<sup>71</sup>Ibid. v. 56.

<sup>72</sup>MĀ, 10.21; p. 276.

<sup>73</sup>TS, v. 10. p.

<sup>74</sup>Quoted in TPV on v. 48, p. ; a similar citation is found in MĀD, 10.11, p. 262, TSV on v. 4, p. 14 and MPA, 11.7, p. 326.

<sup>75</sup>Cf. ŚPB, p. 201 wherein Sivāgrayogin argues that that which is an object of enjoyment is not that which causes enjoyment; thus Karma must be distinct.

<sup>76</sup>Similar quote in the MĀD, 10.11, p. 262.

<sup>77</sup>Cf. ŚPB, p. 215: the samvedana (cognition) of the Buddhi has a distinctive karāṇa, since it is an act (kriyā) which thus establishes the Vidyā-tattva.

<sup>78</sup>TS, v. 14, p.

<sup>79</sup>MĀD, p. 129 appears to be a better reading: apavrṛttaḥ pravrṛtto va...

<sup>80</sup>Cf. ŚPB, pp. 160-161 wherein limitedness implies pervasiveness: "The soul is an omniscient being veiled by something, since he is parviscient. If he were not an omniscient being veiled by something, he could not even be parviscient, like Siva.

<sup>81</sup>MĀ, 10, 7, p. 257.

<sup>82</sup>Kalā, not Śivaśakti, activates the Buddhi-tattva; cf. Sivaraman, Saivism in Philosophical Perspective (pp. 240-241): "How about Siva-Sakti which is spirit itself? Can it not serve to activate the buddhi-tattva? The answer is that just as one's body is activated by one's own self, one's

psyche too is activated on one's self alone. Because śakti is the cause of all effect it does not mean that it is śakti and not the potter that fashions the pot. It may be asked: is not kalā itself jaḍa? Has it not to be activated by a self again? The answer to this objection is that kalā and other tattvas, jaḍa as they are, are activated in their turn by Siva-tattvas presided over by the intelligent Siva-śakti. The siva-tattvas themselves cannot take the place of kalā-tattva because it has been explained, the 'pure' siva-tattvas cannot function as revealers for impurity-ridden selves."

<sup>83</sup>RA, 2.14, p. 6. In his commentary on v. 24 of the TS, Aghora Siva interprets the "ca" in "avyaktarāgavidyāḥ kalāsamuthāḥ kalā ca māyājā" as entailing kāla and niyati.

<sup>84</sup>MĀ<sup>3</sup>

<sup>85</sup>TS, v.

<sup>86</sup>MĀ, 6.7. p. 201.

<sup>87</sup>TS, v.

<sup>88</sup>Cf. MĀ, 3.12, pp. 138-139: Vāma, Guhya, Atiguhya, Pavitra and Sthana are five five of the fifty Lords of the worlds of the subtle body.

<sup>89</sup>MĀ, 13.14. p. 353.



APPENDIX II

The Transliterated Text<sup>1</sup> of the Bhoga Kārikā by Sadyojyoti and its Commentary by Aghora Śiva

ŚRĪH

[1]

ŚIVĀBHYĀM NAMAḤ

BHOGAKĀRIKĀ

(VṚTTISAHITĀ)

ŚIVAM PRANĀMYA SADBHOGAMOKṢADAM MANDACETASĀM

HITAYA LEŚATAḤ SPAṢṬAM VYĀKHYĀSYE BHOGAKĀRIKĀM.

iha hi tatrābhavadbhiḥ sadyojyotipādaiḥ prakaraṇāpratipādyāmaṇam  
bhogamokṣātmakamarthaṁ sūcayadbhistasyaivā 'vighnaparisamāptyarthaṁ pra-  
thamaṁ paramaśivanamaskāraḥ kriyate.

(1) TRIBANDHICITKALĀYOGA BHOGAVIŚLEṢAMOKṢADAM

SARVAKĀLAKRAMĀRTHAJÑAM PRANĀMYĀJAM ŚIVAM DHRUVAM.

trayo bandhaśca maḥakarmamāyālakṣaṇāste vidyante yeṣāṁ te tri-  
bandhināḥ teṣāṁ tribandhināṁ śakalākhyānāṁ citāmātmanāṁ yo 'yaṁ kalā-  
yogaḥ sūkṣmadehārambhakakalādirpṛthivyantatatvātmakaistattadbhuvanaja-<sup>2</sup>  
deharūpaiśca māyīyairavayavaissaṁbandhaḥ tena bhogaṁ tadviśleṣeṇa [2]  
mokṣaṁ ca yo dadāti. tam tāddrṣāṁ. anena śivasyānādimuktatvena sarvā  
'nugrāhakatvaṁ sarvakarṭṛtvam ca sūcyate. ata eva ca sarvakālakramārtha-  
jñam sarvaṁ ca bhūtādirūpaṁ kālakramaṁ sarvāṁśca tattatkālabhāviṇaḥ  
padārthān jānātīti. etena cāsyā nirmalatvātsarvakarṭṛtvācca sārvakālam  
sarvajñatā pratipādyate. kiṁ ca, ajaṁ amatvādeva śarīrādisambandhāt-  
manāpi janmanā rahitaṁ dhruvaṁ cāvikāriṇaṁ na tu bindvādivatpariṇāmitvam.

vikāritve jaḍatvaprasaṅgat. śivaṃ praṇamya bhogamokṣa vacmīti vakṣya-  
saṃbandhaḥ.

(2) RURUSIDDHĀNTASAMSIDDHĀU BHOGAMOKṢAU SASĀDHANAU  
VACMI SĀDHAKABODHĀYA LEŚATO YUKTISAMSKRTAU.

sādhayanti bhogamoksāviti, sādhakā ācāryādayaḥ. teṣāṃ dīkṣādau  
tatsāadhanādijñānāya yuktyā anumānena saṃskṛtau pratipāditau śrīmadraura-  
vatantropalakṣitasiddhāntasāstre siddhau sasāadhanau bhogamokṣau rau-  
ravānusāreṇaiva saṃkṣepādvadāmi. tatra tāvatsatsāadhanam bhogaṃ  
darśayitum bhogādhikāraḥ keṣāmitiyata āha. [3]

(3) AÑJANĀDĪŚANUNNĀNĀM JĀYATE BHOGALOLIKĀ

KARMĀŚAYĀNURŪPEṆA CIDVATAM BHAVAMAṆDALE.

malinatvādīśenādhikāravasthena śivenānantādidvārena nunnānām  
bhogā 'bhimukhīkṛtānām ātmanām añjananmalādeva hetoḥ saṃsaramāṇdale  
karmasaṃskārapākānugūṇam bhogalolikā bhogecchā jāyate.

nanu nirmala evātmā, saṅkhyairabhyupagataḥ. tadayuktaṃ. nir-  
malasya bhogāsaktyasambhavāt, tatsambhave va muktasyāpi prasaṅgat.  
nanu rāganibandhanāsaktiriṣyate. śatyam. rāgopi malīnasyaivāsaktihetuḥ.  
yaduktam śrīmatṣvāyaṃbhuve yadyaśuddhirna puṃso 'sti saktirbhogeṣu kim  
kṛta iti. atha ko 'sau bhogaḥ kaiḥ sādhanaiḥ sadhyate itiyata āha.

(4) ĪŚVARECCHĀSAMĀVIṢṬAJAGADBĪJAPARICYUTAIḤ

SĀDHANAIḤ SĀDHYATE BHOGO BUDDHIVṚTYANURĀÑJANAḤ.

Īśvaro 'trānantā eva tasyaiva māyākṣobhakatvāt. yaduktam  
śrīmatkīraṇe śuddhe 'dhvani śivaḥ kartā proktonanto site prabhuḥ iti.  
tadicchayā kṣubdham yajjagadbījam māyākhyam tasmātprasūtairasādhāraṇais-  
sūkṣmadehātmakaissaḍhāraṇabhuvanādirūpais sādharāṇā 'sādhāraṇabhuvanaja-  
dehātmabhiśca yas sādhanairbhogo niṣpādyate sa ca buddhivṛtyanu- [4]

rañjanātmakaḥ. buddhivṛtyā sukhaduḥkamohādhyavasāyarūpayā āma-  
caitanyasya yadanurañjanam sa eva bhogaḥ. anurāgaścātra sukhādhyā-  
vasāyākārabuddhivṛttiniṣṭhatayā tatsaṃvittistadanubhava eva na tu  
pratibimbātmatā. ātmaṇḥ pariṇamitāprasāṅgāt. taduktam śrīmatṣvāyam-  
bhuve bhogasya vedanā pumsassukhaduḥkhādilakṣaṇā iti. tatra bhūtānām  
tāvadbhogasādhanatām pratipādayati.

(5) KṢMĀJALĀGNIMARUTVYOMNĀM GUṆAVṚTYAKṢABHŪMITĀH  
SVAMĀTRĀPŪRAPUṢṬĀNĀM GAMAYANTI TADAṅGATĀM.

atra pṛthivyādīnām bhūtānām ye guṇādayas ta eva teṣām bhogaṅgatām  
sādhayanti. tatra guṇā gandhādayaḥ. vṛttayastu dhāraṇādayaḥ. akṣa-  
bhūmitā cendriyādhāratvam. etānyapyanantaram eva darśayiṣyati. tataś-  
ca. kṣmādayo guṇairvṛttibhirakṣādhāratayā cātmanām bhogasādhanatām  
bhajantītyarthaḥ. kīdrśām kṣmādināmityata āha svamātrāpūrapuṣṭānām iti.  
svaiḥ svaiḥ kāraṇabhūtaistanmātrair ya āpūraḥ pūraṇam tena puṣṭhānām.  
akṛtasya kāraṇam kṛtasya pārivardhanam ca prakṛtikarma yataḥ. etāni  
ca bhūtāni svakāraṇaistanmātrair saha sthūlasukṣmatvenendriyādhārāṇi  
sthitānityuktaṁ śrīmanmataṅge. tanmātrāṇiḥa ghaṭavanmahābhūtāni [5]  
lepavāt iti. etatkāryam daśadhākāraṇairaviśya kāryate ceṣṭām. avibhūtvāt  
kāraṇāṇi tu kāryamadhiṣṭhāya ceṣṭanta iti. ataścaīṣām sūkṣmadehasthānām  
bhūtānāmindriyādhāratve bāhyaśarīrasthānām ca diha-upacaya iti  
dhātvarthagatyā dehatvena copacayadharmitevā sādharāṇe sati teṣām  
dhṛtyādayo 'sādharāṇavṛttaya ityāha.

(6) KARĀṆĀDHĀRADEHATVE DHṚTISAṅGRAHAPAKTAYAH  
VYŪHO 'VAKĀŚĀDANAM CA VṚTTAYO VASUDHĀDIṢU

tatra dhṛtir dhāraṇam bhūmervṛttiḥ. saṅgraho 'vaṣṭambho 'mbhasaḥ.  
pakṭiḥ pāko 'gneḥ. avakāśasyāspadasya dānamākāśasya. atha tadevaiṣām

sādhāraṇamindriyādhāratvaṃ sūkṣmadehasthatvenāha.

(7-8Aa) ATIVĀHIKADĒHASTHĀM KARĀṆĀM PRAVIJṚMBHITAIH  
YONERYONYANTARAMĀM CĀPI YĀTI PUMBHOGASIDDHAYE  
PUMARTHADĀDRṢṬAVĀSĀT

ativāhayatyātmanām karma bhogena nāsayatītyātivāhikaḥ sūkṣma-  
dehaḥ tatsthameva karaṇamindriyavargaśceṣṭate. avibhutvena nirāśraye  
ceṣṭānupapatteḥ sūkṣmadehasthabhūtatanmātrādhāra evakaraṇavargaś- [6]  
ceṣṭata ityuktam. kim ca tatsūkṣmadehasthām karaṇam puruṣārthaprada-  
karmavaśāt tasyaiva puṃso bhogasiddhaye yoneryonyantaramāṃ prayāti. yad-  
uktam tatvasāṅgrāhe 'vasudhādyastatvaguṇaḥ pratipumnyataḥ kālānto  
'yam paryatati karmavaśato bhuvanjadeheṣvayām ca sarveṣu iti. sa ca  
sūkṣmadehah sūkṣmatvāt piśācādivannāsmādipratyaksāḥ. api tu yogi-  
pratyakṣagāmya ityāha.

(8Ab-8B) DEHO NAIVĀTIVĀHIKAH

AKṢĀDHARO 'KṢAGAMYO 'YAMĀNĪSĀNĀM PISĀCAVAT.

atha dhūtānām guṇānāha.

(9) GANDHAḤ KṢITAU RASAḤ ŚODHA MADHURAH KṢMĀKABANDHAKAH  
ŚUKLĀDI ŚUKLAM BHĀSVACCA RŪPAM KṢITYĀDIṢU TRIṢU.

(10) ASĪTOṢṆAU MAHĪVAYVOH PĀKAJĀPAKAJAU PṚTHAK  
JALE ŚĪTAḤ ŚIKHINYUṢṆASPARŚO 'YAM SAMVYAVASTHITAḤ.

(11) ŚABDASTADDRAVYAJANITAḤ PṚTHAGBHŪTACATUṢṬAYE  
PRATISĀBDKASAMGHĀTO NABHASYEVEDITO BUDDHAIH.

iti. tatra gandhaḥ surabhyasurabhirūpaḥ kṣitāveva. rasaḥ. kṣmā-  
jalayoḥ. tatra kṣitau kṣtvāmlalavaṇamadhurakaśāyatīktarūpaḥ. jale tu  
madhura eva. rūpam ca kṣmājalāgniṣu. tatra kṣitau śuklarakta- [7]  
pītakṣṇādyanekavidham. jale tu śuklameva. agnau bhasvadrūpam. teṣu

sa vāyusū sparśasthitaḥ. sa ca mahyām vāyua ca pratyekamaśīto 'nuṣṣoḥ.  
 kaḥ punarmahīvāyusparśayoḥ parasparam bhedo 'ta āha--pākajāpakajau  
 pṛthagiti. mahyām sparśaḥ pākajaḥ. vāyau tvapākaja ityapakaja ityayam-  
 evanāyorbhedah. asya copalakṣaṇatvādrūpādayo 'pi mahīguṇaḥ pākajā eva.  
 jale punaḥ svābhāvikaḥ sparśaḥ śīta eva. agnāvusṇa eva. śabdaśca  
 bhūmyādiṣu caturṣu taistaiḥ pāṛthivādibhirdravyaiḥ parasparamāhatya  
 jātaḥ. nabhasi tu pratiśrukchabdātmakaḥ. nanu vaiśeṣikādibhirāśrayād-  
 anyatropalabdherākāśaikaguṇaḥ śabda iṣyate. tadayuktam pratyakṣāgama-  
 bādhitatvena hetoḥ kālātyayāpadiṣṭatvāt. yataḥ śabdāśraya eva bheryāda  
 śabdaḥ śruyate. kim ca pṛthivyām tāvatkaṭakaṭādikaḥ śabdo dṛśyate.  
 jalecchalacchalādiḥ. agnau dhamadhamādiḥ. nabhasi ca pratiśabdātmaka  
 iti. etaccākāśaikaguṇatvam śabdasya vistareṇāsmābhir mṛgendravṛtti-  
 dīpikāyām pratikṣiptam. uktaṁ ca śrīmanmṛgendre iti pañcasu śabdo 'yam  
 sparśo bhūtacatuṣṭaye. aśītoṣṇo mahīvayvoḥ śītoṣṇau vāritejasoḥ.  
 bhāsvadagnau jale śuklaṁ kṣitau śuklādyanekadhā. rūpaṁ triṣu raso  
 'mbhaḥsu madhuraḥ ṣaḍvidhaḥ kṣitau. gandhaḥ kṣitavasurabhiḥ  
 surabhiśca mato budhaiḥ. iti. atha uktārthopasāmharaḥ.

[8]

(12A-12Ba) 'ITTHAM YATHOKTAGANDHĀDIVRĀTOPEṬA DHARĀDAYAḥ

ABHIPRASIDDHĀ LOKASYA

gandhādyāśītyayatayā pṛthivyādayo 'rthā lokasiddhā ityārthaḥ.  
 eṣāṁ ca bhūtānāmasmadadibahyendriyāparicchedyagunatvadghatadivatkaryatva-  
 siddhestat kāraṇatayā pañca tanmātrāḥ siddhā ityahā.

(12Bb) MĀTRĀSTAIRANUMĀNATAḥ.

atha guṇagrahaṇādeva tadavyatirekitvādguṇino 'pi grahaṇām  
 siddhatīti darśayitum proktānām tāvadbhūtānām guṇebhyo 'pṛthak bhāvaṁ  
 sādhayitumāha.

(13) CITRASVABHĀVAKĀḤ PROKTĀ GUṆABHINNĀ DHARĀDAYAḤ  
KRAMA VAṆGYA YATHĀ CITRĀM PATE RŪPAM TU VEṢṬITE.

uktāḥ pṛthivyādayaḥ. arthāt gandhādiguṇaiḥ parasparam bhinnāḥ  
sthalopalaparvatasaritsamudrādyākārābhedenā vicitrasvabhāvāśca drśyante.  
tato 'mī veṣṭitapaṭagatacitrarūpavatkramavyaṅgyā eva. na hi pṛthivyādī-  
nām paridrśyamānāvāntarākārābhedabhinnam sannikṛṣṭam svarūpam tad-  
anugūṇam ca viprakṛṣṭam svarūpam sarvaṃ [9]  
yugapadgrahitum śakyam. api tu indriyairanumānena ca kramena vyajyate.  
kimata ityata āha.

(14) VIŚEṢANA VIŚEṢYATVA VYAPADEŚASYA DHĪBHIDĀM  
KRAMA VYĀṆGYATVATO HETORGO CARATVAM VRAJANTYAMĪ

amī dharādayo 'rthāḥ kramavyaṅgyatvāddhetossurabhiriyam  
pṛthivītyādīnām viśeṣanaviśeṣyarūpānām dhībhidām jñānābhedānām tad-  
bhāvavyapadeśasya ca viśayatām prāpnuvanti atra ca.

(15-16A) NĀGRHĪTAISTU GANDHĀDYAIRJĀTU CIJJĀYATE MATIḤ  
DHARITRYĀM HI JALĀDINĀMAGRAHE 'PI PRAJĀYATE .

GANDHĀDIBHYASTATO 'NANYĀ JALĀDIBHYAḤ PṚTHAK CABHUḤ

hi yasmātkāraṇādviśeṣanarūpairgandhādibhirguṇairagrhītair-  
viśeṣyāyām dharmirūpāyām dharitryām kadācidbuddhirnotpadyate.  
dravyāntareṣu tu jalādiṣyagrhītesvapyutpadyata eva. tasmādgandhādibhyo  
bhūmirananyā. jalādibhyo 'nyaiveṭi. evaṃ bhūtāntareṣvapi jñeyamityāha.

(16B) JALĀDIṢVEVAMEVĀYĀM YOJYO HETURMANĪṢIBHIḤ.

nanu japākusumasannidhāne raktabhāvām bhajan sphatikamaṇiḥ [10]  
śauklyaguṇagrahaṇādṛṭe 'pi grhyate. tasmādgūṇigrahaṇasya guṇagrahaṇa-  
pūrvakatvamasiddhamata āha.

(17) SAMSTHĀNAM CĀPI VARṆAM CA RŪPAM DVIVIDHAMĪṢYATE

TASMĀDASIDDHATĀ NĀSTI HETORUPAHITE MAṆAU.

iha hi dravyānām varṇavatsamsthānātmakamapi rūpam guṇa evesyate tasmājjapākuṣumopahitasyāpi sphōṭikasya grahaṇam śauklyaguṇagrahaṇa- bhāvepi vṛttacaturaśrādisamsthānagrahaṇapurasmameva bhavatīti dravya- grahaṇasya guṇagrahaṇapūrvakatvām siddhameva. ato 'sya hetornāsiddhateti. ittham bhūtānām bhogāngatvām prasādhya adhunā 'mātrāstairanumānātā' iti prāguktām tanmātrāsiddhām viśeṣayitum bhūtānām tāvatkāryatvamanirdeśēna darśayati.

(18) GUNĀNĀM KĀRYATĀSIDDHAU YO HETURABHIDHĪYATE  
KṢITYĀDIKAKALĀNTĀNĀM YOJYAH KARANASIDDHAYE

guṇānāmaccaitanye satyanekatvādghaṭādivatkāranapurvakatvam iti vakṣyati. tatastenaiva hetunā pṛthivyādīnāmapi kāryatvasiddhiḥ. tathā hi paridṛśyamānabhogavaicitryānyathānupapatyā pṛthivyādikakalānta- triṃśattattvātmakaḥ pratyātmaniyatamsūksmadeho 'stītyuktam. āgameṣu ca śrūyate. tatasteṣām pṛthivyādīnām pratipurūṣaniyatatvenācāitanye satyanekatvātkāraṇapūrvakatvām siddhatīti. [11]  
tatra tāvadbhūtākāraṇatvena tanmātra 'siddheḥ' tattadguṇabhedādeva pṛthivyādīnām kramasiddhirityāha.

(19) ŚABDĀDYEKOTTARĀDHIKYĀMĀTRĀSTADAVIŚEṢATAḥ  
YONAYO GAGANĀDĪNĀM KRAMAMICCHANTI DHARMIṆĀM.

ayamatra tātparyārthaḥ. anabhivyaktaviśeṣaśabdāmātrasvarūpam śabdatanmātramākāśasyopādānam. evam tadadhovarti śabdasparsāmātrasva- rūpam sparsatanmātram vāyoḥ. śabdasparsārūparasātmakam rasatanmātram jalasya. śabdādigandhāntapañcaguṇarūpam gandhatanmātram bhumeḥ iti. akṣarārthastu gaganādivacchabdādyekottaram guṇādhikyam yāsām tāḥ śabdādyekottarādhikyāḥ. tadaviśeṣato guṇaviśeṣat anabhivyaktaviśeṣa-

sabdādimātrasvarūpātteṣām gaganādīnām kramāt yonayaḥ upādānabhūtāḥ  
śabdāditanmātrāḥ. teṣāmeva viśiṣṭagaṇayogiṇām dharmināmākāśādīnām  
bhūtānām sṛṣṭikramamicchanti. guṇādhikhyakramenādhodhobhāvaṃ bhajantyaḥ  
kāryaṇāmapyadho 'dhobhāvaṃ kurvantītyarthaḥ. katham punarāsāṃ  
bhogāṅgatvamata āha.

(20) SVAKĀRYOTPATTITATSṚṢṬIKARTṚTĀ SARVAYONISU  
MĀTRĀDYĀSU PUMARTHASYA SĀDHANATVAM VINIŚCITAM

akṛtasya karaṇam kṛtasya parivardhanam ca yatassarvopādānam tatastanmātrānām  
māyādīnām ca kāryayonīnām bhogasādhanatatvotpādakatvāttadāpūrakatayā  
ca bhogāṅgatvaṃ siddham. atha indriyāṇāmapi bhogāṅgatvaṃ darśayitum  
prathamam karmendriyasiddhamāha.

(21) ĀNĀNDAGAMANOTSARGAVACANĀDĀNAKARMAṆĀM  
UPASTHAPĀDAPĀYVASYA PĀNINĀMĀNI VAI PRTHAK

utsargo mālavirekaḥ. ānandādikriyāhetutvenopasthādīnikarmendriyāṇi  
siddhāntītyarthaḥ. kimetānyupasthādīni sthānānyevendriyāṇi netyāha.

(22) BHĀVĀBHĀVAU TU YATTANTRAU PRATYEKAM KARMAṆĀM SMRTAU  
STHĀNEṢU SATSU TĀNĪHA PAŅCA KARMENDRIYĀNI TU

iha hi keṣāmcitpādādīsthānayogināmapi tattadindriyaśaktihīnānām  
gamaṇādikriyā na drśyate. tasmātteṣu sthāneṣu satsvapi tāsām kriyānām  
yadadhīnau bhāvābhāvau tāstatrasthāḥ śaktaya eva prthak pañcendriyāṇi  
jñeyāni. ata eva karmendriyāṇi yeneccchanti naiyāyikādayaste prati-  
kṣiptāḥ. nanvevaṃ cedbhrūlatotkṣepādīnāmapi kriyātvādanantatā [13]  
karmendriyāṇām prasajyate. ata āha.

(23) ĀNĀNDĀDIBHIRETAISTU KARMABHIḤ PARIBHĀṢITAIḤ  
KARMENDRIYĀNYATO NAIŚĀMĀNANTYĀM KARMAṆĀM VAŚĀT

bhavedayaṃ doṣo yadyasmābhiḥ śarīraikadeśavṛttīni tānīṣyaste.



tvagindriyavatteṣām sarvaśarīravypakatveneṣṭāddhastasyaivāyām bhrū-  
kṣepaṇādivyāpārah. pāyväderiva jīrṇavirecanādyātmaka iti bhrūkṣepādīnām-  
apyānandādiṣevāntarbhāvānna tadbhedādatrendriyānantyasiddhiḥ. kiñ-  
caitāreva ānandādibhiḥ praguktaiḥ pradhānabhūtaiḥ karmabhiḥ pañcaiva  
karmendriyāṇi sidhyantīti nānantatā karmendriyāṇām tattatsamjñāstu teṣām  
tatra tatra viśeṣādhiṣṭhānādityavirodhaḥ idānīm buddhīndriyasiddhamāha.

(24) ŚABDĀDIGRAHANE PUṂSAḤ KARTURNĀ KARAṆĀ KRṬIḤ  
NA CAIKARKARAṆĀ YASMĀDAPEKṢĀ NA NIVARTATE

śabdādigrahasyāpi kriyātvācchidikriyāyavatkarāṇām vinā notpattir-  
yuktā. na ca tāḥ pañcāpi kriyāḥ śrotrāderekasmādeva karaṇādutpadyante  
yasmātkaraṇāntarāpekṣā na nivartate [14]

śabdagrahaṇakaraṇabhūte śrotre satyapi sparsādigrāhane tvagādi  
karaṇāntarāpekṣitā dr̥śyata iti bhavaḥ. kāni tāni karaṇānītyata āha.

(25A) KARAṆĀNI ŚRUTIS TVAKCA CAKṢURJIHVĀ CA NĀSIKĀ

tataśca śabdādigrahaṇānyathānupapattyā tānyanumīyante ityabhi-  
prāyenāha.

(25B) ŚABDĀDYĀLOCANANĀM TEṢĀM VṚṬTIḤ ŚABDĀDISANNIDHAU

sannibheti pāṭha śabdādibāhyākārasadr̥śamāntaramākāramadhyavasāyinyā  
buddhyā saha mano 'dhiṣṭhitānīndriyāṇi vidyā yā viśayatvenopa-  
sthāpayantityarthaḥ. tam cendriyopasthāpitam buddhyādhyavasitamākāram  
amtarāṅgeṇa vidyākhyena karaṇena purṣo gr̥hṇatiti vakṣyāmaḥ. uktam  
cānyatra. buddhyadhyavasitamartham puruṣaścetayate itl. na caitāni  
karṇaśaṣkulyādīsthānānyevendriyāṇi. api tu tatsthāḥ śaktaya eva yataḥ  
sthānavatāmapi karmavaśāttacchaktivaikalyānna śabdādiñānamutpadyata  
ityāha.

(26) ETĀNI STHĀNAMĀTRĀṆI BUDHYAKṢĀNĪTI MĀ KRṬHĀḤ

STHĀNEṢU SATṢU VAIKALYĀNNA SAṂVIJÑĀYATE YATAḤ

athāntaḥkaraṇasiddhirucyate. -

[15]

- (27) ICCHĀSAMRAMBHABODHĀKHYĀ NOKTAIḤ SIDHYANTI SADHANAIḤ  
TATSIDDHAU KARAṆĀNYANTARMANO 'HAṂKĀRABUDDHAYAḤ

iha hi pṛthivyādīnām tatvānām svakāryaireva siddheḥ kāryāntara-  
hetutve pramāṇābhāvāt anekatatvaparikalpanābhāvaprasaṅgācca yānīcchādi-  
siddhau sādhanāni tāni manohaṅkārabuddhyākhyānyāntarāṇi karaṇānīty-  
antaḥkaraṇasiddhiḥ. tatreccchāsabdenaikagrataḥparaparyāyo 'vadhānātmakaḥ  
saṅkalpo vivakṣitaḥ sa manaso vṛttih. saṁrambhaśca prayatnohaṅkārasya  
bodhaścādhyavasāyo buddhiriti. etacca prapañcayīṣyate. eṣām ca antaḥ-  
karaṇabahiḥkaraṇānām parasparopakāreṇa puruṣārthasādhanatvamāha.

- (28) ANTARMUKHĀNI BĀHYĀNI SAṂBHŪYECCHĀDISĀDHANAM

ŚIBIKODVĀHINARAVADEKĀPĀYENA TĀSTATAḤ

- (29) ANTARMUKHĀGATĀNĀM CA CITERARTHAM PRAKURVĀTĀM

BĀHYĀRTHAM BUDDHIBHISSĀRDHAM NA SYURICCHĀDIKĀHKRIYĀḤ

yato 'ntarmukhāni bāhyāni ca karaṇāni śibikodvāhinaravatsam-  
bhūyecchādīnām kriyāṇām sādhanam bhavanti. bāhyārthālocana- [16]  
pūrvāṇāmeva 'dhyavasāyādīnām darśanāt avadhānādīnā vinā bāhyārtha-  
grahaṇa 'saṁbhavācca. tataściterātmano 'rtham bhogā khyam prayojanam  
sādhayatāmantarmukhāgatānāmantaḥkaraṇānām ca śabdādibahiḥkaraṇānām vā  
anyatarasyāpi vargasyāpāyena tiṣṭhatām satām tā icchādikāḥ kriyāḥ.  
śabdādibāhyārthabuddhayo vā puruṣārthasādhanatayā notpadyante. yathā  
śibikodvāhinormadhyādekasyāpāye tadudvahanakriyā na drśyate. atra  
parābhiprāyamāha.

- (30A) ANYENTAḤKARAṆAM PRĀNAMICCHANTI VYAKTACETANAM

anye lokāyataikadeśāḥ praṇayanādivṛttibhirjīvanādihetubhūtam

bhūtapariṇāmaviśeṣādabhivyaktacetanam prāṇākhyamāntaram vāyumevāntaḥ-  
karaṇamāhuh. asya dūṣaṇamāha.

(30B) PRATNAIRNA VINĀ SO 'STI TATSIDDHAU KARAṆAM TU KIM

prāṇātmanastāvadvāyoh kādācitkatvena prayatnapūrvikā pravṛttir-  
drśyate. yadāhuh preraṇākarsena vāyoh prayatnena vinā kutaḥ iti. tataḥ  
samrambhātmakaprayatnasiddhau kenāpi kareṇa bhāvyamityantaḥkaraṇa-  
siddhiḥ. vakṣyati ca samrambho 'hamkrtervṛtṭiḥ iti. kimca caitanyotpattir-  
apyasya vāyorbhavatābhyupagateti tasyāḥ karaṇāntaram vācyamityāha.

(31) CAITANYODGĀRABHĀRO 'YAMASYĀNTAḤKARAṆAM VADA [17]

VYAKTAM NA CASYA CAITANYAM VĀYUTVĀDBĀHYAVĀYUVAT

na jaḍasya caitanyābhivyaktiryuktā sarvasya caitanyābhivyakti-  
prasāṅgādityasya na caitanyam vāyutvādbāhyavāyuvaditi. ittham  
prānāntaḥkaraṇapakṣam nirasya prāguktādantaḥkaraṇatrayānmanah-  
sādhanāyāha.

(32) ICCHĀHETVĀSU SĀNCĀRĪ BĀHIRDEVAPRAVARTAKAM

MANO YASYĀSUBHĀVĀCCA KARTURNA YUGAPANMATIḤ

devanāddyotanāddevasābdenendriyānyucyante. matisābdena ca tattad-  
arthaviṣayam jñānam tataścāyamarthaḥ. iha hī ātmano indriyārtha-  
sannikarṣe satyapi sarvāṇīndriyāṇi yugapanna pravartante. kiñcideva  
na ca tatsarvadā pravartate tatastatpravṛttau yatkaraṇam tadicchāyāḥ  
saṃkalpātmano 'vadhānasya hetubhūtam bāhyendriyapravartakam ca mano  
buddhavyam. ata eva ca tadāntarena antaḥkaraṇādhiṣṭhānena sukhādi-  
saṃkalpena ca bāhyendriyādhiṣṭhānena ca dvidhā 'dhikārītyuktam. śrī-  
manmatāṅge - dvidhā 'dhikāri taccittam bhokturbhogopapādakam. bahiḥ-  
karaṇabhāvena svocitena yataḥ sadā. indriyānām tu sāmartyam saṃ-  
kalpenātmavartinā

[18]

karotyantaḥsthitam bhūyastato 'ntaḥkaraṇam manah. iti. śrīmanmṛgendre  
'pi. devapravartakam śiḅhnacāri saṅkalpadharmi ca manah. iti. nanu  
svāduśurabhyabhijātamarasābdavadabhirūpadīrghatarāṣaṣkulyāsvādane  
yugapatpañcajñānotpattirdrśyate. tanna. yatastatrāpyutpalapatrasāta-  
vyaktibhedavalakṣyasukṣmakramānyena pañca jñānānyutpadyante. ata eva  
etadāśu saṁcārītyuktam. evamahānkāramāpi sādhayati.

(33A-33Bb) PAÑCAKARMAKṚTO VĀYORJĪVANĀYA PRAVARTAKAḤ

SAMRAMBHO 'HĀNKĀRĀVṚTTIḤ

jīvanāya śarīradhāraṇārtham prāṇāyanāpanayanādipañcakarmakṛtas-  
tattadvṛttibhedena prāṇāpanādīsamjñābhājō vāyoh pravartakah saṁ-  
rambhātmaḥo yah prayatnah so 'haṅkāravṛttirityahaṅkārasiddhiḥ. yad-  
uktam śrīmanmṛgendre - atha vyaktāntarādbuddhergarvo 'bhūtkaraṇam citaḥ.  
saṁrambhadyasya cestante śarīrah pañca vāyava. iti. tatra prāṇāyanam  
sukṣmadehasyordhvādhonayanam prāṇasya vyāpārah. apanayanamadḥāh-  
prāṇam malāderapānasya. annādeh rasarūpasya sarvagātreṣu sāmyena  
ṇayanam samānasya. vinamanamaṅgānām vyānasya. unnayanamāntarasya  
dhvanervarṇatāprāṇamudānasya. [19]

pañcakarmakṛta iti ca prādhānyāduktam. udgārādikarṭṭvena cāsya vāyoh  
śravaṇāt. yaduktam śrīmatkālottare - udgāre nāga ityuktaḥ kūrma  
unmīlane sthitaḥ. kṛkarastu kṣate caiva devadatto vijrmbhaṇe. dhanam  
jayasthito 'pyeṣa [sthitaḥ poṣe iti pāṭhabhedah] mṛtasyāpi na muñcati.  
kim ca buddhikāryādayam ghaṭa ityādigrāhyādhyavasāyarūpātpratyartham  
bhinnarūpātpratyayādatyantabhedena bhāsamānah sarvārthagrahaṇepyekarūpo  
'hamiti grāhakādhyavasāyarūpaḥ pratyayo 'haṅkārasyaiva vṛttirityāha.

(33Bb) ANYO 'RTHAPRATYAYO PARAH

ahaṅkāravṛtṭyātmaḥapratyayo 'rthapratyayādanya ityarthah. nanu

śabdagrahaṇādayaḥ śrotrādināmasādhāraṇāvṛttayaḥ samrambhastu teṣāṃ-  
evendriyānām sādharmaṇāvṛttiriti kimanyenāhaṅkāreṇa kalpitena. ata āha.

(34) NA DEVAGRĀMASĀMĀNYAVṚTTIḤ SAMRAMBHA IṢYATE  
YATO 'NYATAMAVALIKALYE JĀYATE SATYAHAMKṚTIḤ

sādhāraṇakāryakarṇāmekāpāye tatkriyānutpatteruktatvāttadvaikalye-  
'pi jāyamāno 'yam samrambho 'hampratyayo vāhankāryaiva kārya [20]  
ityarthah. atraiva prasāṅgāt buddhīndriyakarmendriyatanmātravargānām  
maṇṣasahitānāmahānkārādevotpattiriti darsāyitumāha.

(35) ANYE CĀHAMKṚTISKANDHĀSTRIVARGAJANAKĀSTRAYOḤ  
TAIJASĀDIKANĀMĀNAḤ KRAMĀŚAḤ SĀTVIKĀDAYAḤ,

sattvarajastamobāhulaḥ sātvikarājasatāmasāstrayo 'hankāraskandhaḥ  
kramāttaijasavaikārikabhūtādikasaṃjñābhājo bhavanti. sātvikāditvam  
caīṣām sattvādiguṇābhūlyāt. nā miśraṃ pariṇamata iti nyāyena  
guṇāntarasāmsargo 'pyeṣām vidyate yataḥ. tatra kutah keṣāmutpattir-  
ityata āha.

(36) SA MANOBUDDHIDEVĀNĀM GUNO YASMĀTPRAKĀŚAKAḤ  
TASMĀTSASĀTVIKĀJJĀTASSVĀNURŪPĀDAHAMKṚTAḤ

atra naiyāyikamatamanūdyā dūṣayati.

(37) ANYE TU BUDDHIDEVĀNĀM BHĀUTIKATVAM PRAPEDIRE  
VIṢAYĀNĀM TU NIYAMĀDASIDDHĀDEVA HETUTAḤ

evam hi te manyante. śabdaikagrāhakaṃ śrotam sparsāikagrāhika  
tvagityādiniyataviṣayatvāndriyānām tāni śabdādyādhārākāśādi-  
bhūtajanyāni. āhankārikatve tu teṣāmekākāraṇatvādekarūpatā syāt na  
tu pratyekam viṣayaniyamasiddhiriti. [21]

tadidam tairasiddhādeva hetoḥ kalpyate. teṣām viṣayaniyasya prakṛti-  
niyamasādhakasyā 'siddheḥ. niyataviṣayatve hi indriyānīm tāni sva-

svakāraṇānyeva bhūtāni guṇasahitāni grhṇīran. yāvatā dravyāntarāṇi tu tadguṇāśca cakṣurādīnā grhyate. tathāhi.

(38) CATURDRAVYAGATĀNUSPARŚĀMSCATURO MĀRUTĀ TVACĀ  
DRAVYĀNYANIYATAM [DRAVYĀNI NIYATAMITI PĀTHABHEDAH] CAIVA  
GRHṆĀTI MARUTĀ SAMAM

tvagindriyam tāvat vāyavyatvenā 'bhyupagatam vāyusahitāni  
pṛthivyaptejāṃsi tadgatāṃsca sparśāngrhṇāti. kim ca.

(39) TRĪṆI DRAVYĀNI CAKṢUŚCA TEṢU RUPĀNI CAIVA HI  
ATO NA NIYAMOKṢĀNĀM VIṢAYĀNĀM CA KALPYATE  
dūṣaṇāntaramāha.

(40) BHAUTIKATVĀCCA NIYAME KARMAŚĀMĀNYAYOḤ SPHUTAM  
DEVEBHYO BUDDHAYO NA SYUH SAMAVĀYE CA DEHINĀM

bhautikatvasādhānāyākṣānām viṣayaniyame 'bhyupagamyamāne bhūtebhyo  
guṇebhyaśca vyatirekeṇa bhavadbhirabhyupagatānām karma- [22]  
sāmānyasamavāyānām padārthānām buddhayastebhyo jāyamānā na bhaveyuh  
yadapyuktamāhaṅkāritve tulye kathamakṣānām kāryabheda iti tadapyutpatti-  
bhedādikṣuvikārānām guḍakhandaśarkarādīnāmiva bhaviṣyatīti matvā s  
śrotrādīnām śabdādigrahaṇāniyamakāpekṣāyāmapyasmābhiḥ puruṣārthadāyakaṃ  
karmaiva niyāmakamiṣyata ityāha.

(41) NA CĀPYAHAM KRTO JANMA NIYAME KĀRANAM MAMA  
PUMARTHADĀTR YATKARMA KĀRANAM TAT BHAVERITAM

nāsmābhirahaṅkārajatvameva viṣayaniyame kāraṇamiṣyate. kintu  
śivādhiṣṭhitam karma cetyarthah. kāyārandhraviśiṣṭe nabhobhāge sa  
śabdāvadyotake 'bhyupagamyamāne nāsārandhrādīnāmapi śravaṇendriyatva-  
prasaṅgatayā śravaṇākāśasyaiva śabdagrāhakatvaniyame karmaivā  
'drṣṭākhyam niyāmakam bhautikendriyavādināpi iṣyata ityāha.

(42) NĀNĀŚRUTIBHAYĀTKLRPTE SVE PARENĀPI KĀRANAM

ŚABDABHOGASYA NIYAME TATPRADAM KARMA BHĀṢITAM

ṣve kāyākāśe śabdagrāhake kalpyamāne nānāśrutitvaprasaṅgabhayāc-  
chravanākāśasyaiva śabdagrahaṇāniyame puruṣārthapradam karmaiva kāraṇam  
bhavatāpīṣyata ityanvayaḥ. ittham karmendriyāṇām āhāṅkārikatvamāha. [23]

(43) RĀJASĀDVAIKṚTĀDVARGAḤ KARMĀKṢĀNĀM TU KARMAKṚT

JĀTAḤ KĀRYASYA YENEHA KĀRĀNĀNUVIDHĀYITĀ

rajasah pravṛttihetutvādrājasādvaikārikākhyādahāṅkāriskandhāt-  
kriyāhetuḥ karmendriyavargo jātaḥ yasmātkāraṇānuvidhāyitvam kārye  
dṛśyate. ata eva satvasya prakāśatvātparakāśasya buddhīndriyavargasya  
sātvikādutpattiruktā. anyathā bhinnasvabhāvayoranayorvargayorekasmād-  
evotpattyabhyupagame kāraṇāniyamalakṣaṇo 'navasthādoṣah prasajyate  
ityāha.

(44) VINIVĀRAYITUM ŚAKYĀ NĀVYAVASTHĀ VIKĀRAJĀ

SĀTVIKĀTSAMBHAVE KLRPTE SĀTVARĀJASAVARGAYOḤ

(45) MĀTRĀSĀNGHO 'PYAHĀŅKĀRĀDVARGADVAYAVILAKṢANAḤ

PRAKĀŚYASTĀMASASTASMĀJJĀTO 'BHŪTĀDISAMJĀKĀT

idānīm buddheradhyavasāyādihetutvamāha.

(46) PRAKĀŚO VIṢAYĀKĀRO DEVADVĀRO NA VĀ KVACIT

PUMBODHAVYAKTIBHŪMITVĀDBODHO VṚTTIRMATERMATĀ

[24]

indriyadvāro 'yam ghaṭa ityādibāhyaviṣayādhyavasāyarūpaprakāśas-  
tadanapekṣāścāntarasmṛtipratibhādiprakāśo vā śabdādvakṣyamāno bhāva-  
pratyayalakṣaṇaśca prakāśah puruṣabodhasya vyaktisthānatvādbodhākhyo  
materbuddhervṛttirjñeyā. tato 'dhyavasāyasmṛtyādiliṅga buddhiḥ  
siddhyatīti. taduktam śrīmanmṛgendre iti buddhiprakāśo 'yam bhāva-  
pratyayalakṣaṇah. bodha ityucyate bodhavyaktibhūmitayā paśoh. iti.

eva ca buddhibodhastrividha ityāha.

(47Aa) KLRPTIRMAṬIḤ SMṚTISĀCETI

tatra klṛptiḥ kalpanāṃ pratibhetyarthāḥ matiśca mananāṃ jñānam-  
adhyavasāya itī yāvat. itthamicchādīkāryabhedādantaḥkaraṇabhedāḥ siddha  
ityupasamharati.

(47Ab-47B) JĀTĀ BHINNĀRTHAVĀCAKĀḤ

ICCHĀSAMRAMBHABODHAKHYĀSTENĀNTAḤKARAṆĀM TRIDHĀ

smṛtyādīnāmavāntarabhede 'pi bodhakatvenaikārthatvat buddhi-  
vṛttitvam icchādayastu vṛttayo bhinnārthatvādbhinnakāraṇā itī bhāvaḥ.  
nanu pṛthivyādīnām viśayatvena bhogyatvāndriyāṇām ca tādgrahaṇa-  
hetutvādastu bhogasādhanatā. Buddhestu indriyārtha- [25]  
sannikarṣādātmanyutpadyāmanāyāḥ samvedanarūpatvānna bhogasādhanatā.  
apī tu ātmaḡuṇataiveti naiyāyīkādayaḥ. ata āha.

(48) TULYE GUṆĀNVITATVE TU SAMVEDYĀM KIṆCIDIṢYATE

BUDDHIŚCĀPIHYASAMVEDYĀ DHANYĀ TĀRKIKATĀ TAVA

ayamabhiprāyaḥ dvividho 'tra bodho 'dhyavasāyātmako 'nadyavasāyāt-  
makaśca. tatra yo 'dhyavasāyātmakaḥ sa sarvadā grāhakarūpeṇaiva bhāś  
bhāsamānatvādātmanaḥ svabhāva eva. astu anadyavasāyarūpaḥ sa ut-  
pattyapavargayogitvena bhāsamānatvānna puṃsaḥ svabhāvaḥ. nityānitya-  
svabhāvatvāyogāt. tatsvabhāvatve cānityatvaprasaṅgat. na ca nityonu-  
bhūyate. tato na puṃsaḥ svabhāva itī yasya saḥ svabhāvaḥ sā buddhirbhā-  
bhvānāmadyavaseyatotpādikā dharmajñānādyasṭaḡuṇā buddhiritī. tataś-  
ca viśayādhyavasāyarūpatvādbhāvapratyayātmanā satvādiguṇātrayānvitvena  
svarūpeṇa bhogyatvācca buddherapi samvedyātaiva. na tvātmaḡuṇatvam.  
taduktam tatvasamgrahe buddhirviśayākārasukhādirūpa samāśato bhogyam  
itī. prayogaścātra bhavati buddhirapi samvedyātaiva satvādiguṇānvayāt-



prthivyādivaditi. karaṇatvaṃ ca indriyavadasyā viṣayādhyavasāyahetu-  
tvātsiddhamityuktam. nanu dharmādīnām [26]

bhāvānāmapi asmābhiratmaguṇatvamiṣyate. tadayuktam. teṣāmātmasam-  
skāratkvāyogāt. tathāhi. jyotiṣtomādikarmasamskārastāvannātmani  
sambhavati, avikāritvāt karmaṇām ca kṛṣyādīnāmātmasamskāratvādrṣṭeh  
api tu jaḍa eva yatra tāni samskāraṃ kurvanti. sa buddhiḥ. evam  
jñānādisamskāre 'pi vācyam. tadbālādeva svapnasmṛtipratibhādāv-  
asatyapyarthe ulleko drśyate. yataḥ ataśca.

(49) ANTARBAHIŚCA KARAṆAM SAKṢĀT BHOGASYA SĀDHANAM  
BHOGYAM VINĀ NA BHOGO 'STĪ TYATO BHOGASYA SĀDHANAM

āntaro bāhyaśca karaṇagrāmo bhogasya sukhaduḥkhādisamvedanātmanah  
sākṣātkaraṇam. yaduktam śrīmatṣvāyambhuve bhogo 'sya vedanā pumsah  
sukhaduḥkhādilakṣaṇā iti. sa ca bhogaḥ sraṅcandanādibhogyam vinā na  
syāditi tadgrahanapūrvakasya sukhādyadhyavasāyasyāpi sādhanamiṣyate.  
etadeva drṣṭāntena prakatayati.

(50) SAINIKĀNVIJAYĀYEHA PRAYUNKTE NṚPATIRYATHĀ  
PRYUNKTE MAHADĀDĪNI BODHĀDYARTHAMANUSTATHĀ [27]

(51) SAINIKASTHE JAYE RĀJŪNAḤ KARTṚTVAM TU YATHĀ TATHĀ  
BUDDHYĀDISAMSTHE BODHĀDAU PUMSAḤ KARTṚTVAMIṢYATE

(52) SVĀTMĀRTHAM SAINIKĀNĀM TU VIJAYO NETI TE YATHĀ  
SĀDHANAM VIJAYASYEṢṬĀSTATHAIVA MAHADĀDAYAḤ

(53A) TEṢĀMAPI HI BODHĀDYAM SVĀRTHAM NETI VINIŚCITAM

karaṇānāmacetanatvāttadvṛttīnām na svārtham. api cetana-  
puruṣārthataiveti bhāvah.

(53B) TATO BODHĀDVṚTTĪNĀM SĀDHANAM MAHADĀDAYAḤ

adhunā bhogyam vibhajati.

(54) MOHADUḤKHAUKHĀKĀRO RŪPĀKHYASTADBHAVO DVIDHĀ

BAUDHO BODHAḤPARAM BHOGYĀM MĀYĀDI CA TADARTHATAḤ

udbhūtaguṇatvena mohādihetutvānmohādyākāro rūpasamjñō dharmādi-  
bhāvavargaḥ tadupādānaḥ siddhyādipratyaavargasāca dvidvidho yaṁ baḍḍho  
bodhaḥ puṁsaḥ paramavyavahitaṁ bhogyāṁ māyādikāṁ bhuvanādivastu tad-  
anvayatastadarthatvādbhogādhikaraṇatvātparamparayā bhogyamiti. ko 'sau  
rūpākhyā ityata āha.

(55) ADHARMĀDITRAYĀM RĀGO DHARMĀDI CA CATUṢṬAYAM

TAMORAJAḤ SATVAMAYĀM RŪPĀM TATKARMAJĀM MATAU

[28]

adharmājñānānaisvaryaḥ rūpāṁ tāmasāṁ rāgastvavairāgyākhyāṁ  
rājasāṁ dharmājñānavairāgyaisvaryaḥ sātvikamityevamaṣṭavidhaṁ rūpāṁ  
buddhau guṇatvena sthitaṁ karmatasācopādānājjātam. tattvabhuvanaśarīrādi  
tu karmaṇaiva saha karaṇa māyākhyādupādānāt sāksātparamparayā cotpannam-  
ityuktam śrīmatvāyambhuvātau. ete ca.

(56) ATYANTOCCHEDATO MUKTAVABHIVYAKTESCA SARVATAḤ

PAṬĀDIBODHĀVAITATYĀDĀTMANO NA GUṆĀGUṆĀḤ

yato dharmādīnām mokṣetyantocchedaḥ parairapīṣyate yataścātma-  
svabhāvasya jñānakriyātmano nityasya vyākpakasya muktau sarvato vy-  
vyāpakatvenābhivyaktiḥ śrūyate yasmācca paṭādi jñānānāmadhyavasāya-  
rūpaṇāmavaitatyāṁ avyāpakatvaṁ drśyate. tasmādanityā avyāpakās-  
cādharmādayo nityasya vyāpakasyātmano guṇā bhavitum nārhanṭi. tat-  
samavāye tasya parināmitvādidoṣaprasaṅgāt. ete cādharmādayaḥ  
sāmsiddhikavainayikaprakṛtabhedāstrivdhā ātmana utpadyante. yaduktam  
śrīmanmṛgendre sāmsiddhikā vainayikā prakṛtāśca bhavantyanoh. viśiṣṭa-  
dharmaśāstrāsamuddīpita cetasām. guṇaḥ sāmsiddhiko bhāti dehāpāye  
'pi pūrvavat. lokadhīguruśāstrebyho bhāti vainayiko guṇaḥ. [29]

sa mārjito vainayiko manovāktanuceṣṭayā. prakṛto dehasamyoge vyaktaḥ  
svapnādibodhavat. iti. ataścaivam trividhebhyo dharmādibhyaḥ phala-  
bhedānāha.

- (57) EṢĀMADHOGĀTIRBANDHO VIGHĀTAḤ SĀMŚRĪḤ KRAMĀT  
SVARGO MUKTĪḤ PRAKṚTIBHĀVO 'VIGHĀTAŚCA PHALĀNI. CA
- (58) BHAVASTHĀNĀPARĀDHO 'THA VIGHNO BHOGĀNĀTIKRAMAḤ  
VAŚYORDHVASTHĪTISADDRṢṬIBHṚTVAM BHOGĀSPRHĀ PHALAM
- (59) SVACINTITESU VĀ VIGHNO RŪPE SĀMŚIDDHIKE PHALAM  
VINAYAPRAKṚTE RŪPE PŪRVOKTAPHALĀSAMGRAHAḤ

vainayikebhyaḥ prakṛtebhyaścādharmādibhyaḥ kramādadhogatyādīni  
phalāni bhavanti. sāmśiddhikebhyaḥ bhavādīni. tatrādhogatirnaraka-  
prāptiḥ. bandho 'nātmani ātmābhimānitādiḥ. samsṛtistiryagādiyoni-  
prāptiḥ. muktisā darsānāntaramokṣaḥ. paramukterdikṣāphalatvena mokṣa-  
kārikāsu vakṣyamānatvāt. prakṛti bhāvāḥ prakṛtilayaḥ. bhavaḥ samsārah  
sthānāparādhaḥ svasthānānyakkārah. bhogānatikramo bhogecchā.  
vaśyordhvasthitiḥ vaśyānām svapadādhaḥsthāninām adhiṣṭhānām saddṛṣṭi-  
bhṛtvam tattadviṣayasamyakjñānayogaḥ. śeṣam sugamam. [30]  
ittham bhāvānvicārya pratyayānvyāceṣṭe.

- (60) VYAKTĀVYAKTAJÑĀSAMBUDDHĪḤSIDDHĪḤ SAMPRATI SIDDHYATI  
RĀGAMĀTRĀNULIPTĀNGADDHARMĀDI SAMUDĀYATAḤ

iha hi buddhau vāsanātvena sthitā dharmādayoṣṭau bhāvā ucyante  
yadāhuḥ bhāvayanti yato līngam tena bhāvāḥ prakīrtitā iti ta eva pra-  
karṣāvasthām prāptāḥ sthūlena rūpeṇa bhogyadaśamāpannāḥ samsāriṇām  
pratyāyanātpratyayaḥ kathyante. taduktam pratyāyayanti kṣetrajñām  
pratyayāstena kīrtitāḥ. iti. ataśca vairāgyena rājasena īṣadyuktāt  
sātvikāddharmādibhāvācatuṣṭayātsiddhirutpadyate. sā ca vyaktasya

guṇāderavyaktasya ca pradhānasya jñasya ca puruṣasya sambuddhistad-  
viṣayam jñānameva prakarṣāvasthām prāptā siddhirucyate. uktam ca  
pumprakṛtyādiviṣayā buddhiryā siddhiratra sā. iti. tatra vyaktāvyakta-  
viṣaye buddhibodhe tatprakāśakatvenāntyantam viviktaḥ puruṣaḥ svayam-  
evāvabhāṣate. yadāhuḥ draṣṭuḥ svarūpe 'vasthānam iti. bhoyatvādi-  
doṣaprañsangādyadvakṣyati mokṣakārikāsu pariṇāmī pumān bhogyah prāptas-  
tadgocaro yadi. iti.

(61) DHARMĀDIRŪPASAMPṚKTĀ PĀPĀDITRITAYODBHAVĀ [31].

TUṢṬIḤ KṚTĀRTHAVIJÑĀNAMANAYĀTMAGAHE SATI

sātvikairdharmādibhirīṣatsampṛktādadharmāditrayāttāmasāttuṣṭir-  
utpadyate. sā ca tuṣṭiḥ prakuktayā bhūtatanmātrādirjñānarupayā siddhya  
tattāddarśanoktena svarūpenātmano grahaṇe sati. adhastanaviṣayād-  
vairāgyādakṛtārthasyāpi kṛtārtho 'smītyutpadyamānā buddhistuṣṭirucyate.  
yacchrūyate tuṣṭirnakṛtārthasya kṛtārtho 'smīti yā mathiḥ. iti.

(62) ADHARMĀDITRAYĀJJĀTĀ RĀGALEŚĀNURĀÑJITĀT

ĀŚAKTIRDEVAVAILKALYĀDASĀMARTHYAM ŚUBHĀDIṢU

śubhaśabdenātropasthendriyavyāpara āhlāda ucyate. tadādiṣu indriya-  
vaikalyāttadupalakṣitaśarīravaikalyādvā klaibyaśādhiryadirūpam yad-  
asāmarthyam seyamaśaktistāmasādvargādrājaseneṣatsampṛktādbhavati. uktam  
ca āśaktirapravṛttatvāttāmasī dukkhabhāvataḥ rājasyāpi guṇo drṣṭaḥ kārye  
kāraṇasamśrayah. iti.

(63) TASMĀDEVĀYATHĀVASTU VIJÑĀNAM VĪTARĀGATAḤ

ĪṢADDHARMĀDISAMPṚKTĀDABHIVYAKTO VIPARYAYAḤ

tasmāttāmasavargādrājasahīnātsātvikeneṣadyuktādeyathārthergrahaṇa-  
rūpo viparyayastamo mohamahāmohatāmīsrāndhatāmīsralakṣaṇo [32]  
jāyate. yacchrūyate kimcitsāmānyato 'nyatra matiranyāviparyayah. iti.

itthamatisamkṣepeṇoktaṃ bhāvapratyayātmakam buddhibodhamupasamharati.

(64Aa) LEŚOKTA BUDDHIDHARMO 'YAM

eṣāṃ ca bhāvapratyayānāṃ prapañcaḥ śrīmanmataṅgādu vistareṇa  
darśitaḥ. prakāśitaścāsmābhirṃgendravṛttidīpikāyāmiti ata evāvadhāryaḥ.  
gandhavistarabhayāttu nātra likhyate. ayaṃ ca.

(64Ab) CETANENOPABHAJYATE

bhogyatvāditi śeṣaḥ. bhogyatvameva sādhayati.

(64B-65A) BHOGYATVAM CĀSYA SAMSIDDHAM YENOTPANNO 'NUBHŪYATE

SA CĀPYANUBHAVO BHOGO BHOKTĀRAM GAMAYATYALAM

asya bauddhasya jīvānasyotpattyapavargayogitvena, bhogyatvameva na  
tu bhoktrtvam tasya sarvadā grāhakarūpeṇa sthirasyaiva svasamvedana-  
siddhitvādityuktam. atasca.

(65B) SĀDHAYITRĀ VINĀ YASMĀTSIDDHIRNEHA SAMĪHITĀ

iha hi buddhicitanyavādibhirbaudhairbhoktrtvenābhyupagatasyāsyā[33]  
bauddhasya jñānasyāsthiratvena ghaṭādivadacetanatvātkālāntarabhāvi-  
karmaphalalabhoktrtvāsambhavāduktavadbhogyatvācca sa tattadviṣaya-  
sukhādyanubhavarūpo bhoga eva bhoktāram sādhayati. yato bhogakriyā-  
siddhirbhoktāram ceṣṭamānamantareṇa na sambhavati bhogasyāpi kriyātvat-  
tatkartṛtvenāpyātmasiddhiriti bhāvaḥ. samīhiteti. abhiṣṭetyarthāḥ.  
atra codayati.

(66A) NA VINĀ DRṢṬASAMVĀDAMANUMĀNASYA MĀNATĀ

iha hi dhūmenānumito 'gnirāsīdatā pratyakṣīkriyāta iti tasyānu-  
mānasya pramāṇāntarsamvādo drṣyate. ata eva tasya prāmānyam. cakra-  
mūrdhādau dhūmāderiva sādhyavyabhicārādarśanāttatascaṭrāpyanubhavātmano  
jñānasyaiva darśanāt jñātrjñānayorākārabhedānupālambhāt bhogādbhoktr-  
anumānasyāpi vyabhicāraśākyā pramāṇatvābhāvānna bhokturjñāna-

vyatiriktāsyātmanah siddhiriti saugatāḥ. yadāhuḥ ekamevedam̄ samvidrūpaṁ  
harṣaviṣādādyanekākāravivartam̄ paśyāmastatra yatheṣṭam̄ samjñāḥ kriyantām-  
iti. tadayuktamityāha.

(66B) DRṢṬASYA KENA SAMVĀDO YENA TASYĀSTI MĀNATĀ

ayamabhiprāyaḥ. bhogasya viṣayasamvedanātmanonubhavyasya [34]  
bāhyaviṣayāsamnidhane 'pi suṣuptyādāvāntaradehasparśamātraviṣayatvena  
sthiratayaiva bhāsamānatvāt sthiratvena svasamvedanapratyakṣasiddho  
grāhakarūpo ātmetyuktaṁ na ca jñānasya kṣaṇikasya svātmani kriyā-  
virodhenasthair yādhyāropo yuktaḥ. yadapyuktaṁ akṣaṇikasya  
kramayaugapadyābhyāmarthakriyāvirodhāt yatsat tatsarvaṁ kṣaṇikamityapi  
na. akṣaṇikasyaiva maṇyādeḥ kramena ghaṭādīn bhāvānavabhāsayato  
yugapañcaikagr̥hagatāmstāmstānarthān prakāśayato 'nubhavasiddhatvāt.  
kṣaṇikasya cotpattikāla eva naśyato 'nekakṣaṇanirvartyakriyānu-  
ṣṭānākṣamatvādityādi vistareṇa śrīmanmataṅgavṛtyādāvācāryaiḥ sādhitamiti.  
tataścātmanah svasamvedanasiddhatve 'pyanumeyatvam abhyupagamyocyate.

(67A) NEHA PRAMĀNASAMVĀDAḤ PRATYAKṢASYA PRAMĀNATAḤ

nātra pramāṇasya pramāṇāntarasamvādāpekṣā. pratyakṣasya  
pramāṇāntarasamvādābhāve 'pyan-  
adhigataviṣayajñānanajanakatvena pramāṇyāt tadāhuḥ anadhigatārthagantṛ  
pramāṇam̄ iti. katham̄ punaścakramūrdhādu vyabhicāro 'ta āha.

(67B) ANVAYAVYATIREKĀBHYĀM̄ VYABHICĀRANIRĀKRTIḤ

yasya dhūmāderyenā 'vinābhāvalakṣaṇassambandho 'nvayavyatirekābhyām̄  
niścitaḥ na tasya tatra vyabhicāro dr̥śyate. su- [35]  
vivecitasya dhūmasyā 'gnāviva. cakramūrdhādijanyasya tu svarūpāvivekena  
dhūmatvabhrāntiḥ. tataścātrā 'pi kriyāyāssarvatrakartṛpūrvakatvadarśanāt  
bhogakriyayā bhoktrā 'numīyate. bhavadbhirapi svadehe buddhipūrvakatvena

siddhātkāryādīvyavahārātparāsarīre buddhiḥ pramāṇāntarasamvadam vinā  
'pyanumānenā 'numīyate ityāha.

(68A) DEHADHARMASYA MĀNATVE KĀRANAM BUDDHIRIṢYATE

dehadharmasya ceṣṭādyātmano mānatve hetutve sati tēna parāsarīre  
taddheturbuddhiḥ sādhyate ityārthaḥ. yadāhuḥ buddhipūrvām kriyām drṣṭvā  
svadehe 'nyatra tadgrahāt. jñāyate dhīḥ iti. ataśca rūpādidarśanān-  
yathānupapattyā cakṣurādīndriyavadbhogānyathānupapattyā bhoktṛsiddir-  
ityabhiprāyeṇāha.

(68B-69Aa) ASMĀTSĀMĀNYATO DRṢṬĀDANYASYĀPI PRAMĀNATĀ  
ANUMĀNASYA SAMSIDDHĀ

yaduktam cārvākaiḥ. astu bhoktā. sa tu paridrṣyamānaprthivyādi-  
caturbhūtavikārasamāhārātmakaḥ kāya eva. tasyaiva pariṇāmaviśeṣeṇa  
kiṇvādidravyavikāreṇa madaśaktyabhivyaktavaccaitanyābhivyaktiḥ. prāṇādi-  
vāyubalena bhogādikriyādarśanācca. na tu tato 'nyaḥ. tasya  
pratyakṣenādarśanāt. [36]

yadāhuḥ. drṣṭe sambhavaṭyadrṣṭapārikalpanā na nyāyyā. iti. tadapi  
nirākṛtamityāha.

(69Ab-70A) KĀRANĀDATA EVA HI  
CETANO BUDDHIBODHASYA BHOKTĀ MĀNASAMARTHITAH  
PRTHIVYĀDISAMĀHĀRO BHAVATVITY NA YUKTIMAT

ayamabhiprāyaḥ. yataḥ śarīrasyāpyantaḥ śūlādyātmanā bahiśca mṛdu-  
karkaśādinā sparśeṇa bhogyatvadarśanādghaṭādivaccetanatvam na yuktaṁ.  
tatastasyāpi bhoktṛtvenā 'tmā siddha iti cetanatyam cāsyā na pramānopā-  
pannamityāha.

(70B) CAITANYAM HI TVAYĀ TASYA KENA MĀNENA NIŚCITAM

nanu śuklaśonitātmakadehārambhakabhūtasadbhāva eva caitanyadarśanāt-

tadabhāve ca 'darśanāddehātmakameva caitanyamata āha.(71 [37]

(71Aa) SATI BHĀVE 'PYANAİKĀNTAḤ

śavaśarīre garbhādaḥ vā dehātmakabhūtasadbhāve 'pi caitanyā  
'darśanānna dehātmakam caitanyam tataśca śarīrā 'tmavādo na pramāṇopapanna  
ityaha.

(71Ab) TASMĀDVĀYASAVĀSĪTAM

bhogyatvāccāsyā 'cetanatvamityaha.

(71B-72A) ANABHIVYAKTACAITANYĀ DRṢṬĀ BHOGYĀ GUḌĀDAYAḤ  
JĪVACCHĀYOPABHOGYATVĀDASTU TULYO GUḌĀDIBHIḤ

guḍādayo hi jīvasyā 'tmanaśchāyayā 'nubhavātmanā samvidā bhogyatvena  
grāhyatayā viśayīkriyamāṇāḥ kadācidapyabhivyaktacetana na drṣṭaḥ. tataḥ  
kāyā 'tmāpi bhūtaśamāhāraḥ proktavadgrāhyatvena bhogyatayā viśayīkaraṇād-  
acetana eveti na tasya bhokṛtvam upapadyate. kim ca dehasyaiva  
cetanatve tasyā 'sakṛtpariṇāmena vināśādbālyāvāsthā 'nubhūtam vṛddhāva-  
sthāyām smaryamāṇam nopapadyate ityādi vistareṇa nirākṛto 'yam pakṣo-  
'smābhiśśrīmanmṛgendravṛttidīpikāyām. nanu śarīravyatiriktānām-  
indriyānāmeva bhokṛtvam astu. nānyasyeti indriyacaitanikāstadayuktam-  
ityāha.

(72B-73A) BHOGYATVAKARAṆATVĀBHYĀMINDRIYĀNĀM VINIŚCITAM  
ACAITANYAMATO BHOKTĀ PURUṢAŚCITSVABHĀVAKAḤ

uktavadindriyāṇāmapi bhogārthatayā bhogyatvātkaṛaṇatvācchastrādi-  
vadacetanatvamanivāryamevāto naiṣām karṛtvam api tu citśvabhāvasyātmana  
eva tasyaiva hi sarvānyakārakapravṛttinivṛttihetutvena karṛtvam yuktaḥ.  
yadāhuḥ pravṛttau ca nivṛttau [38]  
ca kārakānām ya īśvaraḥ apravṛtṭih pravṛttau vā sa kartā nāma kāraka  
iti.



(73B) BHOKTURBHOGAŚCITERVYAKTIRBHOGYACCHĀYĀNURĀÑJITĀ

bhogyā ya buddheḥ sukhādirūpāyāḥ chāyayā ākāreṇānurāñjitā caitanya-  
vyaktireva bhokturbhogaḥ yaduktam śrīmatstvāyambhuve bhogosya vedanā  
pumsaḥ sukhaduhkhādīlakṣaṇā iti tadānīm ca.

(74A) ACITTACCITISAMBANDHĀDBHOGYAMĀBHĀTI CETANAM

acetanamapi buddhātmakam bhogyam tasyātmanaḥ caitanyasamśleṣāc-  
cetanavadābhāsate. taduktam sāmkyairapi acetanam cetanāvadiva liṅgam  
iti. evam ca.

(74B-75A) BHOGYADVĀRENA PĀŚĀNĀM PAŚUNĀM CA PARASPARAM

CETANĀCETANACCHĀYĀNUŚAṄGO BHĀSATE BHRĪSAM

bhogyam hi vastu cittādhiṣṭhitam buddhīndriyabrndamātmano  
viṣayatvenopasthāpayati. tacca buddhyādhyavasitam puruṣo grhṇāti. tad-

buddhyādhyavasitamartham puruṣasacetayati iti. tataśca prakāśa-  
rūpatvādādarśasthānīyena bhogākhyena buddhibodhātmanā dvāreṇātmanām  
bhoktrṇām pāśānām ca viṣayarūpeṇa pariṇatānām [39]

bhogyānām cetanācetanarupayoḥ chāyayoḥ pratibimbitayorākāraṇuśaṅgaḥ  
samśleṣamātram bhrīsamatyarthamekākaratayā bhāsate. ata evātrānātmādau  
ātmādibhramāḥ samśāriṇām. tadvivekajñāne tu teṣām prakṛtilaya ityuktam.

(75B) BHOGYE BHOGAḤ PRABHOŚCHĀYĀ YATHĀ CANDRAMASO JALE .

prabhorvyāpakasyātmanassa eva bhogyaviṣayo bhogaḥ. yā tadadhy-  
vasāyātmani buddhibodhe candramasa iva jale chāyā viśiṣṭā caitanyābhi-  
vyaktiścandrābimbasyā jādātvat sthūlatvācca viśiṣṭasvarūpābhivyaktimātra  
evātra dṛṣṭāntatvam ato bhoktrtvācetanasya puruṣasyaiva kartrtvam  
nācetanānām bhogyānām buddhyādināmiti mantavyam. nanu kriyāveśo hi  
kartrtvam. sa yadi pumsassyātparināmitā bhavet. puruṣo hi nirvikāras-  
tato nāsyā kartrtvam. kim tu prakṛtereva sā hi vivekajñānātpūrvam

mahadādi rūpeṇa bhogyatayā tasyātmānam darśayatīti saṃsāra ityucyate.  
tatsaṃbhava tu tasmānnivartamāna muktiśabdābhidheyeti sām̐khyāḥ. yaduktam  
taiḥ. raṅgasya darśayitvā nivartate nartakaḥ yathā raṅgāt. puruṣasya  
tathātmānam prakāśya vinivartate prakṛtiḥ itī. [40]  
ata āha.

(76A-76B) PARINĀMABHAYĀTPUMSI BHOGE CĀNĪPSITE SATI  
AVISĒṢO DURĀPOHAḤ PRASAKTO BHOKTRMUKTAYOḤ

ayamabhiprāyaḥ. nātra kriyāveśaḥ kartṛtvam. api tu kriyāyām  
śaktatvameva. tathāhi ayaskāntasannidhānādayas ivātmanaḥ sannidheḥ  
śarīrādereva spandādirūpaḥ kriyāveśo dṛśyate. tataśca buddhyadiviṣayi  
karaṇarūpe bhoge puṃso na pariṇāmāprasangaḥ. kintu tatparatvena tad-  
viśayīkaraṇameva. bhavatpakṣe tu puṃso nirmalatvena tatparatve 'py-  
anabhyupagamyamānebhoktrmuktayoravisēṣo durnivāraḥ prasajyate. ubhayor-  
apyanapekṣatvena tulyatvāt. nanu parārthapravṛtta prakṛtireva tad-  
artham pravartata ityuktam.yadāhuḥ vatsavṛddhinimittam kṣīrāsya. yathā  
pravṛttirajñasya. puruṣavimokṣanimittam tathā pravṛtṭiḥ pradhānāsyeti  
ata āha.

(77A) PUMARTHĀYA CA PĀSĀNĀM PRAVṚTTIRVINIVĀRITĀ

ayamabhiprāyaḥ acetanatvādeva pradhānasya puruṣam prati pravṛttirna  
yuktā. kṣīrāderapi cetanagavādyadhiṣṭitasyaiva pravṛttidrṣṭaiḥ. vāyu-  
jalādīnāmapi pakṣīkṛtatvācca tatpravṛtṭyabhyupagame- [41]  
'py na nirapekṣam prati pravṛttiryuktā. nirapekṣam prati pravṛttau va  
muktasya 'pi pravartate. tataśca baddhātmani sābhilāṣatve bhogārtham  
samudyogādātmani vikāre ca 'nabhyupagamyamāne tasmin bhogo 'pi na  
yuktimānityāha.

(77B) BHOKTARYAVIKṚTE BHOGO MUKTAVANNOPAPADYATE

nanu aviveka eva pradhānapravṛtterhetuḥ. prakṛtipuruṣavivekajñāne tu  
 tam pratyuparātādhikāratvānnapravartate. ato na baddhamuktayoraviśeṣaḥ yad  
 āhuh prakṛteḥ sukumāratarām na kim cidasti me matirbhavati yā  
 dr̥ṣṭāsi~~ti~~ punardarsānamupaita puruṣasya iti. tadayuktaṁ. bhavatpakṣe  
 puṁso nirmalatvenāvivekāyogāt. nirhetuke cāviveke sarvadā vivekābhāva-  
 prasaṅgācca. tasmādavivekānyathānupapattyāpi tasya samalatvasarāgatādy-  
 abhyupagantavyamiti vakṣyāmaḥ. yadyevamātmanah samalatvenājñāsva-  
 bhāvatve śarīrādiyogena jñātr̥tayā vikārecābhyupagamyamāne svabhāvāntara-  
 yogādīnityatvaprasaṅga iti paramatamāśānkate.

(78Aa) VIKĀRITVĀDANITYĀŚCET

bhokteti śeṣaḥ. pariharati.

[42]

(78Ab) MĀYĀSĀDHYAM NA MANYATE

māyayā svakāryaissūkṣmabāhyaśarīradvāreṇa kriyamāṇaṁ viśeṣaṁ na  
 jānīte bhavāniti śeṣaḥ. tato nānityatvādidoṣa ityabhiprāyaḥ katham-  
 ityata āhah.

(78B) SVARŪPAVYAKTILĀBHĀCCA NA VIKĀRO NA NĀSITĀ

nāsmābhirnaiyāyikādivajjadarūpa eṣā 'tmā iṣyate. api tu jñāsvabhāva  
 eva. sa tu tasya svabhāvah śarīrādiyogaṁ vinā 'nabhivakteranādinā  
 kenā 'pi pratibaddho 'vaṣīyate. sa ca mala eveti vakṣyāmaḥ. tataśca  
 māyayā kalādibhiḥ svakāryamalavyudāse naikadeśasvarūpavyaktirevātmanah  
 kriyate. malaparipāke tu dīkṣākhyayā śivaśaktyā sarvaviṣayobhivyaḥjyate.  
 tato nāsyā vikāro vināsitā ceti. asya ca.

(79A) BHOGYOPADHĀNARĀGAŚCA SVACCHATVĀNNOKTAKĀRĀNĀT

ato bhogyaviṣayopadhānanjanito rāgo 'pi sukhaduḥkhamohākāraḥ prakāśo  
 'sya sphaṭikasyeva svacchatvātprakāśarūpatvāt. na tu pūrvoktātpari-  
 nāmākhyātkāranāt. sa ca viṣayoparāgo 'pyasya tatparatayā tadviṣayī-

LEAVES 323 TO 332 OMITTED IN  
PAGE NUMBERING.

FEUILLETS 323 A 332 NON INCLUS DANS  
LA PAGINATION.

karaṇam. evetyuktam. tato bhogyasya śarīrasyāsakṛtpariṇāme 'pi bhoktūrna  
pariṇāma ityāha. [43]

(79B-80A) ŚARĪRAPARINĀMEVA PARINĀMĪ NA PUDGALAH  
SA YATO 'CETANO BHOGYO BUDDHIMATPARINĀMATAH

tasyāpi pariṇāmābhyupagame buddhyādivadbhogyatvamacetanatvaṃ ca  
syādityarthaḥ. tatra paramatamupanyasya dūṣyati.

(80B-81A) CAITANYAM HI GUṆO JÑĀNAM SAMAVĀYO 'THA TENA VĀ  
SVARŪPAM PURUṢASYETI NĀNYADASYA NA YUKTIMAT

evam hi naiyāyikādayo manyante. jaḍasvabhāva evātmā tasya manaḥ  
saṃyogādguṇatayā jñānam samavetamutpadyate. tadeva ca tasya caitanyam  
nānyajjñāsvabhāvatvamiti. tadayuktam. jaḍatve tasya ghaṭādivatjñāna-  
samavāyāyogāditi. nanvatra niyāmakaṃ karmādrṣṭākhyamasti. yatkarma-  
samānādhikaraṇe puruṣa eva jñānam samavetamutpadyate. nānyatra tad-  
vyadhikaraṇe ghaṭādāviti. ata āha.

(81B-82A) AJÑE NARYEVA VIJÑĀNAM NĀNYATRETI NIYĀMAKAM  
KARMĀ 'PI NOPAPANNAM TU TADANYATRA STHITAM YATAH

karmanāḥ kṛṣyāderiva prakṛtisamskāratvameva nātmasamskāratvaṃ  
vikāritvapasāṅgādityuktam. tatastadapi nātra niyāmakaṃ [44]  
bhavitumarhati. tataścaitanyasamavāyāccitsvabhāva evātmāsiddhi ityāha.

(82B-83A) MOHO MOHASVABHĀVEBHYO YADVANNĀRTHĀNTARAM BUDHĀH  
CAITANYEBHYAH PADĀRTHEBHYASTADVANNĀRTHĀNTARAM CITIḤ

caitanyātmano jñānasyātmadharmatvāddharmanāśe dharmiṇo 'pi tad-  
avyatīrekānāśaḥ prasajyata iti sarvadā cetanasvabhāva evātmābhyupa-  
gantavyaḥ. tasya ca malāvṛttatvānmanobuddhyādayastadabhivyañjakatayā  
'siddhā ityuktam. asya ca bhogakriyāyāmupakāraikatayā sahakāribhūtaṃ  
prayokṭṛkaraṇarañjaka-rūpaṃ kalāvidyārāgākhyam kañcukatrayaṃ prakṛti-

sādhanaṭpaścādabhidhāsyate ityāha.

(83B-84A) PRAYOKTRKARAṆAM BHOGE RAṆJAKAM COPARI TRAYAM

ASYA BHOGAKRIYĀKARṬUHPRAKṬTERUPADEKṢYATE

ittham prasāṅgādbhoktāram prasādhya prakṛte buddherevāhaṅkārasyot-  
pattirityāha.

(84B-85A) BUDDHE SKANDHO 'PARO BHINNO YO 'HANKĀRAMAJĪJANAT

JANITĀRO GUṆĀ YENA DRṢṬĀSTATPRATIBHĀDIṢU

[45]

yena kāraṇena tasyā buddheḥ pratibhādiṣu vṛttiṣu proktena nayena  
parasparābhibhavenāśrayānmithunī bhāvācca kāryasyotpādayitāro guṇāḥ  
drṣṭāḥ. yaduktam sāṅkhyaiḥ anyonyābhibhāvāśrayānmithunapravṛttayaśca  
guṇā iti tena buddherevādhyavasāyahetoḥ skandhādanyo bhāgo guṇasamprkto  
'haṅkāramajījanat. tataśca na hyekam janakamiti nyāyenānyonyasamprktā  
eva guṇā janakāstathaiva ca sarveṣu padārtheṣu vartante. sātvikādi-  
vyavahārastu teṣām satvādibāhulyāditi bhāvaḥ. sāksādguṇakāryatvādeva  
cāsyām guṇānvayo ghaṭādiṣu mṛdakārānvayavadityāha.

(86B-86A) PRATHAMĀ VIKṬIḤ SĀTO GUṆĀNĀM TATRA YUJYATE

UDBHĀVABHIBHAVĀBHYĀM TU NIYAMENA VYAVASTHITIḤ

guṇa hi tasyām niyamena parasparābhibhave na bhavantah siddhyādi-  
janakā ityuktam. yadyevamahāṅkārasyāpi guṇānvayāḍḡguṇebhya evotpattir-  
astu ata āha.

(86B-87A) AHĀNKĀRE 'PYAYAM NYĀYA ITI MĀ JALPA PAṆḌITA

ANYONYAVIKṬITVĀTTANMĀTRASVAPYANUṢAJYATE

ahaṅkāradibhūtāntānām sarveṣāmapyanyonyavikṛtitvātproktavatparam-  
parayā guṇavikāratvānna kevalamahāṅkāra eva tanmātrasvapi api śabdād-  
'ndriyavarge bhūtavarge ca guṇānvayo 'nuṣajyata

[46]

eva. ghaṭakapālādiṣu mṛdakārānvayavat na tu sarveṣām sāksātguṇebhya

evotpattirityadoṣaḥ. atha ke te guṇāḥ kairvyāpāraśca teṣāṃ siddhir.

ityata āha.

(87B-88A) SĀTVAM RAJASTAMAŚCETI KĀRANĀNI DHIYO GUṆĀḤ  
PRAKHYĀVYĀPĀRANIYAMAIḤ PUMYOGAM YE VITENIRE

proktavadbuddhyādidvāreṇa bhāvapratyayādirūpaṃ puruṣabhogyam vastu ye  
sargādau cakrurutpāditavantaḥ adhunāpi kurvate te buddherapi kāraṇam  
guṇā iti. ete ca parasparāviyogādekameva tatvam. yacchrūyate. trayo  
guṇāstathāpyekam tatvam tadaviyogataḥ. iti. tato buddhikāraṇatayā  
prakāśavṛttinīyamākhyairvyāpāraiḥ satvādīnām siddhiḥ ete ca prādhānyāt-  
pradarśitāḥ. anyeṣāmapī sthairyadhairyādīnām śāuryakrauryādīnāmarati-  
māndyādīnām guṇakāryāṇāmāgameṣu śravanāt. nanu guṇā eva  
pradhānākhyānīyatvena sthita. iti. sāmkyāstadayuktamityāha.

(88B-89A) ACAITANYE 'PYANEKATVASAMKHYĀSAMBANDHAHETUTAḤ  
TEṢĀM KĀRANĀPŪRVATVAMIṢṬĀM BUDDHIGHATĀDIVAT

yata eṣāmanekatvasamkhyāsambandhādānekatvam tato 'nekatvād- [47]  
acetanatvācca ghaṭādivatkāryatvasiddhiḥ. kim teṣāṃupādānamityata āha.

(89B-90A) UPĀDĀNAM GUṆĀNĀM YATPRAKṚTIḤ SĀBHIDHĪYATE  
AVIBHĀGASTHITĀYASYĀM NIRGACCHANTI ŚIVERITAḤ

yasyām sūkṣmatvenāvibhāgena sthitā guṇāḥ śīvaprerāṇena svasva-  
pravṛttivibhāgaiḥ sthūlāḥ abhivyajyante sā prakṛtiḥ śīveritā iti ca  
acetanatvānnāsyā svātantryeṇa pravṛttiriti darśayati. asyāśca prati-  
puruṣam sūkṣmadehavartitvenānekatvātkāryatvamiti vakṣyāmaḥ. atha  
puruṣasya kalādīpañcakañcukayuktasya bhokṛtvena puṃstvamalayogāddīkṣāyām  
tacchuddhyartham prakṛtitattvādūrdhvamāgameṣu pathe satyapi  
tasya vyāpakatvāccetanatvena bhokṛtvāccādḥvarūpatvam bhogasādhanatvam ca  
na sambhavatīti tamupekṣya tasyaiva rañjakatvena prāguktaṃ rāgatatvam

sādhayitumāha.

(90B-91A) BHOGYĀNUBHAVAMĀSĀDYA BHOGYE SAKTIḤ PRAVARTATE  
TATSIDDHYARTHAM TATASTASYA RĀGO BHOGĀNURĀÑJAKAḤ

iha hi saṃsārāvasthāyām puruṣasya bhogyam dr̥ṣṭvā tasmīnsaktiḥ  
pravartate. sā ca nāheturutpadyate. muktyavasthāyāmapi prasaṅgāt.-

atastasya puṃsastasyāḥ sakteḥ siddhyartham bhogābhilāṣa- [48]  
janako rāgo 'bhyupagantavyaḥ. atra parābhiprāyaḥ.

(91B-92A) SATVAM RAJASTAMO YUKTAM VIṢAYEṢVANURĀÑJAKAM  
BUDDHĀVABHYUDITAM PUṢSASTASMĀDANYO NIRARTHAKAḤ

pariharati.

(92B-93A) TANMATĀVUDITAM BHOGYAM TASMINYO 'SYĀNURĀÑJAKAḤ  
SA RĀGO 'NYAḤ PRAMANTAVYO RŪPE 'PYETADDHI DŪṢANAM

sātvikādibhogasādhanaviṣayākārādhyavasāyadvāreṇa buddhāvuditasya  
sukhaduḥkhamoharūpeṇa pariṇatasya satvādiguṇatrayasyaiva sā bhogya-

tvāttasminnapi bhogye yaḥ puṃso 'bhilāṣajanakasya tasmādviṣaya-  
guṇadirūpeṇa buddhāvuditātsatvādiguṇatrayādbhogyarūpādanyo grāhakagato  
rāgo mantavyaḥ. bhogyasyaivā 'bhilāṣajanakatve vītarāgabhāvaprasaṅga

iti bhāvaḥ. tad uktam tatvasaṃgrahe bhogyaviśeṣe rāgena hi kaścid-  
vītarāgassyāditi. yadyevamavairāgyalakṣaṇo buddhidharma eva rāgo

'stvata aha. rūpepyetaddhi dūṣanamiti. ayamabhiprāyaḥ. avairāgya-

lakṣaṇasya rūpasya tāvadvāsanārūpatvāna kāryakarātvaṃ. vāsanāvasthāyām-  
api kāryakarātve buddheranantavāsanāyogena puṃso yugapadviruddhā 'nanta-

pratipattivaiśasaprasaṅgāt. [49]

pratyayātmanā sthūlarūpeṇa bhogyadaśamāpannena tasmin rāge 'bhyupa-  
gamyamāne 'pi prāgvadvītarāgabhāvaprasaṅga iti tayoranyo rāgo 'bhyupa-  
gantavya iti karmaiva rāñjakamastviti cenna. tasyā kṛsyādivatphala-



janana eva caritārthatvātkāryāntarahetutve pramāṇābhāvādanekatatva-  
parikalpanābhāvaprasaṅgācca atha vidyāsiddhiḥ.

(93B-94A) KARANAM NA VINĀ KARTUḤ KRṬIḤ KARMAṆI DRŚYATE  
ATO 'STI KARANAM VIDYĀ BUDDHIBODHAVIVECINĪ

proktavadindriyānām viṣayopasthāpakatvenopayogāt. tasmin buddhi-  
bodhākhye karmaṇi grāhye grahanakriyānām pumsaḥ kena 'pi karanena  
bhavitavyam. yattatkaranam sā vidyeti.

(94B-95A) PRADĪPAVANMATIŚTASYA SVAPARĀTMAPRAKĀŚIKĀ  
VIDYATE KARANAM PUṂSO VIDYAYĀ KĪNKARISYATI

buddheḥ prakāśarūpatvātpradīpavadviṣayākāram svātmānamapi pra-  
kāśayatīti na karaṇāntarasiddhiḥ pariharati.

(95B-96A) PRADĪPAḤ KARANAM PUṂSASSTAMBHĀDYARTHOPALABDHIṢU  
DĪPOPALABDHAU CAKṢUŚCA BUDDHĀVAPYEVAMIŚYATĀM

buddherapi grāhyatvena karmatvātkaraṇāpekṣā 'stīti uktam iti [50]  
bhāvaḥ uktam ca tatvasaṅgrahe 'ravivatprakāśarūpo yandinām mahāmstathā  
'pi karmatvāt. karaṇāntarasāpekṣāśakto grāhayitumātmanam iti. etad  
eva darśayati.

(96B-97A) TRAIGUṆYĀTSA VIVEKENA ŚAKTĀ DARŚAYITUM NA HI  
VIṢAYĀKĀRAMĀTMĀNAMAVIVIKTĀ YATASSVAYAM

(97B-98A) VIDYĀ GUṆAPARĀ VEDYAM VIVIKTĀTO VIVEKATAḤ  
ŚAKTĀ DARŚAYITUM PUṂSO NĀ 'TRA KĀRYO 'TIMATSARAH

buddhestriguṇātmakatvena bhogyākāravivekātkarmatayā na svātma-  
prakāśakatvam pradīpādivat. vidyā tu tadatītatvena bhogyākārādviviktā  
satī puṃso vedyam karaṇāntaranirapekṣā prakāśayatyeveti. atha kalāyā  
vyāpāraḥ kathyate.

(98B-99A) KARMĀDIKĀRAKĀNĪKAPRAYOKTĀ BHOGASIDDHAYE

SVATANTRAḤ PURUṢAḤ KARTĀ KALĀ TASYA PRAYOJIKĀ

bhokṛtvēna bhogārtham buddhyādikāra-kavrataprayokṛtvātkartā  
puruṣa ityuktam. pravṛttau ca nivṛttau ca kāra-kāṇām ya Īśvaraḥ.  
apavṛttaḥ pravṛttau vā sa kartā nāma kāra-kaḥ iti. tasya ca bhoga-  
kriyāyām vakṣyamānavatsāmartyopodbalena prayojika kalā- [51]  
śāstreṣūcyate. nanu akartaiva puruṣa iti sāṅkhyāḥ. tadayuktam ityāha.

(99B-100A) AKARṬṚTVĀ 'BHYUPAGAME BHOKṬṚŚABDO NIRARTHAKAḤ  
UPĀDĀNAPRAVṚTTESĀ NIṢPHALATVAM PRASAJYATE

bhogasyā 'pi kriyātvādbhokṛtvēnaiva puṃsaḥ karṭṛtvam siddhyati.  
tasminnakartaryabhyupagamyamāne tadbhogārtham pradhānasyā 'pi pravṛttir-  
niṣphalā syāt. akartari karaṇādisambandhasya nirarthakatvāt. kim ca. ✓

(100B-101A) KARṬṚMĀTKARMADEVĀDI KRIYĀSĀDHANABHĀVATAḤ

VĀSYĀDIVADATAḤ KARTĀ PARIJÑEYO VIBHUḤ PUMĀN

avibhutve hyātmano gaganādivadamūrtātvaddeśāntaranayanā 'saṃbhavena  
dākṣiṇātyadeḥ kaśmīrādau dr̥śyamānaḥ deśāntaraphala bhogo 'nupapannaḥ  
iti tadanyathā. 'nupatattya 'tma vyāpako 'bhyupagantavyah. iti. uktam ca  
śrīmatparākhyaḍau karṭṛśaktim vyanaktyasya kalāsyātaḥ prayojikā. tataḥ  
kalā samāyukto bhoge 'nuḥ karṭṛkāra-ka iti. āsya kartuḥ puṃsaḥ karṭṛ-  
śaktiśśākterekatvātjñānakriyāśaktirvakṣyamānavat malāvṛtatvenārtheṣu  
nā pravartate iti pradīpavatprakāśarūpā kalaikadeśe [52]  
malavidāraṇena tāmbhivyanakti prakāśayati tatassā prayojikā hetuḥ  
karṭṛī bhanyate. sa cānuḥ puruṣastaya 'tyantāvivekena bhāsamāno bhoga-  
kriyāyā karṭṛkāra-kamucyate. sa hi bhokṛtvātkartā kalā tu tat-  
prayojikātvātkāra-kamiti. tadyuktam śrīmanmṛgendre ityetadubhayam  
viprāsaṃbhūyānanyavatsthitam bhogakriyāvidhau jantornirjaguḥ karṭṛ-  
kāra-kamiti. anyathā hi.

- (101B-102A) VYAKTIKARTRANAPEKṢASYA KARTṚBHĀVE SAMĪHITE  
 ĀTMANAḤ PRĀKKALĀYOGĀTPRASAKTĀ SARVAKARTṚTĀ  
 (102B-103A) SARVAKARTṚTVASAMBANDHĀTSARVAJÑAḤ PARAMEŚAVAT  
 SARVAJÑĀTVĀDAYUKTĀSYA SVĀTMADUḤKHĀYA KARTṚTĀ

ātmano hi nirmalatvena kalānapekṣasyaiva kartṛtve 'bhyupagamyamāne  
 śivavatkalādipāśātmakaśarīrasambandhaṃ vinaiva sarvakartṛtvam ajñātasya  
 karaṇāsambhavana sarvajñatvam ca bhavet. niravāraṇatvena śivenā '  
 'nadhiṣṭhitasya svatantrasyā 'sya svātmana eva duḥkhāya śarīrādikartṛtvam  
 na yujyate. ato 'sya sukhotpādādau pāratantryadarśanāt baddhatvam  
 samalatvam ca niścīyate. tata eva cā 'syāsarvakartṛtvam asarvajñatvam  
 ca samsārāvasthāyām drśyate. [53]

tato malāvṛtatvādasya bhoge viṣaye kimcitjñatvakartṛtvayorapi  
 kalānugrahāpekṣā siddhetyāha.

- (103B-104A) NA CĀSYA SARVAKARTṚTVAM BADDHATVĀDGOVRSĀDIVAT  
 KALĀNUGRAHASĀPEKṢA BHOGE TENĀ 'SYA KARTṚTĀ

ittham kalām prasāddhya tasyā eva vidyārāgāvyaktānāmudbhava ityāha.

- (104B-105A) SKANDHO 'PARAḤ KALĀYĀSTU YASMĀDETĀḤ PRAJAJÑIRE  
 VIDYĀRĀGAPRAKṚTAYO YUGMĀYUGMAKRAMENA TU

yugmakrameṇa rāgavidye sahaiva jāyete. avyaktam tu pṛthagayugma-  
 kramenetyarthah. uktam ca śrīmadraurave kalātattvādrāgavidye dve tatve  
 sambabhūvatuh. avyaktam ca iti. atra karmaphalabhogasya kalā '  
 'vacchedam bhokṛtniyamam ca vinā 'nutpatteḥ kālaniyatyākhyam. tatva-  
 dvayamagāmeṣu śrūyamāṇam arthasiddhatvādācāryeṇā 'nupattam. tathāhi  
 kṛṣyādivatkarmaphalānām rājaniyamā 'bhāve dasyubhirapahāradarśanāt.  
 jyotiṣṭomādikarmaphalānāmapi bhokṛṣṭpratinīyamakena kenā 'pi bhāvyaṃ  
 tanniyāmakatvena niyatissidhā. karmaṇo niyāmakatvamastīti cettanna.

tasya phalajanana eva caritārthatvādityuktam. Īśvaraśakterapi

tatvāntara-

[54]

vyavadhānenaiva bhogaviṣaye kāryakaravtam. anyathā sarvatatvābhāva-  
prasaṅgāt. kiṁ ca cirakṣiprādipratyayadvārena ciram bhunkte ityādi-  
bhogyādyavacchedakatvena kālassiddhaḥ. sa ca naiyāyikādyabhyupagatavan-  
nityo bhavitumarhati. bhūtādirūpatvenānekatvādetanatvācca. taduktam  
śrīmanmrgendre truṭyadipratyayasyārthaḥ kālo māyāsamudbhavaḥ. kalayan-  
nāsamutthānānnyatyā niyatam paśum iti. ittham sukṣmadehātmikām tatva-  
samhatimuktavā tasyāḥ pratipuruṣam niyatatvamāha.

(105B-106A) VASUDHĀDIKALĀPRĀNTĀ BHOGASĀDHANASAMHATIḤ

NIYATĀ PRATIBHOTĀRĀM PARIJÑEYĀ MANIṢIBHIḤ

taduktam tatvasamgrahe. vasudhādyastatvaguṇaḥ pratipumnyataḥ  
kalānto 'yam. paryaṭati karmavaśato bhuvanajadeheṣṭvayam ca sarveṣu  
iti. ekatve sukṣmadehasya sarveṣāṃ dṛśyamānabhogabhedo ha yukta ityaha.

(106B) ANYATHĀ HI SUKHĀDINĀM DRṢṬO BHEDO NA YUJYATE

nanvekatve 'pi sūkṣmadehasya karmabhedādeva tatphalābhogabhedo  
bhaviṣyatīti cettadayuktamityāha.

[55]

(107A) YOKSYATE KARMAÑO BHEDĀTTADBHEDO YADI YOKSYATE

karmabhedādeva bhogabhedassiddhyati. siddhe ca bhogabhede karma-  
bhedo 'numīyate iti itaretarāśrayadoṣaḥ prasakta ityārthaḥ. nanu kartrbheda  
eva siddhaḥ karmabhedāḥ karmabhedācca bhogabheda itī nānyonyāśrayadoṣa ita āha

(107B-108A) SAMBANDHĀDYUGAPATSĀ TU KURVANTĪ KARMAKARTRBHIḤ

KATHAM BHINNĀNI KARMĀNI KARTRBHEDĀTKARIṢYATI

malāvṛtatvenā 'tmanām kalādisūkṣmadehādisambandham vinā karma-  
kartrtvā 'nupapatteḥ. yugapatsarvakartṛsambandhena karma kurvānā  
sā sūkṣmadeharūpa tatvasamhatirekarūpa katham bhinnāni vicitrāṇi karmāni

karoti naivetyarthaḥ. nanu pratipurusaṃ cikīrṣābhedaṅkarmabheda iti  
cettanna. cikīrṣāyāśca sūkṣmadehasambandhādevotpatteḥ. tasyāścaikatvāc-  
cikīrṣābhedo 'pyanupapanna iti paridrśyamānabhogabhedānyathā 'nupapattyā  
pratipurusaṃ sūkṣmadehabhedo 'vaśyamabhyupagantavyaḥ. nanu ātmabhede  
hi sūkṣmadehabhedo yuktaḥ. sa eva tāvadeka iti vedāntavidastatrā 'ha.

(108B)                   ĀTMANĀMAPYANEKATVAMATA EVA PRATĪYATE                   [56]

ekatve hyatmanassukhaduḥkhādivaicitryaṃ janmamarāṇavaicitryaṃ cā  
'nupapannamiti bhogavaicitryādeva 'tmanānātvāsiddhiḥ. eṣa cādvaita-  
nirāso 'smābhirmṛgendravṛttidīpikāyāṃ vistareṇa darśitaḥ. atha kimiyāṃ  
sūkṣmadeharūpā tatvasaṃhatirātmavadvyāpikā. āhosvidavyāpiketyata āha.

(109A)                   TASYĀŚCĀVIBHŪTĀ SIDDHĀ YUGAPADVṚTTYASAMBHAVĀT

jñānakriyābhivyaktīlakṣaṇasya tatkāryasya sarvatra yugapadanutpatteḥ  
tasyāścāvyaṅkatvasiddhiḥ. nanu yatra sahakāriṇā karmaṇā phalārambheṇa  
nirdeśo bhavati tatraivāsāvātmanaścaitanyaḥbhivyaktaye vikṣobhamabhi-  
vyañjanarūpāṃ karotīti tasmādevāsyāssarvatra yugapatkāryānutpattir-  
nāvyaṅkatvāditi cet. tadapyayuktaṃ tasyaḥ kāryatvenā 'nityatvātghaṭādi-  
vatvyāpakatva                   'siddherityabhiprāyenāha.

(109B-110A)           KARMANIRDEŚAVIKṢOBHAKARĀṆATVAM CA NOTTARAM  
YUGAPADVṚTYANUTPATTESSARVATRA VIBHUTAIVA NA

atha kimiyamekadeśe caitanyaḥbhivyaktīssūkṣmadehavyañjakasyā  
'vibhutvāt uta vyaṅgyasyā 'tmana ityata āha.

(110B-111A)           VIKĀRITVĀDIDHARMYĀTMĀ VIRODHAŚCA ŚRUTERAṆAU  
AVIBHĀU YUGAPACCITVAVYAKTĪKĀLEPYANURVIBHUH                   [57]

yadyavyāpaka ātmā syāt tadā deśāntaraphalopabhogopyananupapanna  
ityuktaṃ. kim ca tasya muktyavasthāyāṃ śivavatsarvajñatvasarvakarṭ-  
katvaśravaṇāt vyāpakatvamavaśyamabhyupeyam. atha saṃsārāvasthāyāṃ-

avyāpakatvam muktyavasthāyām ca vyāpakatvam tasyeṣyate tadā pari-  
 nāmitvācetanatvādidoṣaprasaṅgaḥ tato nityatvavyāpakatvādiśrutervirodhaḥ.  
 taduktām śrīmanmṛgendre caityanyām dr̥kkriyārūpām tadastyātmani sarvadā  
 sarvataśca yato muktau śrūyate sarvatomukham. iti. nāvyāpakao na kṣaniko  
 naiko nāpi jaḍātmaka iti ca. ittham sūkṣmadehātmikāmasādharaṇatatva-  
 sṛṣṭimuktivā bhūvanātmikām sādharāṇatatvasṛṣṭimāha.

(111B) TATVĀNĀMAPARE SKANDHĀ BHOGINO RATIBHŪMAYAH

sūkṣmadeharūpādbhogādanye vicitrabhuvanādyākārāstatvānām bhogās-  
 saṃsāriṇaḥ bhogasthānānanītyarthaḥ. ataśca.

(112A) TAJJADEHAPRAVIṢṬA SĀ TEṢĀM TĀSU PHALĀVAHĀ

sūkṣmadehātmikā tatvasam̐hatirācārāpekṣayā tāsu bhogabhūmiṣu karma-  
 vaśāttattadbhuvanajadeheṣu praviṣṭā satī puruṣasyaikadeśena jñānakriyā-  
 sāmārthyam̐sābhivyāñjikā bhavati. taduktām tatvaśaṅgrāhe [58]  
 paryaṭati karmavaśato bhuvanajadeheṣvayam̐ ca sarveṣū iti. śrīmanmṛgendre  
 'pi. ityātivāhikamidam̐ vapurasya jantościtsaṅgacidgahanagarbhavivarti-  
 leśāt. naitavatalamiti bhuvanatatvapanktimacaradehavisaya 'bhyudayaya  
 vakṣye. iti. tāmeva bhuvanaśṛṣṭim̐ sam̐kṣepeṇa darsāyati.

(112B-113A) NIRAYĀDISTU SATYĀNTĀ KĀLAHĀṬAKADEŚIKAIḤ

ĀDIMADHYĀNTASAM̐RUDDHĀ BHŪTESU STHĀNAPADDHATIḤ

tatra kalaḥ kālāgniḥ hāṭakaḥ pātālādhipatiḥ. deśikaḥ samasta-  
 śāstropadeśakatvāllokācāryassatyalokordhvasthitasya viṣṇulokasyāpyupari  
 vartate. rudraloke vartamāno 'nantaśiṣyaḥ śrīkaṇṭhastasyaiva  
 brahmāṇḍāntaradhikārāttaiḥ kālāhāṭakadeśikaissvasvabhuvanavartiṣvādi-  
 madhyāntesvadhīṣṭhitā narakapātālābhūrādilokātmikā bhuvanapaddhatis-  
 sthūleṣu brahmāṇḍāntarvartiṣu sthitā tataśca.

(113B-114Ba) ŚĀTARUDRAVIBHUŚCĀPI SAHAPAÑCABHIRAṢṬAKAIḤ

MĀTRĀSAMBHŪTABHŪTESU PROKTABHŪTAVIDHĀTRṢU  
TANMĀTRĀ CITTAVARGEṢU

tatra śatarudrānām brahmāṇḍadhāraḱānāmadhīsthātā vīrabhadraḥ  
pṛthivītatve prāguktasthūlapṛthivīkaraṇabhute tanmātrā 'janye [59]  
sūkṣmapṛthivītatve sthitāḥ. tathā sthūlajalādīkaraṇābhūte tanmātrājanye  
eva sūkṣmajalādībhūtacatuṣṭaye cittavargaśabdenāntaḥkaraṇānāmupādāhāt  
tanmātrādyahaṅkārānte cā 'dhvanīguhyātīguhyaguhyatarapavitrasthāṇvākhyāni  
pañcāṣṭakāni bhuvanānām sthitāni. tad uktam śrīmannandikeśvarakārikāsu  
brahmā sthūlāni gataḥ sūkṣmādīnyādhāradehabhogyārtham. rudraśatam  
kṣetrabhuvām catvāriṃ śacca sūkṣmabhūtāni. tanmātrā mano 'haṅkṛti-  
buddhirdeva guṇāmstu yogivarāḥ. vāmādyā guṇasāram krodhāḥ prakṛtiṃ  
kalāttu maṇḍalina iti ata evā 'ha.

(114Bb-116B) BUDDHAU CA KRAMAŚO NYASET  
PAIŚĀCĀDYAṢṬAKAM VIDVĀN GUṆATATVE KṚTĀDIKAM  
APRĀPTAGUṆABHAVE TU VISŪDDHE GUṆAMASTAKE  
VIKĀRE PRĀKṚTE LĪNĀ VĀMĀDĪSTHĀNAMĀLIKĀ  
KRODHEŚVARARUDRĀNĀM PURAPĀNKTIḤ PRADHĀNAGĀ

vāmādevādayastrayodaśa rudrāḥ krodheśādībhiraṣṭabhissahā pradhānā  
'dhipairguṇamastakabhuvaneṣu sthitāḥ. prakṛtessūkṣmarūpatvādbhuvanā  
'dhāratvā 'yogāt. ityāgamavidāḥ tathā.

(117A) MAṆḌALĀNI TU VĀMĀṢṬAU KALĀTATVE STHITĀNI TU [60]

rāgavidyāśahite kalātatveṣṭāṣṭakramenāṣṭau bhuvanānām maṇḍalāni  
sthitāni. taduktam śrīmanmṛgendre rāgavidyāgarbhe kalāpade mahāpura-  
catuṣṣaṣṭhimaṇḍale maṇḍaladhipā iti. kālanīyatyośca bhuvanadvayam  
tatraivoktam niyatau sthito niyataḥ kāle kalanaśaktimān. iti. eṣa ca  
bhuvanādhvā paddhatyādiṣu bahuśo drśyata iti nātra vistareṇa pradarsītaḥ.

tesu cā 'vāntarabhuvanasamkhyābhedaḥ keṣucitkeṣām cidantarbhāvādity-  
avirodhaḥ. ittham bhuvanātmikāmapi tatvasrṣṭimuktivā proktasya kalādi-  
rūpasya jagataḥ paramopādānam māyām sādhayati.

(117B-118A) JAGADBĪJAM MAHĀMĀYĀ JANYAŚAKTIRACETANĀ

TASYĀH KALĀDISAMBHŪTIRBHOGINĀM BHOGABHŪTAYE

mahatīcāsāvanekasrotorūpasvakāryavyāptermāyā ca mātyāsyām pralāye  
sarvamaśuddham jagaditi māyā. sā ca jagadbījam jagataḥ kalādirūpasya  
pratipurūṣam bhedenā 'nekatvādbhuvanā 'dhāratvācca kāryarūpasya  
sarvasya sāḁṣātparamparayā copādānam. ata eva janyaśaktissūkṣmarūpa-  
svakāryaśaktisamāhārā 'tmikā satkāryavādā 'bhyupagamena sarvakāryāṇām  
śaktirupeṇa tatrā 'vaṣṭhānādupādānatvādeva mṛdādivadacetanatā ca tatas-  
tasyāḥ kalādirūpa-

[61]

sādhanasambhūtirityuktam. śaktisamāhārātmakatāmevā 'syāḥ prakāṣayati.

(118B-119A) ANEKĀBHIRVICITRĀBHIŚSAKTIBHIŚSAKTIMATYASAU

VICITRĀ 'NANTAKĀRYĀṆĀM DARŚANĀTSAMPRAṬĪYATE

vicitrā 'nantakāryotpattidarśanādvicitrānantakāryaśaktisamāhārātmikā  
'sau jñāyate. nanvasya evā 'nekakāryajanikā 'nekāśśaktayaḥ kalpyāḥ  
tasyāssvayam śaktirūpatvācchakteśca śaktyantarakalpanā 'nupapatteḥ  
paramakāraṇatvādeva 'syā nityatvam anyathānavasthāprasangādityabhi-  
prāyeṇā 'ha.

(119B-120A) ACIDVATĀMANEKATVĀDVINĀSĪTVAM SUNIŚCITAM

NĀ 'NEKĀ SĀTVATO NITYĀ MĀYĀ YADYAPYĀCETANA

kim ca.

(120B-121A) VYĀPINĪ PURUṢĀ 'NANTYĀDBHOGĀYA KURUTE YATAḥ

SARVAKĀRYĀṆĪ SARVATRA STROTOBHIRVIŚVADHĀMABHIH

taduktam bṛhaspatipādaḥ api sarvasiddhavācaḥ kṣīyerandīrghakālam-



udgīrṇāḥ. māyāyāmānāntyānnocyate srotasām saṅkhyā. iti eṣā ca kṣīra-  
dadhinyāyena na sarvātmanān pariṇāmameti kiṃ tu ghṛtakīṭanyāyena eka-  
deśeneti mantavyam. [62]

(121B-122A) SARGASTHITILAYĀSTASYĀSSVĀTMASAMSTHĀḤ PRAKĪRTITAḤ  
SVĀTMASAMSTHĀM VIKĀRASYA TATVĀDIBHUVANĀ 'VADHEH

evam paramopādānatvānmāyāsthā eva jagatassargādayaḥ bhuvanādeśca  
vikārasya tatvādisvarūpaṃ svātmasaṃstamiti tatvabhāvabhūtabhuvanātmakam  
ca samastam jagadvikārasthameva jñeyam. nanu śuddharūpamapi tatvādikam  
tadupādānam ca bindusamjñamāgameṣu śrūyate. satyam. tatprāpter-  
vidyeśvarādipadaprāptirūpatvenā 'paramuktitvāna 'trā 'sya bhoga-  
sādhanaṭayopādānamityavirodhaḥ. atra ca.

(122B) SARGASTHITĪSAMĀKHYĀTE LAYASSARGAVIPARYAYĀT

pratitatvamutpattikramakathanena vyāpārāpradarśanena ca sarga-  
sthitī prokte. layastu sargaḥprātilomyena svasvakāraṇeṣūpasamhara ity-  
arthah. etcca.

(123A) BHAVASYĀNĀDIMATVĀCCA SARGĀDIGUṆANĀCYUTAM

anādirayam saṃsāra ityārthaḥ. nanu bhogasādhanaṭvādātmanām yukte  
sargasthitī. layastu kimarthamīśvareṇa kriyate. atram vadāmaḥ an-  
avaratamanantapurūṣabhogajananopacitaśaktermāyāyāssukumāravanitāyā iva  
svāpena sāmartyopodbalanārthamātmanām [63]

viśramārtham ca karmapākārtham ca saṃhāra ityadoṣaḥ. taduktam śrīmaṃ-  
mṛgendre tacca sātmacamākramya viśramāyā 'vatiṣṭhate. bhavinām bhava  
khinnānām sarvabhūtaḥ hito yataḥ. svāpe vyāste bodhayan bodhayogyān  
rodhyān rundhan pacyan karmikarma. māyāśaktirvyaktiyogyāḥ prakurvān  
paśyan sarvam yadyathāvastujātam iti. itthamātmanāḥ pratipāditaṃ  
sasādhanaṃ bhogamupasaṃhartum tasyaiva malātmakam pāśamupakṣeptum caḥa.

(123B-124A) PUMSĀM MĀYĀMAYAM BHOGYĀM MĀYOTTHAIREVA SĀDHANAĪH  
YATO BHOKTĀ VIŚUDDHĀTMĀ CETANASTANNA. CETANAM

uktavatsūkhādirūpam buddhibodhātmakam bhogyam māyākāryameva na  
tvātmani guṇatvena samavaiti. cetanatvāt. tatsamavāye puruṣasya  
pariṇāmādidōṣapraṅgācca. tasya ca cetanaḥ puruṣa eva bhoktetyuktam.  
sa ca vakṣyamānavadaviśuddhatvādāvṛtajñānakriyātvānmayotthaiḥ kalādibhis-  
tatvairupabṛmhita eva tadbhoktum śaknoti. kāryakāraṇam vinā kimcit-  
jñātvāderapyadarśanāt. atha kuto 'yamaviśuddhātmā 'ta āha.

(124B) VIŚAYITVAMALACCHANNASARVAJÑĀNAKRIYO YATAḤ

yato 'yamātmā śivavatsarvajñānakriyāyukto 'pi kimcidviśaye  
vijñānādaḥ kalādikamapekṣate. yataśca muktasyā 'bhoktṛtvam [64]  
sarvaviśayajñānādiyuktatvam śrūyate tato 'yam visayitvākhyā bhoktṛtvasya  
hetvādviśayitvākhyena malenāvṛto 'vasīyate. yacchrūyate bhoktṛtvam  
malataḥ proktam iti ata evā 'yamaviśuddhaḥ taduktam śrīmatśvāyambhuve.  
yadyaśuddhirna puṃso 'sti saktirbhogeṣu kimkṛte 'ti. ataśca.

(125A) BĪJASTHAKARMARĀGENA MĀYĀMEŚO 'NUDHĀVATI

karmaṇaḥ kṛṣyādivadātmasaṃskāratvā 'yogāt. bhāvasthāyām buddhi-  
gatena praḷaye naṣṭabuddherapi māyātmani jagadbīje pratisamcarārāttat-  
sthena paripākavaśādbhogajanakena karmātmanā rāgeṇa mārgeṇa māyām  
bhogasāadhanādirūpeṇa pariṇatāmeṣapumanānuserati. atra paraḥ.

(125B-126A) BHAVĀNTARAKṚTAM KARMA JĀTYĀDIPHALADAM NRṆĀM  
AŚUDDHIḤ KALPITĀPUMSASTASMIN SATYATIRICYATE

anāditvena bījāṅkuranyāyena kāryaśarīrabandhasyāvasthiterjātyāyur-  
bhogapradāni karmāṇyeva svaphalabhogārthamātmanaśśarīrayogam kurvantu.  
kim malena bhavatā 'pi hitam malam kalpyitvā bhogavaicitryānyathānupa-  
pattiyā karmā 'pi kalpyate tataḥ [65]

kalpanāgauravaprasaṅgāt karmaiva kalpyatām yadāhuḥ kalpyam punar=  
nirupaddhi kalpanāmiti. atra parihārah.

(126B-127A) JANMĀDIJANIKĀ ŚAKTIH KARMAÑO NA MALĀM VINĀ  
ANURAJNĀNARAHITAḤ KVACIJJĀTO NA DRŚYATE

. ajñānahetunā malena rahitasya muktātmano janmādarśanāt  
karmānuṣṭhānādarśanācca malayuktasyaiva karmārjanam tadbhogo vā upa-  
yujyate. yadyeva malasyaiva janmādihetutvamastu kim karmaneti  
codayati.

(127B-128A) VIŚAYITVAM HI TASYAIKAMASTU KIM TENA KARMAṆĀ  
YATO JANMĀDISAMBANDHAMANUSAMPRĀPNUYĀDDHRUVAM  
pariharati.

(128B-129A) SANTI KEVALINO JÑĀNAGRASTĀḤ KARMAVINĀKṚTAḤ  
NA CA JANMĀDISAMVANDHO DVAYAM TENEHA KĀRAṆAM

vijñānakevalīnām malāvṛtānāmapi karmarahitānām janmādyadarśanat  
dvayamapi māyāyoge heturityarthah. nanu śrṣṭeḥ prākṇiṣkalatvāc-  
cetanatvāccātmanaśśivavadajñatvam na yujyate iti prāsāṅkām nirasyati.[66]

(129B-130A) PRĀKSRṢṬERNIṢKALO JANTURDRKKRIYĀGUNA VĀNYATAḤ  
TATAŚCĀJÑĀNASAMBANDHO NĀYAMITYANRTAM VACAḤ

yadyevam śivavadeva kalāśambandho 'pyasya na yujyate tataśca  
kalāśambhandā 'nyathā 'nupapattyā tasya malo 'bhyupagantavya. ityarthah.  
etadevāha.

(130B-131A) DRKKRIYE SARVAVIŚAYE SARVAGATVĀDANORMATE  
SARVAJÑĀḤ SARVAKṚTTASMĀTSUTRPTĀḤ KĀRAṆAM VINĀ

na caitadevam kiñcajjñātavadāvapi kalādyapekṣitvādityāha.

(131B) KALĀDIVYĀÑJAKĀBHĀVĀNNAVYAKTE TASYA DRKKRIYE

na caitadanāvaranasya yujyate ityāha.

(132A) NA HYANĀVARANAM TEJO BHĀNORVYĀÑJAKAMĪKṢATE  
ataśca.

(132B) ANĀDYANĀDISAMBANDHO MALAḤ SĀDHĀRAṆO 'KṢAYAḤ  
anādiścāsāvātmanām anādisambandhaścānādyāvāraḥ sarvapuruṣānām-  
eka eva. ata eva nityaśca malo 'bhyupagantavyaḥ. yadyevam mālaya  
nityatvātkadācidapyātmaḥ na nivṛttiḥ. nivṛttau va tasyaikatvād-  
ekapuruṣamokṣakāle sarvamokṣaprasaṅgo 'ta āha. [67]

(133A) PRATIPUMNIYATAḤ SVASVAKĀLAVYĀVṚTTAŚAKTIKAḤ  
mālaya pratyātmaniyatānantaśaktiyuktatvādekasyaḥ śakteḥ pari-  
nāmavaśānnirodhe kṛte tasyaiva mokṣo nānyasya yacchrūyate pratyātma-  
sthasvakālāntopādhiśaktiśamūhavaditi. nanu prākṛta eva viparyayarūpo  
mahāmohākhyo malo 'stu tasyāstata eva vyañjakāpekṣā karmānuṣṭhānam  
copapadyate. ata āha.

(133B-134A) MAHĀMOHADBHAVĀTPŪRVAMANUREṢA NIRĀÑJANAḤ  
NA ŚAKYOJJHAYITUM TENĀSAMVṚTTAḤ SARVAVATSVAYAM

mahāmohasya kalādisambandhottarakālabhāvitvātpṛathamataḥ  
sargārambhe bhavatpakṣe nirmalatvena śivavadanāvṛtaḥ pumāmstena prākṛta-  
malenajhayitum na śakyate. ato 'nādinā malenātmano 'nādisambandho  
'bhyupagantavyaḥ. anyathā tu.

(134B-135A) ĀDIMĀNYADI SAMBANDHA IṢṬAḤ PUMMALAYORBUDHĀH  
TASYĀPI KĀRNAM VĀCYAMITI NĀSTI VYAVASTHITIḤ

(135B-136A) ATHA NIRHETUKO YOGAḤ KALĀYOGO 'PYAHETUKAḤ  
ANIRMOKṢAŚCA JANTŪNĀMĪŚĀBHĀVAŚCA JĀYATE

nirhetukasya pāśasamsargasyābhyupagame śarīrādiyogasyā 'pi nir-  
hetukatvānmuktasyāpi punassamsārayogādānirmokṣaḥ. [68]

sivasya 'pi pāśasaṃsārgādanīśvaratvam prasajyate. ato 'nādireva mala-  
sambandhaḥ paśossamśāraheturabhyupeyaḥ. evaṃ malasyā 'sādhāraṇatve  
pratipuruṣamanekatve 'bhyupagamyamāne jaḍatve satyanekatvādghāṭādivad-  
anityatvaprasaṅgaḥ. tataścānāditvābhāvātprāgukto 'nava sthānānir-  
mokṣādidoṣassyādityāha.

(135B-137A) ASĀMĀNYO YADIBHAVEDACAITANYETVANEKATAḤ  
UTPĀDAVĀNVINĀŚĪ CA TATAḤ PŪRVOKTADOṢABHAK

anāditvādeva cāsya nāntavatvam tadyoge vā sarvānityatvaprasaṅga  
ityāha.

(137B-138A) ANĀDYANĀDISAMBANDHO YADI CEṢṬO VINĀŚVARAḤ  
MĀYĀŚIVĀTMAVASTŪNĀMAJĀNĀM NĀŚA IṢYATĀM

ittham prakṛatijñātam malasyānāditvam sādhāraṇatvamakṣayatvam ca  
prasādhyānantaśaktiyuktatvamapi sādhayati.

(138B) PRATIPUMNIYATĀŚCĀSYA ŚAKTAYO GUṆARODHIKĀḤ

ātmagunasya jñānakriyātmano rodhikāḥ. etacca prāgeva darśitam.  
paridṛśyamānabhogavaicitryānyathā 'nupapattyā tāsām malaśaktīnām  
pariṇāmakāle vaicitryam siddhamityāha.

(139A-140A) NA KĀLANIYATISTĀSĀM VINIVṚTTYAI NIRODHATAḤ [69]  
ANYATHĀ YUGAPANMUKTISSARVEṢĀM CIDVATĀM BHAVET  
NA CA SĀ DRŚYATE TASMĀJJÑEYĀSTĀSSŪKṢMALAKṢANĀḤ

evam cānādyāvāraḥkatvānmala evā 'tmanassahajaḥ pāśaḥ. māyādayastu  
tadbhāvabhāvino bhāvāḥ sarve māyātmakaḥ paśorityādiśrīmatstvāyambhuvādi-  
śruterāgantukā eva jñeyāḥ. nanu śrīmanmatāṅgādua tu moho mādaśca  
rāgaśca viśādaśśoṣa ityādinā mohādīnāmapi malahetutvam sahaJamalatvam  
ca śrūyate. ata āha.

(140B-141A) VṚTTAYO VIṢAYITVASYA MADĀDYĀḤ PAŅCA ŪCITĀḤ

NIṢKALĀTMANI TASYAITE NO DRṢṬĀ JĀTU CIDYATAḤ

yato vijñānakalapralayākalayoh kalādisambandharahitatayāmale  
 satyapi vakṣyamānamadādayo na drśyante. kiṃ tu sakala eva. ato na  
 malasyaite jñānakriyāvarāṇavaddhṛttitveneṣṭāḥ. śrīmanmatahḡādau tu  
 malasadbhāva eva māyopādānānāmanātmādāvātmābhīmānādirūpānāmeṣām  
 madādīnāmutpadyamānatvātkalādiyoge 'pi nirmalanām māyāgarbhādhikāryādīnām  
 tadadarśanācca tena malena sahakāriṇā jāyanta iti sahajamalahetutvāt-  
 sahasaśabdenocyante. na tu malopādānatayetyavirodhaḥ. nanu malopādānā  
 apyete pralayakevalāvasthāyāmanabhivyaktāḥ [70]

paścātkalādisambandhādbhivyañjyanta ityasya pakṣasya ko doṣo 'ta āha.

(141B-142B) BHOGASĀDHANASAMBANDHĀDVYAJYANTA ITI NOCĪTAM  
 TVAYĀ TU GUNAVṚTTIBHYO YENOKTABHINNALAKṢANĀḤ  
 BHAVATĀ GUNAVṚTTIBHYO BHEDENAIVA MADĀDAYAḤ

proktā iti. na teṣām bhogasādhanasambandhātpaścādabhivyaktir  
 utpadyate. etaduktam bhavati. madādīnām hi malopādānatve  
 'bhyupagamyamāne tasya sarvadaikarūpatvādabhivyaktyanabhivyaktabhedānut-  
 pattedatkāryabhūtajñānakriyāvarāṇavatsamhārāvasthāyāmapyupalabhyeran.  
 na copalabhyante. api tu bhogasādhanasambandhottarakālamantaḥkarana-  
 samsthā eva puṃsāmupalabhyante. ato malena sahakāriṇā māyodbhūtaguṇopā-  
 dānā eva te 'bhyupagantavya iti. athaiṣām guṇātmakatvameva darśayanti.

(143A-143B) MADAMOHĀVABHIṢVANGAḤ PARITĀPABHRAMAU CA YAU  
 TĀMASAU SĀTVIKAŚCAIVA RĀJASAU CA YATHĀKRAMAM

evam cāntaḥkarāṇasamsthānām guṇānāṃ vṛttayastvimāḥ na caitad-  
 vyatiriktaḥ kāścinmalasya vṛttayo madādisamjñāḥ kasyāmcidavasthāyām-  
 ātmani drśyante. ato na santyeva tā ityāha. [71]

(144A) ABHYO BHINNĀ NA MŪLASYA VṚTTAYO 'TO NA SANTI

'ataśca-

(144B-145A) TYAKTVĀNIRODHIKĀŚŚAKTĪRNĀNYODHARMO 'SYAVIDYATE  
KARMĀŚAYASAMETASYA HETUTVAM CA BHAVEDDBHAVE

kevalamalasya jñānakriyāvāraikatvam karmasaṃskārayuktasya  
saṃsārahetutvam ca yuktisiddham. nānyatkāryāntaramityarthah. ittham  
malasvarūpamapi pradarsyopasaṃharati.

(145B) PAŚURITYAM SAMĀKHYĀTO YATSAMBANDHĀDANUḤ PAŚUḤ

paśuśabdo malavācakatayā śrīmadrauravādaḥ drśyate. tasya ca na  
tatvāntaratā. api tu paśutatva evāntarbhāvaḥ. tena vinā 'tmanām  
paśutvā 'yogāt. tenānādyāvṛttatvācca kim ca vidhau sṛṣṭikāle śivasya  
sṛṣṭyādikar anapūrvamātmanām bhogabhojanātmake māyāyāśca bhogasādhanā-  
kalādyutpādanatapośanātmake paśvātmanām ca bhogyabhogarūpo vyāpāro  
'smin prakaraṇe proktaḥ. ete caiṣām vyāpāra ātmāvāra kamalādeva hetu-  
bhūtādbhavanti. malasadbhāva eva 'sya sarvasya pravṛtteriti. api ca  
madādayaśca kleśāḥ puṃsāmatraiva pradarsītā ityupasamḥaran adhikāra-  
bhedātteṣām vṛttibhedānāha.

(146A-146B) PRASŪPTĀ TATVALĪNĀNĀMTAṬARUDDHĀŚCA YOGINĀM [72]

VICITRODĀRARŪPĀŚCA KLEŚĀ VIŚAYASAṄGINĀM

māyātatvalīnānām pralayākalānāmete kleśāḥ guṇādīnāmapi tatvānam  
tatraivopasaṃhārāt prasuptā akimcitkarā āsate. yoginām tvabhivyaktā  
api yogabalānmadhye niruddhavyāpāra bhavanti viśayasaṅginām tu sakalānām  
paśūnāmudbhūtavividhasvavyāpāra bhavanti. vicchinodārarūpā iti  
paṭhe parasparamudbhavābhibhavābhyām kadācidvicchinnarūpāḥ kadācicodāra-  
rūpāśca bhavantiyarthah ittham prakratijñātayossasādhanayorbhogamokṣayos-  
sasādhanāno bhogastāvadetābhiḥ pradarsīta ityatraiva bhogaprakaraṇopa-  
saṃhāraḥ. mokṣastu sasādhanāḥ prakaraṇāntare pradarsāyiyiṣyata iti.

śubham.

śrīmatkhetākanandanena gurunā siddhāntasiddhasphuṭam  
 samkṣepādīkārikābhirudito bhogaḥ samam sādhanaiḥ.  
 vācastasya samīkṣya vītatapasā ghorādīnā sambhunā  
 leśāddeśīkakuñjareṇa vivṛtistāsāmiyam nirmītā.  
 samāpteyam bhogakārikā. ityaghorāśivācāryaviracitā bhogakārikāvṛttiḥ-  
 sampūrṇā.



## APPENDIX II

### NOTES

<sup>1</sup>The transliterated text appears from the Astaparakāna, ed. Krishna Sastri, Vol I (Devakottai: Śivagamasāṅga), 1923. The square brackets on the right hand side of the page list the Sanskrit page number appearing in the Astaparakāna. I have included the errata which appear in the Astaparakāna within the body of the transliterated text.

<sup>2</sup>Throughout the text the editors spell the term "tattva" as "tatva".

## BIBLIOGRAPHICAL REFERENCES

### Texts Mentioned in the Notes

Aphorisms of the Mīmāṃsā. Ed. Pandita Maheśachandra Nyāyaratna. Calcutta: Bibliotheca Indica, 1873.

Aṣṭaprakaraṇa (Vol. I: Tattvaparakāśika by Bhojadeva, comm. Aghoraśiva; Tattvasaṅgraha by Sadyojyoti, comm. Aghoraśiva; Tattvatrayanirṇaya by Sadyojyoti, comm. Aghoraśiva. Vol. II: Ratnatraya by Śrīkaṇṭha, comm. Aghoraśiva; Bhogakārikā by Sadyojyoti, comm. Aghoraśiva; Nādakārikā by Rāmakaṇṭha, comm. Aghora Śiva; Mokṣākārikā by Sadyojyoti, comm. Rāmakaṇṭha; Paramokṣanirāśakarīkā by Sadyojyoti, comm. Rāmakaṇṭha). Ed. Krishna Sastri. 2 Vols. Devakottai: Sivagamaśāṅga, 1923 and 1925.

Bhāṣya of Praśastapāda together with the Nyāyakandalī of Śrīdhara. Ed. Vīndhyeśvariprasāda Dvivedin. The Vizianagram Sanskrit Series, ed. Arthur Venis. Benaras: E. J. Lazarus, 1895.

Bhattacharya, Gopinath. Tarkasaṅgraha-Dīpīka on Tarkasaṅgraha. Trans. Gopinath Bhattacharya. Calcutta: Progressive Publishers, 1975.

Brahma-Mīmāṃsā with Śrīkaṇṭha-Śivācārya's Commentary. Ed. L. Sprinivasacharya. Government Oriental Library Series, Bibliotheca Sanskrita No. 30. Mysore: Governmental Oriental Library, 1903.

Biardeau, Madeleine. "Ahamkāra: The Ego Principle in the Upaniṣads." Contributions to Indian Sociology, 8 (1965).

Brahmasūtraśaṅkarābhāṣyam. Ed. Narayan Ram Acharya. Bombay: Satyabhamabai Pandurang, 1948.

Brunner, Helene. "Les Categories Sociales Vediques dans Le Śivaïsme du Sud." Année, 252 (1975), 411-443.

Brunner, Helene. "Le Sādhaka, Personnage Oublié du Sivaïsme du Sud." Annee, 263 (1975), 411-443.

Chakrabarti, Kisor Kumar. The Logic of Gotama. Society for Asian and Comparative Philosophy. Monograph No. 5. Honolulu: The University Press of Hawaii, 1977.

Chattopadhyaya, Latika. Self in Sāṃkhya Philosophy. Calcutta: Roy and Chowdhury, 1982.

- Chennakaswami, Saraswati. Concept of Mind in Indian Philosophy. New York: Asia Publishing, 1960.
- Çlokavārttika. Trans. Ganganatha Jha. Bibliotheca Indica, No. 1183. Calcutta: Asiatic Society, 1908.
- Dasgupta, Surendranath. A History of Indian Philosophy. 5 Vols. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1975.
- Devasenapathi, V. S. Saiva Siddhanta. Madras University Philosophical Series No. 7. Madras: University of Madras, 1974.
- Deussen, Paul. The Philosophy of the Upaniṣads. Trans. by A. S. Geden, New York: Dover Publications, 1966.
- Dharmakīrti. Pramāṇavārttika. Ed. Swami Dwarikadas Sastri. 2 Vols. Varanasi: Bauddha-Bharati, 1968.
- Dignaga, On Perception. Trans. and annotation Masaaki Hattori. Harvard Oriental Series, ed. David H. H. Ingalls. Vol. 47. Cambridge, Massachusetts: Harvard University Press, 1968.
- Filliozat, P. S. "Le Tattvaprakāśa du roi Bhoja et les commentaires d'Aghorasivacarya et de Srikumara." Journal Asiatique, (1971), 247-296.
- Fort, Andrew O. "Dreaming in Advaita Vedānta." PEW, 35.4 (1985), 377-386.
- Franco, Eli. "Studies in the Tattvopaplavasīṃha." Journal of Indian Philosophy, 11 (1983), 147-166.
- Gerow, Edwin. "Indian Poetics" A History of Indian Literature. Ed. Jan Gonda. Vo.5, Fasc. 3. Wiesbaden: Otto Harrassowitz, 1977.
- Gonda, Jan. "Medieval Religious Literature in Sanskrit." A History of Indian Literature. Ed. Jan Gonda. Vol. 2, Fasc. 1. Wiesbaden: Otto Harrassowitz, 1977.
- Gonda, Jan. Viṣṇuism and Śivaism. New Delhi: Munishiram Manoharial Publishers, 1976.
- Hopkins, E. Epic Mythology. Encyclopedia of Indo-Aryan Research, ed. Georg Buhler, III, I. Strassbourg, 1915.
- Hulin, Michel. "Sāṃkhya Literature." A History of Indian Literature. Ed. Jan Gonda. Vol. 6, Fasc. 3. Wiesbaden: Otto Harrassowitz, 1978.
- Jayanta Bhaṭṭa's Nyāya-Mañjari. Trans. Janaki Vallabha Bhattacharya. Vol.1.

Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1978.

Jha, Ganganatha. Pūrva Mīmāṃsā in its Sources. Library of Indian Philosophy and Religion. Ed. S. Radhakrishnan. Vol. 1. Banaras: Banaras Hindu University, 1964.

Johnston, E. H. Early Sāṃkhya. London: R.A.S. Prize Publication Fund, 1937.

Keith, Arthur Berriedale. Indian Logic and Atomism. New York: Greenwood Press, 1968.

Kumar, Shiv. "Knowledge and its Genesis in Sāṃkhya-Yoga." BORI, 62 (1980), 16-32.

\_\_\_\_\_. "Sāṃkhya-Yoga Concept of Time." BORI, 64 (1983), 129-135.

Larson, Gerald James. Classical Sāṃkhya. Santa Barbara: Ross-Erikson, 1979.

\_\_\_\_\_. "The Notion of satkārya in Sāṃkhya: Toward a Philosophical Reconstruction." PEW, (1984), pp. 31-48.

Madhava. Sarvadarśanasamgrahaḥ. Ed. Madhusudanasarasvati. Anandasramasamskrita-granthavali No. 41.

Mataṅgapāreśvarāgama (Vidyāpāda) Avec le Commentaire de Bhatta Rāmakāntha. Ed. and intro. N.R. Bhatt. Publications de L'Institut Francais d'Indologie. No. 56. Pondicherry: Institut Francais d'Indologie, 1977.

Matilal, Bimal Krishna. Logic, Language and Reality. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1985.

\_\_\_\_\_. Perception. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1986.

Mishra, Umesha. Conception of Matter. Allahabad: Umesha Mishra, 1936.

Mokṣakāragupta. Tarkabhāṣā. Trans. Y. Kajiyama. Kyoto: 1966.

Mrgendrāgama: Sections de la Doctrine et du Yoga (avec la Vṛtti de Bhatta-narāyanakantha et la Dīpikā d'Aghoraśivācārya). Trans. intro. and notes M. Hulin. Publications de l'Institut Francais d'Indologie, No.63. Pondicherry: Institut Francais d'Indologie, 1980.

"Mrgendrāgama (Vidyāpāda)." Trans. Narayanaswami Aiyer. Siddhānta Dīpikā, IV, V, VI (1904-1906).

Nagatomi, M. "Arthakriyā." Adyar Library Bulletin, 31-32 (1967-1968), 243-260.

- Nyāyamañjarī of Jayanta Bhatta. Ed. Surya Narayana Sukla. Kashi Sanskrit Series No. 106. Benares: Jaya Krishna Das Haridas Gupta. 1936.
- Nyāya-sūtra with Vātsyāyana's Bhāṣya. Trans. Mrinalkanti Gangopadhyaya with intro. by Debiprasad Chattopadhyaya. Calcutta: Indian Studies, 1982.
- Padārthadharṃasamgrahaḥ with Śrīdhara's Nyāyakandalī. Ed. Vinḍhyesvariprasada Dvivedin. Vizianagram Sanskrit Series, No. 6. Benares: E.J. Lazarus and Co., 1895.
- Padārthadharṃasamgraha of Praçastapāda with the Nyāyakandalī of Ārīdhara. Trans. Ganghanatha Jha. Benaras: E. J. Lazarus and Co., 1916.
- Pandey, Kanti Chandra. Bhāskarī, Vol 3: An English Translation of the Īsvara Pratyabhijñā Vimarsinī, with an Outline of the History of Saiva Philosophy. The Princess of Wales Saraswati Bhavana Texts, No. 84. Lucknow: Superintendent, Printing and Stationary, 1954.
- Podgorski, Frank. "Śamkara's Critique of Sāṃkhyan Causality in the Brahmasutrabhāṣya." PEW, (1984), 49-57.
- Parrot, Rodney. "The Experience called 'Reason' in Classical Sāṃkhya." JIP, 13 (1985), 235-264.
- Patañjalasūtrāni with the Scholium of Vyāsa and the Commentary of Vācaspati. Ed., Dajavam Shastri Bodas. Bombay Sanskrit Series, No. XLVI. Bombay: The Department of Public Instruction, 1892.
- Pramānavārttika of Dharmakīrti. Ed. Swami Dwarikadas Sastri. Baudda Bharati Series, Varanasi: Baudda Bharati, 1968.
- Pratyabhijñāhrdayam. Trans. Jaideva Singh. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1980.
- Radhakrishnan, S. The Principal Upaniṣads. Ed., intro. and trans. S. Radhakrishnan. London: George Allen and Unwin Ltd., 1963.
- Randle, H. N. Indian Logic in the Early Schools. Oxford: The Clarendon Press, 1930.
- Rauravāgamah. Ed. N. R. Bhatt. Intro. Jean Filliozat. 2 Vols. Publications de L'institut Francais d'Indologie. Pondicherry: Institut Francais d'Indologie, I, 1961; II, 1968.
- Sadānanda, Vedāntasāra. Trans. Swami Nikhilananda. Calcutta: Advaita Ashrama, 1974.
- Sāṃkhya Sūtra Vṛtti. Ed. and trans. Richard Garbe. Calcutta: Bibliotheca Indica, 1888.

Sarva-darśana-samgraha. Trans. E. B. Cowell and A. E. Gough. Chowkhamba Sanskrit Series, Vol. X. Varanasi: The Chowkhamba Sanskrit Series Office, 1961.

Sastri, K. Kuppaswami. A Primer of Indian Logic. Madras: P. Varadachary and Co., 1932.

Śaivaparibhāṣā of Śivāgrayogin. Trans. S. S. Suryanarayana. Ed. R. Balasabramanian and V. K. S. N. Raghavan. Madras University Philosophical Series, 35. Madras: University of Madras, 1982.

Sastri, Umesha. Conception of Matter. Allahabad: Umesha Mishra, 1936.

Śataratnasāgraha of Śri Umāpati Śivācārya. Trans. P. Thirugnanasambandhan. Madras: University of Madras, 1973.

Śataratna Samgraha with the Śataratnollekha. Ed. Panchanan Sastri. Tantrik Texts, Vol. XXII. Calcutta: Bibhupada Ghosh, 1944.

Shabara-Bhāṣya. Trans. Ganganatha Jha. 3 Vols. Baroda: Oriental Institute, 1934.

Shastri, Dharmendra Nath. The Philosophy of Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika and its Conflict with the Buddhist Dignāga School. Delhi: Bharatiya Vidya Prakashan, 1964.

Sinha, Jadunath. Indian Psychology of Perception. London: Kegan, Paul Trench and Co., 1934.

Śivajñāna Siddhiyār of Aruṇānandi Śivācārya. Trans. J. M. Nallaswami Pillai. Madras: Meykandar Press, 1913.

Śivaraman, K. Śaivism in Philosophical Perspective. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1973.

\_\_\_\_\_. "The Word as a Category of Revelation." Revelation in Indian Thought. Ed. Harold Coward and Krishna Sivaraman. Emeryville, California: Dharma Publishing, 1977, pp. 45-64.

Slokavārttika of Śrī Kumārila Bhatta. Ed. Swami Dvarikadasa Sastri. Varanasi: Tara Publications, 1978.

Somaśambhupaddhati. Ed. and intro. T. H. Brunner-Lachaux. 3 Vols. Publications de l'Institut Français d'Indologie, No. 25. Pondicherry: L'Institut Français d'Indologie, 1963, 1968 and 1977.

Tantrāloka of Abhinavagupta with the Commentary by Rājānaka Jayaratha. Mādhūsūdan Kaul. Kashmir Studies and Text Series, Vol. 23, 28, 30, 35, 36, 39, 41, 47, 52, 57, Srinagar, 1918, seq.

- Sovani, V. V. A Critical Study of the Sāṃkhya System. Poona Oriental Series, No. 11. Poona: Oriental Book Agency, 1935.
- Staal, Frits. "Ritual, Grammar, and the Origins of Science in India." JIP, 10 (1982), 1-24.
- Stcherbatsky, T. Buddhist Logic. Leningrad: 1930.
- Tarka-Samgraha of Annambhatta. Ed. and notes Y. V. Athalye; intro. and trans. M. R. Bodas. Bombay Sanskrit Series, No. LV. Poona: R. N. Dandekar, 1963.
- "Tattuva-Kaṭṭalei." Trans. Rev. Henry K. Hoisington. JSOS, IV (1854), 1-29.
- Tattuva-kaumudī. Trans. Ganganatha Jha. Bombay: Theosophical Society Publication Fund, 1896.
- "Tattvapra-kāśa du Roi Bhoja et les Commentaires de Aghoraśivācārya et de Śrikumara." Journal Asiatique, (1971), 247-296.
- Tattvapra-kāśaḥ by Bhojadeva with Śrikumāra's Tātparyadīpikā and Aghoraśivācārya's Vṛttiḥ. Ed. Kamesvara Natha Mishra, Varanasi: Chaukambha Orientalia, 1976.
- Tattvasaṅgraha of Śāntarakṣita with the Commentary of Kamalaśila. Ed. Embar Krishnamacharya. Gaekwad's Oriental Series, No. XXX. 2 Vols. Baroda: Oriental Institut, 1926.
- Tattvasaṅgraha of Śāntarakṣita with the Commentary of Kamalaśila Trans. Ganganatha Jha. Gaekwad's Oriental Series, No. LXXXIII. 2 Vol. Baroda: Oriental Institute, 1926.
- Tucci, G. Pre-Dīnna Buddhist Texts on Logic from Chinese Sources. Gaekwad's Oriental Series, No. XLIX. Baroda: Oriental Institute, 1929.
- van Butenen, J. A. B. "Studies in Sāṃkhya." JAOS, I, LXXVI (1956), 155-157; II, LXXVII (1957) 15-25; III, LXXVII (1957), 88-107.
- Vedānta Sāra of Sadānanda. Trans. Swami Nikhilananda. Calcutta: Advaita Ashrama, 1949.
- Vedānta Sūtras with the Commentary of Śaṅkarācārya. Trans. George Thibaut. Sacred Books of the East, Vol. XXXIV. 2 Vol. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1904.
- Warder, A. K. The Science of Criticism in India. Madras: The Adyar Library and Research Centre, 1978.

Woodroffe, Sir John. Introduction to Tantra Sastra. Madras: Ganesh and Company, 1913.

Woods, James Haughton. The Yoga-System of Patañjali. Harvard Oriental Series, 17. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1977.

Yuktidīpikā. Ed. Ram Chandra Pandeya. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1967.



## BIBLIOGRAPHICAL REFERENCES (II)

General Bibliography

- Alper, Harvey P. "Śiva and the Ubiquity of Consciousness." JIP, 7 (1979), 345-407.
- Aiyer, K. A. S. and K. C. Pandey. "Śaiva Theory of Relation." Proceedings of the All-India Oriental Conference, 9 (1940), 603-617.
- Arapura, J. G. Religion as Anxiety and Tranquility. Religion and Reason, 5. The Hague: Mouton, 1972.
- Arunachalam, M. An Introduction to the History of Tamil Literature. Tiruchitrambalam: Gandhi Vidyalayam, 1974.
- Ayyar, C. V. Naryana. Origin and Early History of Śaivism in South India. Madras University Historical Series, No. 6. Ed. K. A. Nilakantha Sastri. Madras: University of Madras, 1974.
- Bagchi, Amalendu. Indian Definition of Mind. Calcutta Sanskrit College Research Series No. XCVIII. Calcutta: Sanskrit College, 1975.
- Bastow, David. "An Attempt to Understand Sāṃkhya-Yoga." JIP, 5 (1978), 191-207.
- Bhattacharyya, Gopikamohan. Studies in Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika Theism. Calcutta Sanskrit College Research Series, No. 14. Calcutta: Sanskrit College, 1961.
- Bijalwan, C. D. Indian Theories of Knowledge. New Delhi: Heritage Publishers, 1977.
- Brunner, Helene. "Analyse du Kiranāgāma." Année, 253 (1965), 309-328.
- \_\_\_\_\_ . "Analyse du Suprabhedāgama." Année, 225 (1967), 31-60.
- \_\_\_\_\_ . "Importance de la Littérature agamique pour L'études des religions vivantes de l'Inde." Indologica Taurinensia, 3-4 (1975-1976), 107-124.
- Chakravarty, Chintaharan. The Tantras -- Studies on their Religion and Literature. Calcutta: Punthi Pustak, 1963.

- Chatterji, Jaddish Chandra. Kashmir Shaivism. Srinagar: Research and Publication Department of the Government of Jammu and Kashmir, 1962.
- Chatterji, Jagadisha Chandra. The Hindu Realism. Allahabad: The Indian Press, 1912.
- Collected Lectures on Saiva Siddhānta, 1946-1954. Ed. G. Subramania Pillai. Tiruppanandal Endowment Lectures. Annamalainagar: Annamalai University, 1965.
- Das, Umesh Chandra. "Problems and Justifications of the Theory of Drstisrsti." JIP, 5 (1977), 157-161.
- Danielou, Alain. Shiva and Dionysus. Trans. K. F. Hurry. London: East-West Publications, 1984.
- Desai, M. R. The Yoga Sūtras of Patañjali. Kolhapur: Prin. Desai Publication Trust, 1972.
- Devasenapathi, V. A. Saiva Siddhānta as Expounded in the Sivajnana Siddhiyar and its Six Commentaries. Madras University Philosophical Series No. 7. Madras: University of Madras, 1974.
- Dhavamony, Mariasusai. Love of God According to Saiva Siddhānta. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1971.
- Doraiswami Pillai, Avvai, A History of Tamil Literature. Annamalai: Annamalai University, 1958.
- Durairangaswami. The Religion and Philosophy of Tevaram. 2 Vols. Madras: University of Madras, 1959.
- Dunuwilla, Rohan A. Saiva Siddhānta Theology: A Context for Hindu-Christian Dialogue. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1985.
- Farquhar, J. N. Outline of the Religious Literature of India. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1920.
- Frauwallner, Erich. Aus der Philosophie der Śivaitischen System. Deutsche Akademie der Wissenschaften zu Berlin, Vorträge und Schriften, Heft 78. Berlin: Akademie-Verlag, 1962.
- Gangopadhyaya, Mrinalkanti. Indian Atomism. Bagchi Inological Series I. Calcutta: W. P. Bagchi and Co., 1980.
- Indian Logic in its Sources. New Delhi: Munshiram Manoharlal Publishers, 1984.
- Gourdrian, Teun and Gupta Sanyukta. "Hindu Tantric and Śakta Literature." A History of Indian Literature. Ed. Jan Gonda. Vol II, Fasc. 2. Wiesbaden: Otto Harrassowitz, 1981.

- Hacker, Paul. "The Sāṅkhyization of the Emanation Doctrine Shown in A Critical Analysis of Texts." Wiener Zeitschrift für die Kunde Sud- und Ostasiens (Archive für Indische Philosophie), 5 (1961), 75-112.
- Hacker, Paul. Vivarta: Studien zur Geschichte der illusionistischen Kosmologie und Erkenntnis Theory der Inder. Wiesbaden: Akademie der Wissenschaften und der Literatur in Mainz, 1963.
- Hara, Minoru. "Lillian Silburn, La Bakti." Indo-Iranian Journal, 9 (1966), 211-218.
- Hart, George Luzerne. "The Relation Between Tamil and Classical Sanskrit Literature." A History of Indian Literature. Ed. Jan Gonda. Vol. X, Fasc. 2. Wiesbaden: Otto Harrasowitz, 1976.
- Hindu Theology: A Reader. Ed. Jose Pereira. New York: Image Books, 1976.
- Jash, Pranabananda. History of Śaivism. Calcutta: Roy and Chaudhury, 1974.
- Jesudasan, C. A History of Tamil Literature. Calcutta: YMCA Publishing House, 1961.
- Kalupahana, David J. Causality: The Central Philosophy of Buddhism. Honolulu: The University Press of Hawaii, 1975.
- Kaw, R. K. The Doctrine of Recognition (Pratyabhijñā Philosophy). Vishveshvaranand Indological Series Vol. 40. Hoshiarpur: Vishveshvaranand Institute, 1967.
- Kent, Stephen A. "Early Sāṅkhya in the Buddhacarita." PEW, 32.3 (1980), 259-278.
- Klostermaier, Klaus. "Time in Patañjali's Yogasūtra." PEW, 34-2 (1984), 205-210.
- Kulathungam, L. C. D. "Buddhist Elements in the Logic of Saiva Śiddhānta." Saiva Siddhānta, 29 (1970), 171-183.
- Kumar, Shiv. "Jayantabhatta's Critique of the Sāṅkhya Concept of Sequential Stages of Evolution." BOKI, LX (1979) 158-165.
- Larson, Gerald James. "An Eccentric Ghost in the Machine: Formal and Quantitative Aspects of the Sāṅkhya-Yoga Dualism." PEW, 33.3 (1983), 219-233.
- Larson, Gerald James. "The Format of Technical Philosophical Writing in Ancient India; Inadequacies of Conventional Translations." PEW, 30.3 (1982), 375-380.

- Malladevaru, H. P. Essentials of Vīraśaivism. Bombay: Bharatiya Vidya Bhavan, 1973.
- Manikka-Vacagar. The Tiruvācagam. Trans. G. U. Pope. Oxford: University of Oxford, 1900.
- Masson, J. L. "Sex and Yoga: Psychoanalysis and the Indian Religious Experience." JIP, 2 (1974), 307-320.
- Mathews, Gordon. Śiva-nāna-bodham. Trans. G. Mathews. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1948.
- Motilal, Bimal Krishna. Myāya-Vaiśeṣika. A History of Indian Literature Ed. Jan Gonda. Vol. VI, fasc. 2. Wiesbaden: Otto Harrasowitz, 1977.
- Mishra, Kamalakar. Significance of the Tantric Tradition. Varanasi: Arddhanarisvara Publications, 1981.
- Mohanty, J. N. "Consciousness and Knowledge in Indian Philosophy." PEW, 29.1 (1971), 3-10.
- Mudaliyar, S. Arumuga. "Śaiva Siddhānta Works (sattiram and tottiram) in Tamil." Bharatiya Vidya, 23 (1963), 76-79.
- Murti, T. R. V. The Central Philosophy of Buddhism. London: Allen and Unwin, 1970.
- Nagaswamy, R. Tantric Cults of South India. Delhi: Agam Prasad Prakashan, 1982.
- Nyāyadarśanam. Ed. Taranatha Nyaya-Tarkatirtha. Calcutta: Metropolitan Printing and Publishing House, 1936.
- O'Flaherty, Wendy Doniger. Śiva, The Erotic Ascetic. New York: Oxford University Press, 1973.
- Pandey, Kanti Chandra. Abhinavagupta: An Historical and Philosophical Study. 2nd. ed. Chowkhamba Sanskrit Series, Vol. I. Varanasi: Chowkhamba Sanskrit Series Office, 1963.
- Paranjoti, V. "The Siddhāntin's Criticism of Māyāvāda." Philosophical Quarterly, 10 (1934-1935), 171-188.
- Parrot, Rodney J. "The Problem of the Sāṃkhya Tattvas as Both Cosmic and Psychological Phenomenon." JIP, 14 (1986), 55-77.
- Pāśupata Sūtras with Panchārthabhāṣya of Kaundinya. Ed. R. Ananthakrishna Sastri. University of Travancore Series No. 1. Trivandrum: University of Travancore, 1940.

- Phillips, Steven H. "The Conflict of Voluntarism and Dualism in the Yoga-sūtra." JIP, 13 (1985), 399-414.
- Piet, John H. A Logical Presentation of the Saiva Siddhānta Philosophy. Indian Research Series Vol. VIII. Madras: The Christian Literature Society for India, 1952.
- Pillai, J. M. Nallaswami. Śivagñāna Botham of Meikāṇḍa Deva. Madras: Sri La Sri Somasundara Nayagar, 1895.
- Ponniah, V. Theory of Knowledge of Śaiva Siddhānta. Annamalai University Philosophy Series IV. Annamalainagar: Annamalai University, 1962.
- Prasad, Hari Shankar. "Time and Change in Sāṃkhya-Yoga." JIP, 12 (1984), 35-49.
- Reller, Carl A. "Śaiva Siddhānta (Philosophie religieuse de l'Inde du Sud)." Asiatische Studien, 32.1 (1978), 97-122.
- Rosu, Arion. "Yoga et Alchimie." Zeitschrift der Deutschen Morgenländischen Gesellschaft, 32.2 (1982), 364-379.
- Saksena, S. K. Nature of Consciousness in Hindu Philosophy. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1971.
- Sāṃkhya-sūtras of Pañcaśikha and the Sāṃkhyatattvāloka. Trans. Swami Hariharananda Aranya and intro. Jajneswar Ghosh. Delhi: Motilal banarsidass, 1977.
- Sankaranarayana, S. "An Historical Survey of Śaiva Siddhānta." Aryan Path, I (1930), 28-30.
- Sastri, S. S. Suryanarayana. The Śivādvaita of Śrīkaṇṭha. Madras: University of Madras, 1972.
- Scherrer-Schaus, Christina. "Le Terme Yukti: Première Étude." Asiatische Studien Etudes Asiatiques, 35.2 (1981), 189-199.
- Schomerus, H. W. Der Śaiva Siddhānta. Leipzig: J. C. Hinrichs'sche Buchhandlung, 1912.
- Schrader, F. Otto. Introduction to the Pañcaratra and the Ahirbudhnya Samhita. Madras: Adyar Library, 1916.
- Secret Doctrine of Recognition (Pratyabhijñāhridayam). Ed. by the staff of the Adyar Library and trans. Kurt F. Leidecker. Madras: Adyar Library, 1983.
- Sen, Debabrata. The Concept of Knowledge: Indian Theories. Calcutta: K. P. Bagchi and Co., 1984.

- Serpent Power. Trans. Sir John Woodroffe. Madras: Genesh and Co. 1978.
- Sharma, Arvid. "A Note on the Doctrine of 'Grace' in the Upaniṣads." The Indian Journal of Theology, 27.1 (1978), 28-30.
- Sharma, Ram Murti. "Concept of Puruṣa in Indian Philosophy." Baroda Oriental Institute Journal, 30 (1980-1981), 165-171).
- Shastri, S.S. The Śivādvaita of Śrīkaṇṭha. Madras: University of Madras, 1930.
- Sivaraman, K. "The Role of the Śaivāgama in the Emergence of Śaiva-Siddhānta A Philosophical Interpretation." Traditions in Contact and Change. Ed. Peter Slater and Donald Wiebe with Maurice Boutin and Harold Coward. Kitchener Waterloo: Wilfred Laurier Press, 1983, pp. 53-64 and 674-679.
- Sinha, Debabrata. "Human Embodiment: The Theme and the Encounter in Vedantic Phenomenology." PEW, 34.3 (1985), 230-247.
- Śivādvaita-Nirṇaya of Appaya Dikṣita. Madras University Philosophical Series, No. 22. Madras: University of Madras, 1974.
- Sivagñāna Botham of Meikāṇḍa Deva. Trans. J. M. Nallaswami Pillai. Madras: Sri La Sri Somasundara Nayager, 1895.
- Śiva Sahasranāma Stotra. Text and trans. R. Anantakrishna Sastri, Madras: V. Rāmaswamy Sastrulu and Sons, 1955.
- Śiva Sūtras. Trans. Jaideva Singh. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1979.
- Soloman, Esther A. The Commentaries of the Sāṃkhya Kārikā. Ahmedabad: Gujarat University, 1974.
- Spanda-Kārikās. Trans. Jaideva Singh. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1980.
- Śrīkaṇṭha-Bhāṣya. Trans. Rama Chaudhuri. Pracyavani Research Series, Vol. XI, 2 Vol. Calcutta: Pracyavani, 1959.
- Srinivasan, Doris M. "Vedic Rudra-Śiva." JAOS, 103.3 (1982), 543-556.
- Steiner, Margarethe. "Der Ahankāra in den alteren Upaniṣaden." Festgabe Richard von Garbe. Aus Indien Kultur. Veröffentlichungen des Indogermanischen Seminars der Universität Erlangen. Band III. Erlangen: Palm and Enke, 1927.
- Subrahmanyam, K. "The Metaphysics of the Śaiva Siddhānta System." Proceedings of the All-India Oriental Conference, 3(1924), 569-582.
- Sundaramoorthy, G. "Development of Epistemology in the Sanskrit Works of Śaiva Siddhānta." Indian Philosophical Annual, Vol. IV. Madras: University of Madras, 1981.

LEAVES 367 TO 376 OMITTED IN  
PAGE NUMBERING.

FEUILLETS 367 A 376 NON INCLUS DANS  
LA PAGINATION.

Timmerman, Heinz. "Vor-Sāṃkhyistisches und Proto-Sāṃkhyistisches in alten Upaniṣaden." Asiatische Studien Etudes Asiatiques, 35.2 (1981), 201-219.

Tirukkural. Trans. G. U. Pope, W. H. Drew, John Lazarus and F. W. Ellis. Madras: The South India Śaiva Siddhanta Works Publishing House, 1962.

Tiruvaṇṇam. Trans. Rev. G. M. Pope. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1900.

Vijñānabhairava or Divine Consciousness. Trans. Jaideva Singh. Delhi: Motilal Banarsidass, 1979.

Viśvanāthapañcānakṛtasiddhāntamuktāvālisahitabhāṣāparichedaḥ. Ed. and trans. E. Roer. Bibliotheca Indica, ed. E. Roer. Vol. IX, Nos. 32 and 35. Calcutta: Asiatic Society of Bengal, 1850.

Watson, Ian K. "Buddhi, Manas, Deha and Mokṣa." Indian Philosophical Quarterly, I (1976), 151-164.